



CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 09

Drunk Tiger

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Castle of Black Iron

(黑铁之堡)

by

Drunken Tiger

(醉虎)

Synopsis

After the Catastrophe, every rule in the world was rewritten.

In the Age of Black Iron, steel, iron, steam engines and fighting force became the crux in which human beings depended on to survive.

A commoner boy by the name Zhang Tie was selected by the gods of fortune and was gifted a small tree which could constantly produce various marvelous fruits. At the same time, Zhang Tie was thrown into the flames of war, a three-hundred-year war between the humans and monsters on the vacant continent. Using crystals to tap into the potentials of the human body, one must cultivate to become stronger.

The thrilling legends of mysterious clans, secrets of Oriental fantasies, numerous treasures and legacies in the underground world — All in the Castle of Black Iron!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the WQL @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation edits by DarkGem / Geoffrey @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 801: Being Trapped Once Again

What a risky experience!

In order to trap the demon general, Zhang Tie actually had been wandering near the core area of the demon corps for about one month. During the past one month, he had been waiting for the very chance patiently. There were two times when Zhang Tie almost wanted to attack by force so as to attract the attention of the demon general. However, given that the demon general was very cunning and might not be trapped if he did that too excessively, Zhang Tie didn't do that.

When Zhang Tie returned to Waii Sub-continent, this sub-continent had already become his hunting ground. As a qualified hunter, besides hunting beasts, he should also be patient enough for the optimal chance to launch an attack.

Here it came.

When the demon corps were crossing the Yuanjiang River and almost occupied the entire Waii Sub-continent, the demon general was so ambitious and arrogant that it dispatched his subordinate knights to raid those remaining human cities respectively——That was the chance that Zhang Tie had been waiting for.

As long as those knights departed from each other, Zhang Tie would get his chance.

Everything was in Zhang Tie's plan.

That knight of Three-eye Association who raided Qihai City was not powerful at least for Zhang Tie.

In close combat, Zhang Tie was confident to end the battle in 20 minutes; especially when Zhang Tie appeared in the branded black robe and raided that guy fiercely, that knight of Three-eye Association had long been scared too much and only wanted to escape. Therefore, that guy could only exert 80%-90% of its total

battle force. In such a case, the battle could have come to an earlier end; however, according to his plan, Zhang Tie purposely delayed the battle process by about 7-8 minutes. Until Zhang Tie felt the second knight of Three-eye Association came here to rescue the first guy did he pretend to kill that knight of Three-eye Association in a very narrow way. After that, he released long-distance attacks twice towards the second knight before turning around to escape.

The second knight of Three-eye Association knew that as long as it kept Zhang Tie in its vision, a lot of knights would arrive soon. Therefore, it tried its best to chase closely after Zhang Tie.

The black-robe Gorath had already become the heart disease of all the knights of demons and Three-eye Association clans. If it could chase closely after Gorath until the demon general arrived and killed him together with the other knights, it was definitely a great meritorious deed for it.

Zhang Tie flew towards the ocean, closely followed by that knight of Three-eye Association.

Soon after Zhang Tie flew less than 200 miles away from the bank had the number of meteors behind him increased to four. The opponents had outnumbered him absolutely. With three enemy knights, they could use 3-in-1 battle skill and smash Zhang Tie's teeth, not to mention 4 of them.

At the sight of the black-robe knight Gorath, all the other knights became thrilled.

"Gorath, you cannot escape this time..." a knight's furious voice drifted from Zhang Tie's back, which reverberated in the sky.

Zhang Tie only replied to them with a weird laughter "Jye Jye Jye..."

Soon after the weird laughter, a fiery meteor had sped up and narrowed the distance between it and Gorath. Given the aggressiveness of that meteor, Zhang Tie knew that it was the

demon general.

Zhang Tie was shocked inside. He knew that it was time to risk his life and test his talent in performance.

As the demon general arrived, all the other knights became spirited; however, Zhang Tie changed his face at once. Right under the gaze of those knights, he hurriedly took out of a vial of medicament and poured it into his mouth. Closely after that, Zhang Tie accelerated by 10%.

Hidden Dragon Island was right on the sea in front of him.

The demon general passed by the other knights in a split second and narrowed the distance between it and Zhang Tie to about 200 m. It kept gazing tightly at the black robe.

"Go die!" The demon general roared as it released a battle qi in the shape of a huge round brilliant ball towards Zhang Tie like firing a shell.

Of course, the battle-qi attack was faster than the people's moving speed. After feeling the unrivaled strength drawing close to him from his back, Zhang Tie rapidly turned around and punched out a fierce boa-shaped battle qi towards the demon general's attack with a widely opened mouth.

The brilliant ball torn apart Zhang Tie's fierce boa and constantly rushed towards Zhang Tie at the same high speed. Zhang Tie roared as he split towards that brilliant ball by his hand with swaying silver hair.

A huge, 10-m higher machete-shaped sharp light torn apart the air and collided with the demon general's battle qi once again.

Huge Blade Splitting-Air Palm, a powerful battle skill of knights, was simulated by Zhang Tie according to the King Roc Battle Qi. Zhang Tie exerted 70-80% of the total strength of that battle skill.

Closely after that, a thunder-like loud boom reverberated through the air...

The demon general's brilliant ball was shattered. Zhang Tie quivered all over for a second. At the same time, his protective battle qi started to vibrate like a pitchfork in a high frequency. Closely after that, Zhang Tie spurted out a mouthful of blood.

This was not a performance. With this strike, Zhang Tie had already figured out the demon general's real battle force. Zhang Tie changed his face.

At this moment, Zhang Tie finally understood how the demon general fought three powerful human knights' 3-in-1 tactic alone outside Upton City. The demon general was overwhelming towards a black-iron knight of the same rank.

With his current strength, Zhang Tie knew that he could never defeat the demon general except for speed.

High speed was Zhang Tie's trump card and what he was relying on at this moment.

Zhang Tie just pretended to escape with his full effort. Actually, he could move faster but he didn't use his super rapid moving skill yet. Without a trump card, Zhang Tie didn't dare risk his life doing this so as to manifest his greatness.

"You're really something!" The demon general further narrowed the distance between it and Gorath with two bloody flames in its eyes.

In the next second, Zhang Tie made a sudden turn and dove into the ocean. The demon general faintly changed its face; however, it also followed Zhang Tie immediately.

Only 2 of the rest knights followed them in. As for the others, at the order of the demon general, they continued to monitor the situation above the sea in case that black-robe Gorath played any trick and escaped again.

The demon general was always meticulous in front of Zhang Tie as it had already learned about Zhang Tie's cunning and tricky

temperaments.

If Gorath escaped again this time, the demon general would feel extremely embarrassed.

...

After 10 minutes, Zhang Tie rushed into the sky from underwater being close to Hidden Dragon Island...

After 2 seconds, the demon general also followed him out.

Noticing this, those knights who were patrolling above the sea hurriedly rushed over there.

All the 15 knights of demons and Three-eye Association had already arrived here.

As Zhang Tie fought the demon general in the air quickly, he flew towards Dragon Cave in the Hidden Dragon Island.

After 1 minute, the huge hollow of Dragon Cave appeared in front of Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie immediately dove into it.

Honestly, the demon general hesitated a bit when he followed Zhang Tie in the Dragon Cave. He doubted that this might be a trap set by Gorath. However, that whim was soon denied by it. The demon general convinced itself with the following 3 reasons, 'First, Gorath didn't know that my subordinates would attack the remaining human cities respectively today. Therefore, it was almost impossible for Gorath to set a trap here; second, almost all the knights across Blackson Humans Corridor have already left. With the strength of me and my subordinate knights, we don't need to fear about any ambush; third, even if he had any other tricks or traps, Gorath would not escape under my gaze. Selfish guys like Gorath would never fight knights of demons or Three-eye Association to the death. Obviously, Gorath is not an idiot or a lunatic.'

'Apparently, Gorath wants to escape with the complex, dim terrain of the underground world.'

After making this conclusion, the demon general accelerated towards Zhang Tie. As for all the other knights behind the demon general, although some of them became a bit hesitated, after seeing that demon general entering it, they also followed it in with the same thought. Totally 15 knights including the demon general were chasing after Zhang Tie.

The demon general was right; however, it was not the almighty God. He failed to realize three points: first, it didn't realize that the so-called Gorath was the very Zhang Tie who had escaped from the knight who was dispatched by it; second, it didn't find that Zhang Tie had been observing the actions of all the knights of demons and Three-eye Association over the past one month only for this chance; third, it could never imagine that Zhang Tie had a marvelous item——Castle of Black Iron. With Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie could tide over any dangerous and hopeless dilemma easily.

Besides a wild and sluggish scene, nobody else was in Hidden Dragon Island at this moment. If someone was here, they would see many meteors falling into that bottomless Dragon Cave one after another.

Chapter 802: A Fatal Strike

Zhang Tie remembered a thing called film among the rich entertainments of humans before the Catastrophe.

If what happened today was made into a film, Zhang Tie had already got a name for this film——Crossfire——Fight of Caged Beast.

After 2 hours, Zhang Tie had already reached over 100 miles under Dragon Cave while being closely followed by the demon general and the 14 knights of demons and Three-eye Association.

Zhang Tie had almost been encircled more than once. However, whenever that happened, he would reveal his extremely sharp side and find a chance to break out their encirclement.

The demon general thought that he was right. In such an underground environment, knights' flying ability was restricted to the complex terrain; therefore, they had to fight on the ground. The black-robe Gorath became more tricky and terrifying; with the unpredictable moving skill and high speed, Gorath was able to enlarge the distance between him and all the other knights of demons and Three-eye Association except for the demon general. If not the demon general, Gorath would have escaped once again this time even though he was chased after by over 10 knights.

Gorath had broken out of their encirclement twice. In the first time, Gorath showed his powerful hidden weapon skill and wounded a knight. In the second time, he showed his terrifying poisoning skill, which scared all the other knights so much. Even the demon general was shocked by that black-robe Gorath's battle force. At the same time, the demon general became more decisive to kill Gorath.

In the eyes of all the other knights, Gorath had been heavily wounded after breaking out of their encirclement twice as his black robe had been soaked by his blood.

Zhang Tie was truly wounded; however, his wound was not as severe as was imagined by others. A small part of those blood was caused by Zhang Tie himself. If he was indeed making a film, Zhang Tie felt that he could be regarded as a movie king due to this trick.

Right then, Gorath showed his sharp, fierce temperament like how a caged beast would do. His attacks were more terrifying and weird in a life for life way.

Except for the demon general, all the other knights were afraid of losing their life at this moment; otherwise, it would be a great misfortune.

After breaking out the secondary encirclement, Zhang Tie confronted the demon general's another punch and spurted out another mouth of blood. One of his sleeves was burned into ashes by the demon general's battle qi. At the same time, he staggered faintly.

"Gorath will be over soon..." The demon general roared, "Watch out, he might have other tricks!"

If one or two knights were still killed by Gorath while so many knights were chasing after the latter, the demon general would feel very shameful.

As Zhang Tie accelerated on the ground, he swore inside; meanwhile, he became shocked. He had not imagined that the trap that he set for the demon general could be available to 15 knights at the same time. In another word, Zhang Tie had not imagined that those knights of demons and Three-eye Association hated the role black-robe Gorath so much and would kill him the moment they got a chance.

The role Gorath was really a success.

It was the second time for Zhang Tie to be chased in Dragon Cave as embarrassed as a stray dog since the last time when he was

chased by that b*stard of Zhen Clan. When he recalled that despaired dilemma, Zhang Tie's performance became more vivid.

None of the other knights realized that Zhang Tie had been camouflaging since the beginning.

Zhang Tie rushed downwards in a flurried way. After a few minutes, he passed a distant, low underground tunnel, closely followed by the demon general and the other knights of demons and Three-eye Association.

That tunnel was too narrow and a bit risky even for knights. When the demon general entered it, it hesitated a bit. As it was vigilant about Zhang Tie's tricks and ambush, the demon general kept his eyes closely on Zhang Tie. After passing that tunnel safely, the demon general found that nothing happened; therefore, he became completely reassured.

After rushing out of that distant tunnel, the demon general felt pretty bright in front of its eyes. It was a space behind that tunnel. Although it was not spacious, it could almost cover two football fields. Besides this tunnel, there was no other way out of here.

Watching Gorath rushing out of this tunnel with a dumbfounded look, the demon general burst out into laughter while an unspoken cool sense spread over its body, "Hahaha...Gorath, keep going!"

At this moment, all the other knights rushed out of that narrow tunnel.

Gorath turned around and threw a fierce and forlorn glance at the demon general before flying into the air once again.

All the other knights flew off and started to besiege and intercept Gorath from all directions.

After a short, close combat, Gorath's moving space kept shrinking while more and more wounds appeared over his body.

Gorath released a fierce boa-shaped battle qi towards a knight of Three-eye Association. After that knight of Three-eye Association

dodged away, the battle qi hit a piece of rock wall on the top of this space. As a result, that piece of rock wall collapsed and exposed a cave.

At the sight of that cave, Gorath shot out a shrewd eye light; almost at the same time, he poured in a vial of medicament. Closely after that, he roared and grew berserk as he immediately released over 20 fierce boa-shaped battle qi, causing an undifferentiated large-range attack. When his opponents' movements were delayed, he darted towards the cave as fast as a meteor.

After breaking the surrounding fierce boa-shaped battle qis, the demon general also noticed that cave on the top of this space. It became shocked inside. At the same time, it accelerated towards Gorath.

In the eyes of the demon general, Gorath had been an arrow at the end of its flight and had no more tricks. Of course, it would not let him escape away at such a critical moment.

After entering the final cave, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh.

That cave's entrance was less than 2 m in width. After extending upwards for less than 100 m, it came to a dead end.

Floating in the air, Zhang Tie leaned against the wall on the top of the cave and panted heavily as he watched the demon general moving closer with a grim look.

At this moment, the demon general was not anxious anymore. After coming to the point over 50 m away from Zhang Tie, it also floated in the air as it watched Zhang Tie who was quivering all over in a commanding, brutal smile, "I was always wondering where did you come from; from now on, I will not be curious about you as I will draw out each bone, each piece of muscle and your guts from your body. I will chew you alive. You should feel honored to be the first human knight being eaten alive by me in this holy war."

Zhang Tie was indeed quivering at this time; however, it was not because of fear or weakness as was thought by the demon general; but because of the excitement in Zhang Tie's heart which almost drove him to howl.

If possible, the demon general could only hear one repetitive sentence in Zhang Tie's mind——f*ck, I'm rich, I'm rich...f*ck, I'm rich, I'm rich...

Zhang Tie watched the demon general as he erected his bloody middle finger towards it and swore, "F*ck you!"

Closely after that, Zhang Tie disappeared right in the eyes of the demon general like a bubble that suddenly broke out and disappeared in the air...

For the time being, the demon general had not figured out how Zhang Tie disappeared in front of its eyes. Before it revealed a dumbfounded look, its body had been reached by shock waves of the terrifying explosion...

The other knights who had just entered this cave were also pushed out of this cave.

After hearing the loud explosion, those knights who had not entered the cave were so scared that they hurriedly moved backward.

Two explosions occurred at the same time, one from that cave at the top of the space, the other from the long and narrow tunnel from where they entered this space...

Due to the violent explosions, the entire underground space vibrated heavily while a lot of rocks fell off the surrounding walls and the dome, which was really frightening...

"F*ck, it's alchemist's bombs. We fell into an ambush..." A knight shouted as it kept moving backward quickly.

"Is demon general okay?"

When the 8-9 knights who were not affected by the first round of explosions changed their faces and appreciated for being lucky, they heard a strange sound from above their heads.

A knight looked up and saw a thick, red waterfall flushed off the dome of this space while radiating a white brilliance.

That was the high-temperature magma in the underground space. In less than 10 seconds, more and more caves and walls over the entire space collapsed while hundreds of billions of tons of magma poured down, making the entire underground space hotter and hotter and increasingly crowded...

The knights of demons and Three-eye Association started to shriek miserably like flies in bottles which was being filled with boiling water...

...

In Castle of Black Iron, Heller was standing in front of Zhang Tie with a set of clothes in hands. Instead of putting on that set of clothes at once, Zhang Tie slightly raised his head and closed his eyes, allowing his blood to drop off his body. Meanwhile, he was sensing the situation in the space outside Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie knew what would happen after those alchemist's bombs were detonated as all this was designed by him.

3 alchemist's bombs were used to collapse the long, narrow tunnel leading to this space while the remaining 6 alchemist's bombs were buried in the tunnel in the dome. When the 6 alchemists' bombs were detonated, the demon general, who followed him into the tunnel in the dome, would be heavily wounded. More than that, when the 6 alchemist's bombs were denoted, they would break the dome of this space and cause that huge magma lake in the dome to pour down. In 10 minutes, the high-temperature magma would fill this space and turn it into a hell...

Zhang Tie had tried it himself. In such a high-temperature magma, black iron knight's protective battle qi could at most stand 3 minutes. None of those black iron knights who had entered this space could escape from this space in half an hour, upward or downward.

The terrain here was like a gourd which was placed upside down. Its upper space was larger than its lower space. However, a greater part of the upper space was filled with magma which was about 1,000 degrees Celcius.

What a dragon cave! What a dragon cave of Huaiyuan Palace...

All these had been calculated precisely. Many parameters had been considered, such as the sizes of the upper and lower space, the temperature of the magma, the capacity of the space, the velocity and impact force of the magma flow, knights' bearing capabilities, escaping time, time to detonate the alchemist's bombs and the locations of the alchemist's bombs, etc....

Through precise calculation and design, it took 800 elites of the engineer troop of Hurricane Corps two months to accomplish this trap according to Zhang Tie's request. After that, Zhang Tie either changed or wiped off the memory of this task of all those who had participated in this task. In the memories of those engineers, they indeed had been dispatched to execute a confidential task by Zhang Tie in Hidden Dragon Island; however, it was not setting a trap using alchemist's bombs in Dragon Cave, but building a secret place for soldiers of Hurricane Corps to hide and some supplies storage bases which could be used at crucial moments in Hidden Dragon Island.

Soon after they accomplished this task, those people had been transported away from Waii Sub-continent by Zhang Tie. Except for Zhang Tie, nobody else knew that he had set a trap for the demon general inside Dragon Cave.

In this trap, both the destruction caused by the alchemist's

bombs and the impact force of the high-temperature magma were fatal to common knights.

In the beginning, Zhang Tie only thought to blow up the demon general using alchemist's bombs; however, the engineer troop of Hurricane Corps posed a plan that could exert the destructive power of alchemist's bombs to the utmost. Zhang Tie immediately adopted the optimal plan which could strike his enemy for two consecutive times.

This trap was set for the demon general. However, 15 knights were trapped, including the demon general, 4 of them were demon knights, 11 of them were from Three-eye Association. As long as Zhang Tie thought about this, he would quiver all over due to the extreme excitement.

...

After half an hour, Zhang Tie put on a new set of clothes and poured in a vial of precious, senior recovery medicament. After that, he told Heller, "Let's start pumping!"

Heller replied with a faint smile as a waterfall of magma started to dive into the Abyss of Chaos.

As long as it was a liquid, it would be pumped into Castle of Black Iron, whether it was sea water or magma.

Only after a few minutes, Heller had nodded towards Zhang Tie while the waterfall of magma came to a stop.

"Watch out!" Heller reminded Zhang Tie.

Holding a long sword, Zhang Tie took a breath and walked out of Castle of Black Iron...

Chapter 803: Showing All the Trump Cards

Only after half an hour, the entire underground space had changed greatly.

Castle of Black Iron sucked in most of the magma, leaving 20-m high magma residue on the ground. Additionally, all the walls were radiating a dull, red glow in a high temperature like a brick kiln which had just been opened after finishing a round of production of bricks.

Half an hour ago, it was indeed like a closed kiln.

The closed kiln was used to make porcelain or bricks. 15 knights were trapped in here.

Few bloody magmas were flowing off the rock walls on both sides from the broken dome. The huge magma lake above the dome led to a geographical position of magma. By now, three-quarters of the magma had flown out of the magma lake. However, the magma was still gurgling like spring water. It might take the geographical position a few weeks to completely fill the palace downside there and refill the magma lake.

The partial topographic feature of this underground space had completely changed.

The entire space was filled with a strong smell of sulphur.

After coming out of Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie took a look around and started to look for the trace of demon general carefully.

Zhang Tie believed that those common black iron knights had already been killed. Even though those guys could survive the explosions, they could barely survive the high-temperature magma. Whereas, Zhang Tie was not sure whether the demon general could survive the magma.

Zhang Tie had learned one thing from the demon general——

when you cannot do it, don't think that others cannot do it either. Each one has trump cards. Never think that you could control everything.

'The demon general was trapped again by me due to the following two main reasons: first, he was over-confident; second, he lost his reason due to his animosity about Gorath.'

In the magma of over 1,000 degrees Celcius, those knights' bones might have been melted into ashes. Aluminum's melting point was 660 degrees Celcius, silver's melting point was 962 degrees Celcius, the melting points of gold and copper varied from 1,000 to 1,100 degrees Celcius, steel's melting point was above 1,200 degrees Celcius. Those guys' rune weapons, medicaments or rune equipment must have been melted, softened or been completely destroyed by the magma within half an hour. If rune equipment's physical structures were destroyed, their rune effect would be lost or sharply weakened.

Zhang Tie felt pitiful when he thought about the equipment of those knights. If he could get their rune equipment, he would make a pile for sure. However, it was already a great achievement for Zhang Tie to allure them into this trap. 'People cannot have all the benefits.'

'The demon general was wearing a black armor, If it died, its armor should be left, at least a part of its armor would remain, even after having been softened or broken. As armor was always made of an alloy, which had a relatively high melting point. It would not disappear in only half an hour.

'I will look for the demon general and its armor!' Zhang Tie would never allow the demon general to survive on at this moment.

Zhang Tie started to search over the space.

Zhang Tie noticed some broken weapons of knights floating on the magma partly or completely. However, he didn't see any item

from the demon general.

After taking a round, Zhang Tie's face gradually turned solemn as he watched the magma below his feet.

Zhang Tie took a deep breath. Standing in the air, he started to slash towards the magma by his autumn-frost gold sword.

In a split second, he had already slashed over 100 times.

Over 100 sword qi formed a sword qi net as they ferociously exploded the magma.

The magma rose dozens of meters high. Even the magma at the bottom was exposed. Right from the rising magma, a figure flew out of the magma at the bottom and suspended in the air with a yellow brilliance.

With a sound of "Hualala...", the magma fell down like the rain. In the air, Zhang Tie and the demon general watched each other silently with a distance of 100 m between them.

Narrowing his pupils, Zhang Tie just watched the demon general silently.

As was judged by Zhang Tie, the demon general didn't die. However, it looked extremely miserable as its body was covered with wounds. One of its hands had been broken. Its armor had been severely damaged. The demon general's body was wrapped in a yellow light. The yellow light came from an odd shield in his hand. Zhang Tie didn't know where did that shield come from. He remembered that the demon general didn't hold a shield when it chased after him. Neither did the other knights have. However, the yellow light from that shield reminded Zhang Tie of the scene when a long bow with the same brilliance appeared in the hand of Elder Muray with which he killed the head of Senel Clan in the demon corps.

A term occurred to Zhang Tie's mind—"Silver Secret Items".

In the knights' world, "silver secret items" made every knight

drool. They were almost the best items that knights could get. It was said that there were "gold secret items" above "silver secret items". However, as of far, Zhang Tie had not seen any black iron knight who had a "gold secret item" even in Mountain of Brilliance.

It required a great power and an unusual fortune for a knight to get a "silver secret item" somewhere in the underground world. It was said that "silver secret items" were products of the brilliant silver age which existed a long time ago. The most important feature of "silver secret item" was that all the "silver secret items" could combine with their owners besides their powerful, special abilities. When their owners needed them, they would show themselves.

Those who had "silver secret items" were all lucky dogs among knights.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the demon general also had a "silver secret item"—the shield.

With this shield, the demon general survived the high-temperature magma. Zhang Tie guessed that demon general might fail to call out its shield timely; therefore, the demon general suffered from the damages of the alchemist's bombs.

Everyone had their own trump cards. Zhang Tie knew that the shield was the trump card of the demon general. A guy who had almost promoted to a land knight was really something.

The demon general watched Zhang Tie who appeared in front of him in the look of Gorath. Besides animosity, its eyes were radiating a weird light. Behind the weird eye light was some fear and greed which was even hotter than magma.

"You're not dead!" Zhang Tie said calmly as he watched demon general. Closely after that, he took a deep breath and released his battle qi, which grew more and more aggressive.

The demon general revealed a grim, yet genial smile like a

crocodile who opened its bloody, big mouth, "Gorath, I've not imagined that you could have such a secret. You have the last chance. As long as you surrender to demons and be loyal to me, I will grant you with supreme power and influence. You can rule all the Three-eye Association clans across Waii Sub-continent!"

Zhang Tie revealed a ridicule, "Your benefits would be more persuasive if you told me earlier instead of being reluctant like now!"

The demon general's smile grew extremely grim. It stretched out its long tongue like that of vipers and licked around its mouth rapidly. At the same time, its eyes turned bloody, "Innocent human, wisdom is utterly different than timidity. Do you think that I cannot defeat you with my current look? You will soon know about the great difference between a common black iron knight and a guy who will soon promote to a land knight. Even though I only have one hand left, I will kill you easily. I will explore your secrets one after another."

"Let's start then!" Zhang Tie roared as his battle intention surged to the highest level. Closely after that, he accelerated towards demon general as fast as a lightning bolt.

'Kill it when it's injured, it's the best time to try my best to kill demon general.'

After shooting out a shrewd eye light, the demon general put away its shield immediately and rushed towards Zhang Tie.

They chose close combat, the fiercest collision mode.

In the first collision, Zhang Tie's wounds which had not been healed were broken once again while spraying his blood over the magma; so the did demon general's wounds...

The moment their blood touched the magma, it had been evaporated.

With the first collision, Zhang Tie's protective battle qi rocked

for a while. By contrast, the demon general's protective battle qi just rocked one time. They were both sent flying backwards by the opponent's sheer animal strength. In a wink, they roared and flew towards the opponent once again. They collided for over 100 times in a split second, causing constantly loud sounds in the air...

It was definitely the toughest combat that Zhang Tie had experienced since he left Blackhot City at 16.

After being severely wounded by alchemist's bombs, one of the hands of the demon general had been broken. Even in this case, the demon general's battle force was still as awful as a mountain peak in front of Zhang Tie.

It was Zhang Tie's choice. In one's whole life, one had to face some combats. Even if it was a mountain peak in front of him, Zhang Tie still chose to collapse it even with his broken bones while gritting his teeth.

...

At this moment, neither the demon general nor Zhang Tie knew that the last knight of Three-eye Association had arrived at the underground world.

This knight was Quintin, the employed knight of Senel Clan whom Zhang Tie had met twice, the very one who should have been killed by Elder Muray's longbow and the one who survived to the last among all the knights of Three-eye Association.

The sharp collisions between Zhang Tie and the demon general reverberated in the underground like thunders.

After hearing the reverberating sounds, Quintin stopped at once as a brilliance flashed across his eyes.

Standing in the dark underground cave, Quintin just listened to their fight quietly. After staying there for half an hour, he revealed a sinister smile. Closely after that, he disappeared into the dark cave...

...

Zhang Tie's autumn-frost gold sword was sent flying backward by his opponent...

At the same time, Zhang Tie's right arm became numb all over from his fingers to his shoulder. After uttering a hum, the autumn-frost gold sword flew off as fast as a light nail and nailed onto the cliff over 100 m away.

For the first time, Zhang Tie's another hand broke the demon general's protective battle qi and ferociously exploded demon general's body. He even tore off a piece of bloody muscle fiber from the demon general's body through the wound on its shoulder.

The demon general also struck into Zhang Tie's chest ferociously...

With a roar in unison, the demon general kicked Zhang Tie forcefully; before Zhang Tie was sent flying back, he turned around in the air and kicked the demon general's head heavily in a movement called 'lying dragon facing the moons'...

They both spurted out blood and fell into the magma lake, arising a magma wall of dozens of meters in height...

After a couple of seconds, they both flew out of the magma.

"You're seeking for death!" Demon general glared at Zhang Tie with bloody eyes. All of a sudden, a light beam rose from his body. At the same time, a complex, geometrical light ring appeared below his feet. The demon general looked complacent.

However, the demon general's fierce and complacent look lasted less than half a second, it turned into a shock; because it saw the same light beam and light ring rising from Zhang Tie's body.

The knight's aiding strength could increase the strength for both others and themselves.

In the next, it was a duel between knights' aiding strengths on

both speed and defensive ability...

When he triggered his aiding strength, Zhang Tie also triggered his super rapid moving skill.

Roars and fierce collisions sounded once again...

The demon general accelerated its speed. However, as one of his hands had been crippled, his attacking frequency was limited. Additionally, Zhang Tie's counterattack was very fierce; especially Zhang Tie's terrifying sheer animal strength. As long as the demon general was hit by Zhang Tie's sheer animal strength, it would feel a steel plate being broken through by Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie's defensive and recovering ability intensified in a split second. However, facing the powerful strike of the demon general, in each collision, Zhang Tie's protective battle qi would rock and almost collapse. Besides, the demon general's battle qi kept drilling into Zhang Tie's body as erosive as weird poisons.

Chapter 804: The Reversal

The fierce battle lasted for 6 hours...

In the final collision, Zhang Tie forcefully broke the other hand of the demon general. With a ground-breaking howl, the demon general skewered through Zhang Tie's left chest by its single horn, picking up Zhang Tie and threw him away...

Before Zhang Tie was sent flying backward, Zhang Tie rammed the demon general's face with his knee due to his experienced, powerful battle skills and fast responsiveness.

The two knights sprayed their blood while their "aiding strength" halos disappeared at the same time. They then fell onto the dry and hot lava from 100 m in height.

A large area of blood stained the rocks beneath their bodies and was further evaporated by the rocks...

...

Zhang Tie even thought that he was dead because he lost his senses and consciousness. When his senses and consciousness returned to his body, he felt extremely painful all over like being torn apart.

Zhang Tie even didn't know how many of his bones were still intact.

It took Zhang Tie 2 minutes to kneel down with one leg. Being soaked by the blood flowing down the wounds on his forehead, Zhang Tie's sight turned completely red. He almost could not open his eyes. Panting heavily, Zhang Tie felt that the air which carried the smell of sulphur also dried up and turned hot. Each time he took a breath, he would feel like eating a handful of hot red sand.

Compared to the scorching sense in his throat and lungs, Zhang Tie felt that his left half of body turned wet like being soaked in water.

Lowering his head, Zhang Tie took a look at his left chest. There was a bloody hole of about 3 cm above his heart, causing his left half of body to soak in the gurgling blood from there.

If he didn't lower his left shoulder just now, his heart must have been penetrated through.

The demon general's single horn penetrated through the point which was close to Zhang Tie's heart and left lung. As a result, Zhang Tie's left hand could not move at all.

Zhang Tie attempted to control the blood vessels, muscles and tissues on his left shoulder; however, it became extremely difficult for him to do this, which was very simple in normal times. Zhang Tie felt that this body didn't belong to him anymore.

Finally, he hardly pressed the blood vessels around the hole by his right hand. After slightly recovering his abilities and senses, Zhang Tie slowly prevented his wound from bleeding.

Kneeling down on the ground by one knee, Zhang Tie could hardly pick himself up.

He had not imagined that the demon general who had suffered from the attack of six alchemist's bombs and stayed in magma for half an hour with one broken hand could still have such a terrifying battle force.

'Is this the battle force of a senior black iron knight who has almost promoted to a earth knight?'

'If not because of my strong body, my powerful strength and my emperor-level secret skill's restrictions about the weird, poisonous battle qi in my body, I would have long died. Perhaps, any other black iron knight would have been killed.'

Zhang Tie wanted to force a bitter smile; however, before he twitched his facial muscles, he had spurted out blood once again...

After spurting out blood, Zhang Tie felt like he lost all of his strength. Feeling kneeling on a bunch of cotton, Zhang Tie

vacillated to the left and to the right and almost fell down.

This was a response that his body made when his physical strength, spirit and will were overdrawn.

At this moment, a faint sound drifted from afar. Zhang Tie raised his head and found that the demon general was struggling to pick himself up. However, he failed. After swaying for a while, its hands could not keep balance for it, causing it to fall down once again.

After over 10 seconds, the demon general struggled to pick himself up once again. Finally, it knelt down on the ground by one knee as it panted heavily with rising and falling chest.

Being over 100 m away from each other, the two knights ferociously gazed at each other.

The demon general was more shocked than Zhang Tie. It didn't believe that Gorath could break his hands and make it so embarrassed. It could not believe that Gorath would match it on the battle force in the close combat.

It was the demon general's first time to see such a human knight.

Even though the demon general's two hands were broken, if it could only move one foot, it could continue fighting.

The two knights were both severely wounded. They could barely stand up. In this case, they were not matching their battle forces, but their recovering abilities. As long as one of them could recover the standard of a LV 6 fighter, the one would be able to determine the other's fate.

The two knights just gazed at each other tightly. At the same time, they started to pant heavily and gradually recover their physical strength...

...

Only after 10 more minutes, a loud sound reverberated around

this space, which originated from outside. After hearing this loud sound, Zhang Tie and the demon general both became stunned.

The demon general watched Zhang Tie as it sneered with a hoarse sound, "It's my...subordinate...one more knight...you...you're dead!"

Zhang Tie's heart pounded.

There were two points that he had not imagined today: first, he could kill over 10 knights with this fatal trap; second, there was one more demon knight left, who would appear at this moment.

Zhang Tie realized that all of his spiritual energy had been overdrawn while hopelessness occurred to his mind...

'Is this my destiny?'

'No, no way, no way...' Zhang Tie roared inside.

The combat of aiding strength between two knights was very abstruse. It was not a pure comparison on isolated strength. It was more like how two huge bells compared with their resonating strength. When the two bells of different sizes sounded, their resonating strength and invisible soundwaves would not only influence themselves but also influence the other opponent.

The smaller bell had to avoid from being influenced by the bigger one with a greater energy at a higher frequency.

Due to the difference in battle force and level, if he wanted to resist the demon general's aiding strength, Zhang Tie had to consume 10 more times' spiritual energy than the demon general.

Additionally, they had to consume their spiritual energy to maintain the calculation and perception of their powerful knight' consciousness. As they were heavily wounded, their spiritual energy was also sharply weakened.

Zhang Tie didn't know how much spiritual energy did demon general have, he only knew that his spiritual energy had been

overdrawn. He felt empty in his mind.

Gritting his teeth, Zhang Tie tightly gazed at the wall where the loud sounds drifted from. He hoped that those walls could stand a bit longer or a guy whom neither Zhang Tie nor the demon general knew would appear...

...

Only after a few minutes, Zhang Tie had been nearly hopeless. After the last loud sound, a rock wall in the distance was blown up into pieces while a figure rushed out of the dust.

At the sight of that guy, the demon general burst out into laughter, making Zhang Tie completely hopeless.

That guy was a knight of Three-eye Association. Zhang Tie even knew him. Zhang Tie met him in Tokei City, the capital city of Titanic Duchy last time.

Zhang Tie remembered that that guy was Quintin, the employed knight of Senel Clan which had been exterminated by him. After the extermination of Senel Clan, this guy directly became a subordinate of the demon general.

Suspending dozens of meters high in the air, Quintin was holding a longsword and watching the underground space with a dumbfounded look and a brilliant battle qi. He looked both shocked and vigilant. It seemed that he had not imagined about such a scene before.

"Demon general, what happened?" Quintin asked with a shocked voice.

"Hurry up, kill Gorath..." The demon general barely stood up after recovering some physical strength and spiritual energy. It seemed that it didn't want its subordinate to see it kneeling down on the ground by one knee.

The moment it stood up, the demon general had gazed at Zhang Tie and issued an order to him.

The demon general just kept its eyes on Zhang Tie. It didn't pay attention to the weird look that flashed by Quintin's eyes when Quintin noticed its weak look.

Zhang Tie became silent completely at this moment. Since Quintin flew in, Zhang Tie had been keeping his eyes on this new visitor...

Quintin hurriedly descended to the side of the demon general with a concerned look, "Where are other knights? What happened to your hands, demon general?"

"Other knights have already died. It was a trap. My hands have been wounded by alchemist's bombs. I'm okay. Hurry, kill Gorath. This guy has a very terrifying recovering ability. Kill him right now..." The demon general urged.

A shrewd light flashed across Quintin's eyes as he replied, "Yes, sir...". He camouflaged to rush towards Zhang Tie; however, it slashed at the demon general...causing the latter's head to fly off. Spurting out 30-cm high blood from its neck, it fell onto the magma with widely opened eyes. It seemed that the demon general had not imagined that its head would fly off. Neither did it believe that its subordinate human knight could kill it at this critical moment...

After swaying a short while, the tall figure of the demon general finally fell down, causing a loud "bang". Its head was sent flying dozens of meters high. Before it landed, Quintin had punched it into blood mist. After that, it slashed the demon general's body into two halves...

Two blood points sprayed onto Zhang Tie's face.

Zhang Tie kept his eyes tightly on Quintin without a blink...

After killing the demon general completely, Quintin let out a deep sigh. After looking around, he moved his eyes onto Zhang Tie before finally bursting out into laughter "Hahahaha..."

In the laughter, Quintin lowered its body and tore off half of the demon general's clothes and took a necklace with a plate from its neck. After that, he stopped his movement. After being still for a few seconds, it burst out into louder laughter...

Zhang Tie had never imagined that the demon general would be killed by its subordinate knight of Three-eye Association.

However, Zhang Tie knew now that a greater crisis was coming.

...

"You've long arrived outside there, right?" Zhang Tie asked calmly as he struggled to stand up.

Quintin stopped laughing. Narrowing his eyes, he watched Zhang Tie with a complacent look, "Right, Gorath is indeed smart. Then, guess why I killed the demon general?"

"Of course it was because of me!" Zhang Tie barely twitched his facial muscles and forced a smile, "But I don't understand what do you want from me?"

"Cause you have one thing that I need!" Quintin replied as he slowly walked towards Zhang Tie. At the same time, he started to scan over each place on Zhang Tie's body with greedy eyes, especially Zhang Tie's fingers and neck where pendants or rings would always be worn, "I remember that we met in Tokei City last time, right?"

Zhang Tie quivered all over as he watched Quintin with an unbelievable look. At the same time, a big question mark occurred to his mind, 'How could this guy know that?'

"Last time, you induced me away from the airport and transferred all the wealth that Senel Clan had gained from Tokei City. From then on, I have been seeking for you. I thought that I would not see you ever. Heh, heh, I've not imagined that you reappeared after a few days. You must be curious about how did I know that was you, right? It's simple, you've exposed that you had

a space teleportation equipment when you moved all the wealth of Senel Clan away in such a short while. After a few days, the black-robe Gorath appeared on this sub-continent, who killed and plundered Three-eye Association clans. However, those Three-eye Association clans' wealth always disappeared. From then on, I had confirmed that Gorath was you, the very person who robbed away the wealth of Senel Clan outside Tokei City. There should not be two guys who possessed space teleportation equipment and were hostile to demons and Three-eye Association on this sub-continent at the same time. Therefore, I knew you must be a cunning one. You must have many tricks. Therefore, I came here a bit later on purpose, wanting to see whether I could make some profits from your battle. As I've imagined, here it is." Quintin explained with a complacent look.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Quintin had been looking for him since Tokei City and had figured out that he was the very person who teased Quintin outside Tokei City. Quintin looked bad-tempered. In fact, this guy was especially thoughtful.

Although Zhang Tie looked calm, he was actually extremely anxious. He was trying his full effort to squeeze out the last bit of spiritual energy in his mind sea.

With a bit of spiritual energy, he would be able to return to Castle of Black Iron and survive himself.

However, no matter how hard Zhang Tie tried, his mind sea was like a lemon which had completely squeezed out its juice or had been dried up under the sunshine which could never provide any more juice...

Zhang Tie didn't give up. He kept squeezing while striving for more time.

"Are you afraid of being revenged by demons after killing the demon general?"

"Haha, why? All the other knights have been killed by the black-

robe knight Gorath, including me and the demon general. After killing all of us, Gorath had disappeared. They would revenge Gorath, not me, if they want!" A smile appeared on Quintin's face. He had been only 10 m away from Zhang Tie. He raised that necklace he got from demon general and pointed at Zhang Tie, "I serve Three-eye Association only for their cultivation resources. Now, the best cultivation resources and most wealth were in the hands of you and the demon general. As long as I get your space teleportation equipment, I will find a new place and restart my life in a strange face and status. I will have everything that I want. All the responsibilities will be shouldered by you. Thankfully, both you and the demon general were severely wounded. Why do I miss such a good chance?"

Fine sweatdrops oozed over Zhang Tie's forehead.

Watching Zhang Tie's embarrassed look, Quintin sneered as he asked jokingly, "Do you want to strive for more time so as to recover your spiritual energy? Hahaha, very good, I will give you some time then. You have 10 seconds. If you presented your space teleportation equipment in 10 seconds, I will promise you an easy death; otherwise, I could only cut you off one piece after another. But you would have a great pain."

"One..."

"Two..."

"Three..."

Quintin slowly narrowed the distance between him and Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie's sweatdrops had started to drop off his forehead while gazing at Quintin tightly...

'Come out, come out, my spiritual energy, come out...'

Zhang Tie roared inside while he gathered all the will, strength from all the cells and blood drops and turned them into an unyielding fist intention of iron-blood fist before striking onto his

mind sea.

Zhang Tie determined to squeeze oil out of rocks in magma, not to mention dried lemon. If not, he would die. 'As for Quintin, he could kill the demon general without any hesitation, not to mention me...'

"Four..." Quintin had already raised his longsword...

"Five..." Quintin had just been 5 m away from Zhang Tie...

"Six..."

Right then, Zhang Tie heard a faint sound of "cracking glasses" in his mind sea. Closely after that, his mind sea experienced an unimaginable, great change like when the universe came into being...

Zhang Tie became stunned for a second, which period was like passing by a distant time tunnel...

After this second, the entire world had become utterly different, including this karst cave. Zhang Tie felt that he existed everywhere.

He recovered his composure in a split second. Because he knew that Quintin had missed his last chance to kill him.

"Seven..."

Zhang Tie just watched Quintin with a strange look while his autumn-frost gold sword which was inserted into the rock wall hundreds of meters away suddenly radiated a golden luster. At the same time, it left the rock wall just like drawing out a piece of bean curd. After leaving the rock wall silently, it floated in the air like a piece of plume...

"Eight..." A gleam appeared on Quintin's face.

The autumn-frost gold sword changed its direction and targeted at Quintin in the air...

"Nine..." Quintin moved to 2 m ahead of Zhang Tie while he was

going to slash off his longsword.

"Thank you. You told me that I should not belittle any small figure in this world. There might be no small figure in this world!" Zhang Tie suddenly opened his mouth.

Quintin became stunned as he launched his attack...

...

However, Quintin's head flew off. In the next 0.1 second, his head and body were split into blood mist over the ground by tens of thousands of sword qi...

The blood mist evaporated at once while a stink started to fill the entire space, leaving osseous ashes on the ground...

Quintin disappeared. That necklace that he got from demon general also floated in the air in a weird way. It suspended in front of Zhang Tie like being pulled by an invisible hand.

Zhang Tie stretched out his hand. The necklace then fell onto his hand.

After injecting a bit of spiritual energy into the necklace, Zhang Tie had sensed what was inside it.

A space teleportation equipment, whose length, width and height were 3 m respectively. A lot of resources were piled inside it...

"Hahahaha..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

Being influenced by his laughter, Zhang Tie's wounds ached once again. He then frowned and couldn't stand to take a breath...

Before entering Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie took the final look at the demon general and sighed——Alas, humanity...

...

Chapter 805: Gorath's Shield

9 days later, Castle of Black Iron, Immortal Mountain, Sky Waterfall...

The silver dragon-like waterfall from the hillside of the main peak of the Immortal Mountain formed the most splendid scenery in Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie named this waterfall as Sky Waterfall.

The water of the Sky Waterfall originated from the thawed snow. After flushing off the waterfall, the snow water converged into rivers and lakes. The moisture then evaporated and condensed into snow on the top of the Immortal Mountain. The snow froze and condensed into the ethereal cloud; after that, it thawed and flushed off the waterfall once again...

Castle of Black Iron had already formed a macrocyclic ecosphere.

The Sky Waterfall was surrounded by verdant woods, splendid scenery and fresh air. It became Zhang Tie's favorite cultivation site.

In the past 9 days, Zhang Tie sat down there for recovery every day.

At present, Zhang Tie was sitting on a huge, cyan rock being not far from the Sky Waterfall with crossed legs and closed eyes to recover quietly.

Zhang Tie remained still and silent; however, the King Roc Battle Qi which had recovered was rushing here and there in his body. Like an emperor, Zhang Tie was commanding thousands of soldiers and horses to cleanse the final threats and bandits in his body. The final threats were gradually driven away from his cells and entered his right hand's index finger, causing it to turn pitch-dark and bright.

After sitting there for almost 10 hours, Zhang Tie opened his

shiny and clear eyes. He stretched out his right hand, releasing a black battle qi and hit onto a rock in the far. As the rock was smoking, it reduced to its half in a split second.

Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh as he watched his finger which had completely recovered its original color, 'What a powerful all-poisons battle qi!'

When he was fighting the demon general that day, he was invaded by the all-poisons battle qi of the demon general. In that case, he tried his best to suppress the all-poisons battle qi; however, he didn't completely clean them off. A few of all-poisons battle qi was still left in his body. Lately, as Zhang Tie gradually recovered and rehabilitated, he finally cleaned up this remaining threat.

Besides being very destructive, the demon general's all-poisons battle qi was capable of eroding other's body. It was very terrifying. If common black iron knights were severely wounded by the demon general like Zhang Tie, even if they could recover their wounds, they had to suffer a great loss so as to eliminate the remaining all-poisons battle qi in their body. By contrast, as Zhang Tie was cultivating an emperor-level secret skill, it was easy for him to eliminate all-poisons battle qi when he was in a good physical condition. In less than 1 day, the dignified emperor-level battle qi had already driven out the remaining all-poisons battle qi from Zhang Tie's body.

After cleaning up the all-poisons battle qi, Zhang Tie became reassured. Picking himself up from the rock, he moved his limbs for a short while. After that, he took a deep breath of the fresh air. Breathing the translucent, cool moisture in the air, Zhang Tie was spirited up all over.

Being aided by his medium-level recovery body and a lot of vials of all-purpose medicament, after consuming another vial of senior recovery medicament, Zhang Tie had completely recovered after 9 days.

Zhang Tie revealed a brilliant smile. Closely after that, he left off the cyan rock and walked towards the palace tree in the distance alongside the mountainous path.

Like how he named the Sky Waterfall, Zhang Tie named the palace tree as Savage Tree House, which sounded average and mischievous; however, it was very vivid. What was more was that this nickname felt warm, which, as a result, would reduce the spacious yet desolate atmosphere in the palace tree. Zhang Tie's initial intention was to make the palace tree the doomsday shelter for his family members. However, there were only Zhang Tie, Heller and his three servants inside it now. Of course, it felt too spacious. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt like a savage living inside it.

The earlier cabins felt a bit crowded; however, the current palace tree felt too desolate.

Zhang Tie thought, 'This might be humanity. People would never be satisfied.'

The moment Zhang Tie entered the palace, he had seen Heller walking towards him.

Heller was holding the space teleportation necklace of the demon general.

"Castle Lord, this space teleportation necklace has been renovated by Edward. It costs some mithril and a blue, golden gem which had been processed by an alchemist!"

After taking the necklace, Zhang Tie found that it had been completely different than its black look before. Even those who had seen that necklace before would not be able to identify it.

The major part of the former necklace was a diamond-shaped three-dimensional pendant. However, it became an angel with open wings now. Although Zhang Tie didn't have an eye for art, he could feel that the angel pendant was unusual. Being only as long as one's thumb, the angel's facial expression and plumes were vivid

and sacred. What an amazing artwork! With hands cupping above her head, the angel cupped a top-quality brilliant blue, golden gem like cupping the sun.

The top-quality blue, golden gem was plundered from the warehouse of a Three-eye Association clan. Under the sunshine, it showed four brilliant stony flowers which had a similar effect with that of a cat's eye. It indicated that the gem's strength had been completely activated by the alchemist master.

After being activated by the alchemist master, the blue, golden gem would carry a natural ability to purify poisons in his body. Usually, a single top-quality blue, gold gem would be worth about 300,000 gold coins. However, if it was attached to this necklace, plus the artwork and the space teleportation attribute of this necklace, this necklace would be priceless.

Holding the necklace, Zhang Tie looked around it as he kept nodding, "Nice, nice!"

As he praised it, Zhang Tie directly put it on his neck.

"Castle Lord, you'd better check the items inside the necklace. When Edward processed it, he didn't take out the items from this necklace as he was afraid of destroying the space teleportation function of this equipment. Otherwise, he could have finished processing it for 6 days."

Zhang Tie patted his forehead as he remembered that he indeed had not checked the items inside this equipment. He had not imagined that Edward worked 3 days more due to such a trivial negligence.

"Will space teleportation equipment be destroyed?" Zhang Tie asked Heller as he injected some spiritual energy into the equipment. He then poured all the items from the space onto the ground. Zhang Tie didn't have to worry about losing those items as they were in Castle of Black Iron, regardless of their values.

In a split second, a lot of items had been piled in front of Zhang Tie and Heller.

The comfortable golden luster of earth-element crystals tinged the entire palace golden.

The space in the necklace was about 27 cubic meters. As a small warehouse, it could hold many items.

Most of the items in the space were earth-element crystals, which almost occupied half of the space. A crystal wall as high as 3 m piled up in front of them.

"Even different universes and planes would be collapsed, not to mention a tiny space teleportation equipment." Heller replied calmly. After that, he picked up one earth-element crystal and looked at it carefully, "Castle Lord, You will not worry about the supply of earth-element crystals for a long while!"

"There are 5879 earth-element crystals in total. I can light another 18 scales with them!" Zhang Tie became a bit thrilled as he watched those earth-element crystals. 'How rich was the demon general! Although it's a prize for common black iron knights, it could only help me make a bit progress. Emperor-level secret skill's chakra is a bottomless hole which could be barely filled.'

"Step by step. Better than nothing! Common black iron knights could not afford so many earth-element crystals even if they sold their underwear." Heller joked.

This time, Zhang Tie made a great achievement. Heller also felt happy for Zhang Tie sincerely as if Zhang Tie's achievement was like that of his, which drove him extremely excited.

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter. He then stretched out his hand when an earth-element crystal flew off and landed on his hand lightly like a piece of the plume. Touching the earth-element crystal and sensing the familiar texture, Zhang Tie sighed satisfactorily.

The earth-element crystal then flew off Zhang Tie's hand and returned. Zhang Tie scanned over the remaining items and finally focused on a shield.

That was the very shield that the demon general held before the fight. It used the shield to defend the high-temperature magma. There were circles of decorative figures which looked like sunflowers on the surface of that shield, making it pretty special.

Compared to its brilliant look in the demon general's hand, this shield had recovered its original color now. It was lying silently on the ground like a common, excellent metal shield. The "sunflowers" surface was reflecting the luster of those earth-element crystals.

'When in close combat, the demon general didn't put away this shield in its body; instead, it put this shield into this space teleportation equipment. It seemed that the demon general intended to use it in emergencies. However, even if the demon general might not have imagined that it was its last time to put it in.'

Under Zhang Tie's gaze, that shield slowly flew off the ground and landed on Zhang Tie's hand.

Seriously, among all the weapons, Zhang Tie was most excel at using shields. When he cultivated in Hidden Dragon Island, he made progress in the highest efficiency on shield defense skill.

This shield weighed about 100 kg. Holding it, Zhang Tie didn't find it being any special.

'It looks common. I just wonder about its raw material. How could it play such a marvelous effect in the demon general's hand? Additionally, how could it integrate with the demon general's body?' Holding the shield, a lot of questions occurred to Zhang Tie's mind.

"How do I use it?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

Zhang Tie knew that as long as his questions were above Heller's bottom line, Heller would always feel content to answer them.

"In this state, this shield could also work. Like common shields, it could be used to resist physical attacks. However, compared to common shields, it is irresistible. Even if a knight who had formed four chakras would not be able to destroy it!"

"Even if a knight who had formed four chakras would not be able to destroy it?" Zhang Tie became stunned. 'Four chakras? Does it mean that even knights who have formed the wind chakra would not be able to destroy it? Is it a silver secret item? How powerful it is!'

"Right!" Heller nodded, "After injecting your battle qi into it, you could activate its second state. You could have a try. In its second state, you could use it to resist your enemy in 360 degrees. Additionally, in this state, it could completely isolate spiritual attack, not to mention physical attack!"

Zhang Tie injected some battle qi into the shield. The shield then turned brilliant and released a golden luster. Together with Zhang Tie's battle qi, the golden luster tightly wrapped Zhang Tie like how a shell covered a yolk. The current state of the shield was as same as that the demon general used to defend the high-temperature magma surrounding it.

The second state of the shield was very powerful; however, it had to consume Zhang Tie's battle qi. Zhang Tie sensed that his battle qi could stand common black iron knight's uninterrupted dense attack with the shield in its second state for about 10 hours. If he faced a more powerful attack, he would consume more battle qi in the same period. The length of period that he could stand depended on how powerful was the opponent's attack. If his battle qi could not stand the attack, neither would the shield in its second state. Additionally, although his enemy could not hurt him with the shield in its second state, he could not use any battle skill, either. The protective cover formed by the shield could not even be

penetrated through by Zhang Tie's spiritual energy...

The second state of this shield was indeed like an all-round irresistible iron tortoise. When in extreme situations, the second state of the shield would play a great role.

"When you injected your battle qi and spiritual energy into the shield at the same time, you could choose the third state of the shield..."

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie tried to inject his battle qi and spiritual energy into the shield at the same time. Closely after that, the brilliant shield disappeared. Almost at the same time, Zhang Tie felt that the sun in the void of his Shrine Palace started to rotate slowly like how a planet revolved around the sun. Meanwhile, it kept releasing brilliant battle qi which seemed to smooth the shield...

Zhang Tie was really startled by the third state of the shield, 'How could my body hold such a shield whose diameter is about 0.5 m? My lower abdomen is not even as wide as 0.5 m.'

Heller understood what Zhang Tie was thinking about.

"It's nothing strange. I've told you before. If you really understand the universal rules, you will know that the so-called size of space and universe are meaningless. Size is just a ruler that humans use to recognize objects. However, rulers are always limited to the cognitive levels of humans' senses! Materials are just forms of energy. However, do you think that the size of energy could be measured by volume?"

Zhang Tie was stunned by Heller's question. After thinking about it for a short while, he moved the shield from his lower abdomen into his hand once again. This time, Zhang Tie finally sensed something abstruse.

The shield didn't appear in Zhang Tie's hand in the form of a material object in a split second; instead, after he injected his

spiritual energy into it, the shield gradually turned into a material object. Additionally, the material object was not made of his spiritual energy, but a powerful quake and energy response. He realized that his spiritual energy was just a media. Through the quake and the energy response, Zhang Tie sharply sensed the rapid, surging and converging qi of the four elements in the elements realm.

In a split second, Zhang Tie felt that he was not holding a shield, but a weightless shield mold whose parameters and conditions had been fixed. When the shield mold appeared in his hand, the four elements in the elements realm were cast into a material object according to the preset parameters and conditions just like casting something in a mold with red, hot liquid steel...

Zhang Tie had visited those ironworks and die shops in Blackhot City; he knew it clearly how to cast those molds with red, hot liquid steel. Similarly, they radiated the same brilliance and heat; the difference was that ironworks and die shops were full of sparks of molten steel.

The process that he put the shield in his body was similar to that of casting molds with liquid steel.

'It turns out that silver secret item could exist both in material realm and elements realm; it could exist in both the material state and the non-material state.'

Zhang Tie understood the mystery of the silver secret item at once.

"Can Edward change the shape of this shield?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"Unless you determine to let this shield remain in its first state forever and not activate its second state or put it in your body; otherwise, it's out of Edwards's capability. Everything about this shield was preset. Only the one who produced it could change its look!" Heller shook his head.

'It seems that I cannot use this shield; otherwise, everybody would know that I'm the very Gorath. If so, I would have a great trouble and become the target of demons and Three-eye Association.' Zhang Tie thought, 'It seems that this shield is exclusive to "Gorath"...'

As this shield had no name on its surface, neither did it have a name that could only be read by spiritual energy, Zhang Tie didn't know what to call it. However, according to Zhang Tie's habit, now that this shield could only appear in the hands of Gorath from then on, just call it "Gorath's shield" then...

After putting the Gorath's shield in his lower abdomen, Zhang Tie looked at the small tree in the far. The rich fruits on the small tree were greeting him...

At the sight of so many fruits, Zhang Tie felt pretty good, 'No matter what, even if there was no such a silver secret item, the space teleportation item or a single fruit on the small tree, I've already been satisfied by the great achievement...'

Zhang Tie had not dreamed that he could promote to the most powerful and mysterious profession among knights.

If not having read the book-notes of elders of Huaiyuan Palace and the various information about knights which were collected by Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie didn't even know there was such a mysterious, powerful profession among knights at all. The number of knights who could promote to such a profession was even less than that of alchemists.

'All this were benefited from the spiritual strength and the strength of God. After eating so many fruits of brilliance, I finally realized a qualitative change from quantitative change. After making a breakthrough and radiating the brilliance of the strength of God, I finally enter another sacred gate.'

'Besides Castle of Black Iron, this profession will be my greatest trump card and dependence.'

Watching that resplendent fruit of brilliance on the small tree which contained all the spiritual energy of the 13 late Three-eye Association knights, Zhang Tie revealed a smile once again. It made Zhang Tie more excited than having promoted to a powerful, mysterious profession—he could make a big leapfrog on the road of this profession.

Chapter 806: Prelude to Extermination

2 leakless fruits which could reinforce the battle qi in the void of his qi sea, 3 iron-body fruits which could make him stronger, 1 fruit of redemption from the appreciation of golden uangs which could increase his strength, 1 fruit of brilliance which contained the spiritual energy of 13 late Three-eye Association knights, 4 fruits of judgment which advanced Zhang Tie's soul fixing skill, cracking skill and tracing skill to super level and his super binding skill to master-level binding skill. It took Zhang Tie 6 days to digest all the above fruits.

It took Zhang Tie 5 days to digest that extremely powerful fruit of brilliance. After digesting it, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy surged to an unimaginable level.

After eating these fruits, Zhang Tie's potential battle strength and fundamental battle force rose to a new record. Zhang Tie then left Castle of Black Iron.

When Zhang Tie was recovering in Castle of Black Iron, the new year of Black Iron Calendar had arrived. When Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron, it was already over 9 pm, January 8th, the 899th year of Black Iron Calendar.

After exiting Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie reappeared in the underground space where he fought the demon general.

The place remained unchanged. The magma lake was still gurgling while the space downside there was not full yet. The demon general's corpse was still lying on the ground in two halves. Whereas, the moisture and blood of the demon general's corpse had been evaporated completely. As a result, the demon general's corps shrunk greatly. It looked like a broken, dried, salty fish. It had lost its previous dignity completely. As for Quintin, his corpse had almost disappeared, even though its ashes remained.

A tiny, fiery lizard was tearing off the demon general's corps. It

seemed that it regarded the corpse as a rare, tasty food. When Zhang Tie appeared out of the void, the tiny lizard was scared too much that it instantly turned around to escape.

'Is this the 8th year since the holy war broke out?' Zhang Tie sighed with complex moods as he exited Castle of Black Iron and watched this familiar place.

The tiny lizard had already broken and disordered the demon general's corps. Zhang Tie noticed a piece of sparkling thumb-sized remote-sensing crystal which had broken into two halves in the broken armor of the demon general. It seemed that the piece of remote-sensing crystal had been damaged when the alchemist's bombs were detonated. At the sight of the broken remote-sensing crystal, Zhang Tie realized that Three-eye Association clans might not have known that their demon general had been killed by me yet.

'It's possible.'

'It was actually very transient and chaotic since the alchemist's bombs were detonated to the time when the high-temperature magma poured down and filled the entire space. The demon general's remote-sensing crystal had been damaged the moment the bombs were detonated. The other Three-eye Association knights were all striving for surviving themselves. At the critical moment, very few of them would consider sending a warning to Three-eye Association clans. Even though some of them did that, they could only brief it; they had no time to predict or clarify anything happening here. They could not clarify how were they, whether the demon general was still alive and the situations facing the other knights of Three-eye Association clans.

Therefore, those Three-eye Association clans might still be in chaos and waiting for the message of the demon general and the other Three-eye Association knights.

'God bless me.' Zhang Tie became spirited.

Closely after that, Zhang Tie left this space and rushed upwards.

...

In less than half an hour, the black-robe Gorath with a gloomy face had flown out of Dragon Cave. After suspending in the sky for a short while, he flew towards Huaiyuan Prefecture like a legendary vampire facing the moonlight as fast as a ghost.

Zhang Tie arrived at Qihai City first.

Qihai City was pitch-dark all over. Looking over it from the air, this city had been filled with demonized puppets both inside and outside. Additionally, many places had traces of being burned.

It seemed that demonized puppets had just occupied Qihai City. The four city walls had been damaged to a certain degree. There were at least 300,000-400,000 corpses outside the city.

As it was built by Huaiyuan Palace, it was matched with powerful city-defense equipment which could kill more demonized puppets.

Millions of demonized puppets were wandering among the corpses inside and outside the city. They were tearing off bloody flesh from those corpses like wild beasts, making the city a hell.

Zhang Tie didn't see any camp of Three-eye Association clans or humans' trace across Qihai City.

An icy eye light flashed across Zhang Tie's eyes when he watched those demonized puppets. Like a black ghost, he descended to that place with the most corpses and released a black smoke over there only by waving his hand.

With Zhang Tie's manipulation, that wisp of smoke swayed for a short while in the air before charging at those corpses of demonized puppets like how a gundog discovered its prey.

Zhang Tie was surrounded by dense demonized puppets. However, being affected by Zhang Tie's super hiding skill, those demonized puppets seemingly treated Zhang Tie as a demonized

puppet and ignored him completely. They just sought for food from the corpses; they would bite their partners and growl occasionally.

Zhang Tie silently watched his black smoke drilling into a corpse of a demonized puppet.

Only after two minutes, that corpse had started to decompose gradually while excreting out black pus. The first bubble came into being on the corpse. When the first bubble broke, more and more surrounding corpses started to decompose and excrete out black pus. Silently, more and more disgusting bubbles came into being on the corpses of those demonized puppets...

However, none of the surrounding demonized puppets had noticed that.

This was a ptomaine miasma, which, after being mutated, could be taken as a terrifying biochemical weapon. It was ten times more destructive than its former species. Over the past years, through the cultivation of Heller, Zhang Tie had gained over 1,000 mutated species of the ptomaine miasma. However, not all of them were more destructive and practicable than their parent species. The ptomaine miasma that Zhang Tie released was the most destructive and terrifying species which was cultivated by Heller with over 20 mutated ptomaine miasmas in Castle of Black Iron.

Its infection and propagation were silent without any omen. Besides direct contact, this ptomaine miasma could also be spread through the air. Additionally, its viability was more shocking.

'It's more like how a ghost was released!' Zhang Tie felt calm as he watched the silent change in the surroundings.

'Go get them, kill them all, turn this sub-continent into the most terrifying forbidden zone for living beings; turn all the living beings with dirty blood into corpses and dust over the ground; turn all the cities over the continent into invaders' tombs. Go, go get them, go destroy them. You're my soldiers. From today on, Waii

Sub-continent will be your paradise...'

Zhang Tie issued an order to those microorganisms which could not be seen by commoners...

As a response to Zhang Tie's command, all the bubbles over the surrounding corpses broke at the same time.

All the living beings had spirits. As for those terrifying mutated ptomaine miasma, Zhang Tie was their creator, their God and absolute ruler.

...

Zhang Tie flew off once again. 'Qihai City has been occupied. If those Three-eye Association clans are not here, they must be in Yiyang City.'

If they occupied Yiyang City, the southernmost part of Waii Sub-continent, it meant that they had occupied the entire Waii Sub-continent. According to the demon general's plan, Yiyang City was where he held a banquet to celebrate their victory and award those Three-eye Association clans.

Zhang Tie was right. The moment he arrived at Yiyang City, he had caught sight of the tents of those Three-eye Association clans, including that super demon corps.

Those guys had taken Yiyang Mountain as their encampment arrogantly. The largest tent was placed where the former Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace had been in. Given his current battle force, even if Zhang Tie was above the main tent silently, he would not be noticed by anybody as the opponents had no knight left.

The main tent was crowded. All the heads of the remaining 11 Three-eye Association clans across Waii Sub-continent and some LV 15 battle spirits of the demon corps were in the main tent.

As was predicted by Zhang Tie, a fierce quarrel drifted from the main tent.

After the demon general and all the knights of Three-eye Association had gone missing for over 10 days, these Three-eye Association clans became flurried. The entire demon corps lost their leader. Nobody knew what was next.

Some proposed to dispatch someone to seek for the demon general and those knights. However, some insisted on waiting for the demon general's return. Some even suggested the army to evacuate right away...

All the LV 15 battle spirits of demons kept silent.

Zhang Tie had thought about killing all of them. However, after considering it for a while, Zhang Tie gave up this thought...

Right then, a plan with which he could clean up the entire super demon corps and all the Three-eye Association clans occurred to Zhang Tie's mind.

Zhang Tie's weird, powerful, hidden spiritual wave of "soul capture skill" gradually spread over the main tent...

Chapter 807: A New Strategy

There was an old Hua saying——If you don't take the benefits that the God gifts you, you will be punished by the God; if you don't do it at the right time, you will have troubles!

All the knights of demons and Three-eye Association were exterminated across Waii Sub-continent. Before the arrival of the new knights of demons and Three-eye Association, even before they knew the message that these guys had been cleaned up, Zhang Tie thought that the God was going to gift him something and allow him to do something.

'What does the God want to gift me?'

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie realized that the God was going to gift him two things.

First, the wealth that all the Three-eye Association had plundered from the demon's area in the north of Waii Sub-continent.

During the past years in the incarnation of Gorath, Zhang Tie had already gained too much wealth from those Three-eye Association clans which had been struck or exterminated by him. Honestly, that wealth was just a small part of Three-eye Association clans. The greater part of wealth was in the hands of the remaining 11 Three-eye Association clans, which included most of the wealth of the 17 collapsed human countries in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. The wealth was still scattered in hidden places by these Three-eye Association clans. Therefore, Zhang Tie thought that the God aimed to gift that wealth to him.

As for the second gift, Zhang Tie thought that the God was going to gift him the super demon corps which had overthrown the overall situation of Waii Sub-continent. On the premise of having the double-headed parent worm, the key to control this super demon corps for Zhang Tie was to feed those demon fighters with

the double-headed parent worm's eggs.

When the demon general ruled this super demon corps, it was almost impossible for Zhang Tie to do this. Although there was only one knight in the super demon corps, he could still not play any trick. However, now, Zhang Tie got a chance—he could have many methods to feed those demon fighters with that double-headed parent worm's eggs as there was no knight in the opposite camp.

To gain the above two gifts and exterminate all the demonized puppets so as to return the entire Waii Sub-continent to its tranquility was what Zhang Tie should do at present.

...

3 days later, namely January 11th, the remaining Three-eye Association clans and the entire demon corps were scared by a message even though they had not received any message about the demon general, all of their knights, even those scouts who had been dispatched to Hidden Dragon Island.

Whereas, it was already too late.

Even at noon on a sunny day, watching over 10,000 demonized puppets to fall down and struggle on the ground for a while before death, all the members of Three-eye Association clans at present felt that something was wrong.

"Is it done by that b*stard?" A member of Three-eye Association clan whispered as it watched those corpses.

"I don't think so. It's not worthwhile for Gorath to poison these demonized puppets!" Another member of Three-eye Association clan whispered.

When some corpses of demonized puppets were carried over here, they all swarmed up and wanted to figure out what happened.

It was a major event for these Three-eye Association clans which

expanded by demonized puppets to watch their subordinates die in this way.

Those demonized puppets had just died over 1 hour ago. Following the order of a head of a Three-eye Association clan, some members moved forward with scalpels and kits and started to dissect those corpses in front of them. Of course, it was not difficult for so many Three-eye Association clans to find some talents who were similar to forensic doctors and coroners.

They should be very meticulous to complete such a complex autopsy and death verification process; it would usually take them at least 1 hour to reach the conclusion for a similar autopsy, except for this time. Before they reached their conclusion through autopsy and experiment, everybody at present had seen changes on those corpses.

"I remember that there was no such a black spot on the face of this corpse!" A member of a Three-eye Association clan questioned.

"Are you sure?"

"I'm sure. There was no such a black spot on that corpse's face just now...look, look, the number of black spots is increasing!" That guy screamed as it pointed at that corpse. Even the one who was dissecting the corpse stopped its work at once.

Right then, numerous black spots appeared on those corpses of demonized puppets lying on the ground. Closely after that, under the gaze of everybody at present, the number of those black spots kept increasing...

Watching the increasing black spots, all the members of Three-eye Association clans at present moved backward at the same time. They started to change their faces. Even those forensic doctors had taken off their uniforms, gloves and tools and floundered and crawled away with scared looks.

In a couple of minutes, small bubbles had come into being on the

black spots of the corpses. In the sunshine, the small bubbles soon broke and poured out some black blood. Meanwhile, more and more black spots came into being and the bubbles grew increasingly larger, accelerating the decomposition of those corpses.

"Ptomaine miasma!" One forensic doctor screamed out of fear. Even his voice had changed like how a duck's neck was pinched by a person's hand. All the members of Three-eye Association clans felt a killing qi. As they changed their faces, they started to retreat.

What was worse was that 1,000 more demonized puppets had fallen down and started to struggle outside Yiyang City during this short period.

For these Three-eye Association clans which had joined the war in Selnes Theater of Operations, ptomain miasma was nothing new. However, such a ptomaine miasma was a mutated species which they had not seen before. The ptomaine miasma in Selnes Theater of Operations was colorful; however, this one was colorless, which played a very terrifying effect on demonized puppets.

No commander or commissioned officer would like to have their troops stay in a region being affected by high-risk virus or bacteria, even demons.

After discovering the mutated ptomaine miasma, all the Three-eye Association clans and demon corps had reached an agreement within half an hour——evacuate from Yiyang City as soon as possible; wait for the demon general in a safe place.

Therefore, the contingent of demonized puppets and the demon corps started to evacuate rapidly only after they arrived at Yiyang City for a few days.

For the sake of safety, the members of the 11 Three-eye Association clans and the demon corps even didn't take their demonized puppets troop away with them. Instead, they left ahead

of those demonized puppets.

The demon corps evacuated from Yiyang City together with Zhang Tie who was responsible for the safety of logistic supply, water source and food in an incarnation of a LV 12 commissioned officer of iron-armored demons. Across the demon corps, no demon caught the weird look and the wisp of a smile at the mouth corner of the LV 12 iron-armored demon when it evacuated.

In the beginning, Three-eye Association and the demon corps just thought that this ptomaine miasma just broke out in Yiyang City; however, they soon realized that they were wrong—the terrifying mutated ptomaine miasma started to spread over all the cities in the south of Yuanjiang river, including Huaiyuan Palace and Qilan Country. In only one day, over 200,000 demonized puppets had been killed by this mutated terrifying ptomaine miasma.

Evacuation turned into an escape. The demon corps which crossed over Yuanjiang River arrogantly half a month ago started to cross over Yuanjiang River once again. However, this time, they were escaping towards the north.

Those members of Three-eye Association clans and those commissioned officers of that demon corps thought that they could find a safe place to wait for the arrival of the demon general; however, they didn't know that they could not find such a place across Waii Sub-continent unless in the hell...

The terrifying ptomaine miasma just followed the demon corps all the way towards the north. A lot of demonized puppets would fall down every day. More and more demonized puppets died day after day. The terrifying ptomaine miasma started to break out among the demonized puppets in an all-round manner. Every city on their way back would break out ptomaine miasma like dominoes. Whenever they thought that they had already arrived at a safe place would the ptomaine miasma break out once again in a couple of days.

Demonized puppets fell down; members of Three-eye Association fell down; even many LV 9 fighters in that powerful super demon corps were in poor conditions. The entire super demon corps' battle force was sharply weakened.

This time, the demon corps evacuated faster than when they marched southwards.

At the end of February, after abandoning over 80 million demonized puppets, the demon corps reached Kalay Mountain Range once again. Being different, this time, they escaped towards the north as embarrassed as homeless dogs. In the eyes of all the Three-eye Association clans and the demons, the south of Kalay Mountain Range had already deteriorated into a terrifying hell of ptomaine miasma...

...

Chapter 808: The Capital City of Sacred Iceland Kingdom

In each June, the beginning of summer, Gozidari Plain in Ice and Snow Wilderness would welcome the most beautiful season of the year.

This summer, Gozidari Plain was both the most beautiful and the most boisterous place in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Since the 896th year of Black Iron Calendar, a majestic city had already been built on Gozidari Plain after about 1 million workers' 3.5 years' around-the-clock work.

This city was the 2nd city in Ice and Snow Wilderness and the capital city of Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Before this magnificent city was named by its owner, it had been known as Saint Petersburg by all the Slavs across Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Everybody thought this name was very good, including the elders of the huge bear tribe.

Over the past 3.5 years, steel plants, cement plants, machinery plants, foundries and workshops of different sizes started to sprout up like mushrooms after rain across Gozidari Plain so as to build Saint Petersburg. As a result, the entire Gozidari Plain became much more prosperous than before.

As over 10 million immigrants poured in Ice and Snow Wilderness, they brought sufficient, cheap labor forces, lots of technicians, engineers and talents from all walks of life. Meanwhile, these people released a vast market demand. Additionally, the 90 million gold coins that Zhang Tie invested in building Saint Petersburg released a powerful cash flow in the hinterland of Ice and Snow Wilderness. The very cash flow guaranteed the economic prosperity.

With the construction of Saint Petersburg, the cash flow of 90

million gold coins flew in all directions from the hinterland of Ice and Snow Wilderness like trickles. As a result, Saint Petersburg's orders spread over the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness from the most remote mountain bear tribe to the most prosperous Ewentra Archipelago. The entire Ice and Snow Wilderness started to rotate slowly like a steam engine being activated. Meanwhile, it released a vast development potential and led to a vigorous scene all over.

When Blackson Humans Corridor was in its worst situation, the Ice and Snow Wilderness, which had been regarded as a wilderness by numerous people, started to reach its heyday.

'Who brought Ice and Snow Wilderness to its heyday?'

Even a 3-year old kid in Ice and Snow Wilderness could answer this question——His Majesty Peter.

As Saint Petersburg was going to be completed, Peter Hamplester's authority as the tsar of Saint Petersburg was gradually adopted by more and more people.

...

At dawn, a xiphodon cavalry team finally arrived at Ginqing Lake Delta Region of Gozidari Plain after one night's gallop where Saint Petersburg, the capital city of Sacred Iceland Kingdom, was located. From here, they could see Elzida Mountain in the distance.

This cavalry team consisted of less than 30 people. All the cavalries wore an armor made of mutated whale's leather. They even smelt fishy. If you looked at them carefully, you might see white salt as fine as sand on the binding sites between the pieces of their leather armors. Generally, such a phenomenon was caused by three reasons: first, their leather armors were picked up from the ocean; second, their leather armors were soaked with their sweat; third, the combination of the above two situations.

At the sight of Saint Petersburg, the head of the cavalry team stopped his mount, followed by all the others. Watching the

preliminary contour of Saint Petersburg in the distance, they all felt shocked inside.

The city wall was made of white steel rocks which were extracted from Elzida Mountain. In the morning sunshine, it looked as pure and white as the cleanest snow on the top of Elzida Mountain which had existed there for over 1,000 years. Being different than the natural greatness of Elzida Mountain, this city's contour presented an artificial magnificence.

"Here we are!" The head of the cavalry team turned around and watched his subordinates. He then accented, "The city built by His Majesty Peter, also the capital city of Sacred Iceland Kingdom!"

All the cavalries' eyes radiated a special brilliance. Watching this city, many of them felt proud. Over 3 years ago, this sense of pride just belonged to their tribe, though.

The head just clamped the stomach of his xiphodon by his legs. Closely after that, his xiphodon had rushed forward, followed by all the other cavalries...

This cavalry team then rushed towards Saint Petersburg along the Marly River. After a few minutes, they met another cavalry team who were galloping their xiphodons towards them. The population of the new cavalry team was twice that of theirs. Besides, the members of the new cavalry team looked more capable than them with more excellent equipment.

"Stop, report your status, please!" The commissioned officer of the new cavalry team raised his arm to stop this travel-stained team when they were 50 m away from each other.

"I'm Hags, the head of the sea bear tribe!" The head of the travel-stained cavalry team raised up his identification plate and shouted, "I have an emergency military intelligence to report to His Majesty Peter!"

After knowing their purpose and checking their identities, the

commissioned officer gave way to them. Not only that, he even led them to Saint Petersburg.

With the convoy of this cavalry team, the sea bear tribe's cavalries smoothly passed another two cavalry teams' obstruction and one roadblock and finally arrived at Saint Petersburg after over 40 minutes of travel.

This city looked utterly different than they saw from afar just now.

The design of Saint Petersburg was very special. Looking down at it from the air, you would see that the contour of this city was like a special snowflake. This city was surrounded by six interconnected huge, outstanding diamond-shaped battle fortresses. Being linked with the 6 diamond-shaped battle fortresses was a standard hexagonal city wall. The city gates were on the hexagonal city wall behind two diamond-shaped battle fortresses.

With this structure, Saint Petersburg looked especially beautiful. What was more, with such a design, this city had a terrifying defensive ability. Each and every enemy had to face the counterattack from the city-defense weapons on two battle fortresses and one part of city wall at the same time. If the opponent wanted to attack any battle fortress, they had to suffer a great loss; additionally, after destroying any one battle fortress, they would definitely ram onto the sharpest and the firmest joint between two parts of the city wall and be struck by weapons from the two parts of the city wall at the same time.

The cavalries of the sea bear tribe felt that the design of Saint Petersburg was very fabulous. However, at this moment, these cavalries didn't have time to appreciate it. After entering the city from a southeast city gate, they directly rushed towards the Summer Palace of the tsar in the center of this city.

Saint Petersburg had 6 thoroughfares, all of which converged in the core area of this city.

The core area of this city was the Summer Palace of Sacred Iceland Kingdom.

In Ice and Snow Wilderness, summer was the nicest and most precious season; therefore, that man's residence, also the hub of the authority of Sacred Iceland Kingdom was called Summer Palace by people.

It was very boisterous in the city. Over 2 million people were living in Saint Petersburg. Many new buildings appeared on the two sides of the thoroughfares which could hold 12 vehicles in a row. Additionally, new buildings were rising everywhere, making the entire city vigorous.

Besides private cars, there were also public buses on the thoroughfares of Saint Petersburg.

After entering the city, all the cavalries slowed down.

In Saint Petersburg, besides Grey Palace warriors and fighters of Thor's Hammer, only heads and elders of tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness and their retinue could ride their mounts on the thoroughfares. What a special honor!

When they passed by the square of Grey Palace, Hags, the head of sea bear tribe found that Grey Palace was holding a grand ritual today as numerous clergymen in white costumes and black costumes were gathering on the square. Mountain people, mountain sea! Everybody was waiting for something with a solemn and desired look...

"Are they holding a ritual?" Hags asked the commissioned officer of Thor's Hammer who escorted them all the way here.

"His Majesty had just conferred His Excellency the Maxim as the archbishop of the entire Ewentra Archipelago a few days ago. It's the first time for His Excellency the Maxim to hold the mass of ode after advancing to the archbishop. Therefore, so many clergymen were attracted and gathered in the square!" The commissioned

officer answered respectfully.

As the cavalry team of the sea bear tribe had been on the way during the past few days, they had no connection with the outside. Therefore, Hags was shocked inside when he was told that the first archbishop of Ancient God Church had appeared, but not the heads of the major bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Hags had heard about Maxim before. In less than 4 years, this guy had already consolidated the supreme position of Ancient God Church in Ewentra Archipelago and developed numerous believers of Ancient God Church in Ewentra Archipelago. Even many bigwigs and councilmen had been developed into clergymen and believers of Ancient God Church by him.

Maxim was once just a logistics clerk of a small, remote tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness. What made him well-known was his precious note called "God's Favor is the Spring", which recorded how Peter presented the God's will in the underground ruins of Haidela Glacier Crack as the one had witnessed and experienced it himself.

In Ancient God Church, besides the sacred book "Book of Eternal", Maxim's "God's Favor is the Spring" was almost the most favorite book of all the believers and clergymen of Ancient God Church.

Of course, Maxim became outstanding not only because of a note and a sacred book but also because of his wisdom and talents. Hags knew that another powerful star who was on an equal footing with the heads of the bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness would rise in Saint Petersburg from today on.

If not an emergency, Hags even wanted to stop to take a look at the ritual. By the way, he intended to scrape acquaintance with the first archbishop who came from Peter's followers.

The entire Summer Palace occupied over 200 hectares. It was absolutely a scaled-down Saint Petersburg. The blocks near the

Summer Palace had already been converged with mansions and castles of bigwigs of Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Not only those rich ones from Ewentra Archipelago who strove for buying real estates here at high prices, even the heads and elders of bear tribes were proud of having one castle or mansion near the Summer Palace.

The Summer Palace was strictly guarded by Grey Palace warriors and the elites of Thor's Hammer.

The cavalry team of sea bear tribe stopped outside Summer Palace. After reporting their intention here, only Hags, the head of the sea bear tribe and two of his subordinates were allowed in. All the other soldiers of the sea bear tribe had to wait outside Summer Palace.

The Summer Palace was divided into front palace and harem. The front palace was where the hub of the authority of Sacred Iceland Kingdom was located and where the Helm Elders worked.

Under the guidance of a commissioned officer of the front palace, Hags finally came to the palace where the helm elders worked after many passes and saw the 5 helm elders.

The five helm elders of Sacred Iceland Kingdom were knight elders of three tribes.

Besides the 3 elders of the huge bear tribe, two elders of the iron bear tribe and wild bear tribe also had arrived in the helm palace after receiving the message.

The 5 elders had been long waiting for the arrival of Hags.

At the sight of the 5 elders, Hags hurriedly told the 5 elders about the latest news.

After listening to Hags' words, the 5 elders exchanged a solemn and amazed glance with each other. Watching Pontiff Sarlin slowly nodding his head, the 5 elders then stood up at the same time. Elder Toles watched Hags, "Let's go tell the news of the sea bear tribe to His Majesty!" After saying that, Elder Toles glanced at

Hags' two subordinates.

"They are the bravest fighters of the sea bear tribe. After landing, they deepened into the demon's area in Blackson Humans Corridor for investigation and got the latest, detailed intelligence! They could explain what they saw to His Majesty." Hags hurriedly introduced.

After listening to Hags' introduction, the two fighters of the sea bear tribe both chested out. No fighter would miss such a special honor to show off themselves in front of His Majesty.

The 5 elders then became silent. They then hurriedly took Hags and his two subordinates away from the Helm Palace. After passing by a long winding corridor and a royal garden in the front palace, they finally came to a magnificent parlor.

"Where's His Majesty?" Elder Gouras asked a beautiful, female commissioned officer who was serving them in the parlor.

"His Majesty is taking a rest!" The tall and plump female commissioned officer in a purple languette answered respectfully.

Although eunuchs still existed in some palaces, there was no eunuch in Summer Palace. The harem of Sacred Iceland Kingdom adopted female commissioned officers as servants in the harem of Summer Palace. Most of these female commissioned officers and maids came from tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness, a few of them even came from major clans of Ewentra Archipelago.

'He's still taking a rest?' Those elders forced bitter smiles at the same time. As His Majesty Peter had returned to Ice and Snow Wilderness for over 1 month, his gossips in the harem had also drifted into the elders' ears, they had not imagined that His Majesty Peter was still taking a "rest" when the sun had risen such high.

When that female commissioned officer went to report to Peter about their arrival, the 5 elders and the 3 representatives of the sea

bear tribe could only wait in the parlor silently.

After that tall and plump female commissioned officer in a purple longuette left the parlor, she entered the harem. A few minutes later, she came to a magnificent palace.

Some maids and two female commissioned officers were standing outside a room with solemn looks inside the palace. Listening to the exotic sounds drifting from the room, they all blushed; however, they still "stuck to" their own posts and pretended to be calm.

Over the past 1 month, there were always groans, sounds of "pah pah pah" and occasionally screams drifting from the room between 10 pm and 12 am, except for some hours in the midnight.

Only Queen O'Laura entered the room at the beginning; however, after a couple of days, more and more madams were called in.

As for those maids and female commissioned officers who had always been serving Peter outside the bedroom over the past one month, most of them could even judge which madam was being favored based on the groans.

"Is His Majesty still inside?" That tall and plump female commissioned officer asked another female commissioned officer in a low voice.

"Listen..." That female commissioned officer implied her with her eyes while her face blushed.

After listening to that for half a minute, that tall and plump female commissioned officer's face also blushed.

Loud frequent sounds "Pah Pah Pah Pah" drifted from the bedroom. Meanwhile, sobs reverberated in the bedroom.

"Who's that?"

"Madam Sabrina who was taken in by His Majesty last night!" That female commissioned officer answered.

Of course, that tall and plump female commissioned officer was familiar with the name Sabrina. However, it was out of her imagination that this notorious woman could sob like a virgin.

"Perhaps, His Majesty could enjoy a fresh sense of conquering a virgin from a mature woman like Madam Sabrina. That's why he loves her so much!" The female commissioned officer whispered.

"Some elders want to see His Majesty!"

"According to the rules set by Queen O'Laura for the harem, if elders have something urgent to report, they could have female commissioned officers enter the bedroom and pass it to His Majesty directly!"

After hearing that, the tall and plump female commissioned officer bit her lips before plucking her courage to open the door and enter it.

Sabrina stopped sobbing...

After 2 minutes, the bell outside the bedroom finally rang. Hearing this, those maids and female commissioned officers who were waiting outside the bedroom swarmed in at once...

...

After 10 minutes, Zhang Tie left his resting palace and walked towards the parlor where the elders were waiting for him.

It had been over 1 month since Zhang Tie completed his action and left Blackson Humans Corridor. Zhang Tie estimated that the situation in Blackson Humans Corridor should have been discovered by humans...

If they didn't know about the current situation facing Blackson Humans Corridor till now, it was unnecessary for them to continue fighting demons anymore.

Chapter 809: Preparation and Shock

Right in the parlor, when Zhang Tie entered, the 5 elders and the 3 representatives of the sea bear tribe stood up and bowed towards Zhang Tie at the same time.

"Your Majesty!"

"Hmm, relax yourselves, take a seat!" Zhang Tie glanced over the 5 elders and Hags, the head of the sea bear tribe.

When he caught sight of Hags, Zhang Tie had almost got their intention. The sea bear tribe had been responsible for spying on the northern coastal areas of Blackson Humans Corridor during the past few years so as to master the recent situation of demons near Sacred Iceland Kingdom. If demons prepared to attack Ice and Snow Wilderness, they would definitely take drastic measures in the northern coastal areas of Blackson Humans Corridor.

Watching them taking seats, Zhang Tie sat on the main seat.

"A female commissioned officer told me that you have an urgent military intelligence to report to me. Are demons taking drastic measures in Blackson Humans Corridor once again?" Zhang Tie asked with a solemn look.

Zhang Tie exerted his disguise talent to the utmost. When he spoke, his facial expression and tone were both vivid.

When he asked, Zhang Tie prayed inside——God, forgive me. Although it's not kind to do that, please allow me to be innocent this time given that I was always honest before.

Elder Toles opened his mouth, "This intelligence is indeed about demons. We were also shocked when we got this intelligence. All of us thought it was of great significance; therefore, we came here to report it to you, Your Majesty!"

"What's that?' Zhang Tie faintly frowned as he asked in a muffled and dignified way.

After exchanging a glance with each other, the 5 elders finally moved their eyes on Hags.

After taking a deep breath, Hags stood up and uttered, "The demon corps in Blackson Humans Corridor might...might have been exterminated. Even that demon corps and those Three-eye Association clans in Blackson Humans Corridor had disappeared!"

Zhang Tie sprung up from his chair due to an extreme shock. After that, he slowly sat back. Watching Hags with a solemn look, he asked in a slightly icy tone, "As the head of sea bear tribe, do you know what responsibility you should assume when you talk about that in front of me and the helm elders?"

Under the "dignified" gaze of Zhang Tie, Hags gritted his teeth, "I know, I will be responsible for each word that I said here today. I would like to take the punishment for any mistake in my intelligence!"

"Fine, tell me about your reference and how did you know that!"

"After the demon corps passed by Kalay Mountain Range last year, sea bear tribe had received the order of helm elders. We were requested to strengthen the surveillance over the northern coastal areas of Blackson Humans Corridor. From then on, I had dispatched mutated-shark cavalry elites to strengthen our surveillance over the northern coastal areas of Blackson Humans Corridor. This March, the abnormal phenomena in northern coastal areas of Blackson Humans Corridor aroused our attention. Our soldiers' cavalries found that the demonized puppets which had reached the south of Blackson Humans Corridor started to retreat towards the north since March. As a result, those empty coastal areas were crowded with numerous demonized puppets surging northwards in a short period. After verifying this intelligence, we reported it to the helm elders immediately..."

Elder Gouras interrupted at this moment, "When we got the intelligence from the sea bear tribe, the helm elders were very

intense. At that time, demon corps had already occupied Blackson Humans Corridor completely. Therefore, their sudden abnormal movement reminded us that demon corps were going to prepare for attacking Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Therefore, we even let Ewentra Mixed Fleet enter Class II readiness posture. However, what happened next was more abnormal..." Elder Gouras threw a glance at Hags to let him continue.

"The soldiers of sea bear tribe kept monitoring the northern coastal areas of Blackson Humans Corridor. We found that the demon corps didn't prepare for the war in the northern coastal areas; instead, they kept moving northward and retreated into the northern inland regions. Because there were demonized puppets all over on the land, our soldiers didn't deepen into the inland regions. By mid-April, something more abnormal happened. All the demonized puppets disappeared from the northern coastal areas of Blackson Humans Corridor. At the beginning, we thought that demons were playing tricks. Therefore, we observed it for two weeks meticulously. By late April, after not seeing any demonized puppet for over 10 days, some brave soldiers of sea bear tribe finally deepened into the inland cities to investigate!"

"They didn't see any alive demonized puppet in those inland cities; instead, they saw numerous broken corpses of demonized puppets with terrifying looks. Given their looks, those demonized puppets might have been affected by a terrifying ptomaine miasma. After finding this situation, we reported it to the helm elders at once; meanwhile, some bravest soldiers of sea bear tribe started to deepen into inland cities. Their report was very shocking. All the demonized puppets across Blackson Humans Corridor might have disappeared. There were only a large number of decomposed corpses in those cities where those demonized puppets had stayed. As for the two bravest soldiers on my side, one of them deepened into Hurricane Plateau of Golan Empire in the past one month, the other entered Kalay Mountain Range; however, they did not find any trace of demonized puppet..."

As Hags introduced the two soldiers, Zhang Tie moved his eyes onto them on Hags' side. One of them was LV 11, while the other was LV 12. Watching their tough looks and strong figures, Zhang Tie nodded inside. 'Given their looks, they are definitely dauntless fighters. No wonder they dared deepen into Golan Empire and Kalay Mountain Range to spy on the movements of demon corps.'

"Tell me what did you see." Zhang Tie asked the two fighters.

Starting from the fighter on the left of Hags, the two fighters started to depict what they saw when they deepened into Hurricane Plateau of Golan Empire and Kalay Mountain Range.

Corpses! Corpses! They saw nothing but corpses.

"How did you know that those corpses were of demonized puppets? How did you confirm that those corpses died of a terrifying ptomaine miasma?"

"When demonized puppets surged southwards, there wasn't any alive person across the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. When they moved southwards, all the humans had fought to the death or turned into the food of demonized puppets. We saw too many corpses, some of which might be of humans; however, we believe that most of those corpses were of demonized puppets!"

"Additionally, the skulls of those decomposed corpses were black. Therefore, we're sure that those corpses died of a terrifying ptomaine miasma. In Kalay Mountain Range, even wild beasts or insects dared not draw close to those corpses..."

The two fighters of sea bear tribe replied in muffled and well-organized way.

"How many corpses do you think were there in Kalay Mountain Range?"

The two fighters exchanged a glance with each other.

"We cannot tell you the concrete figure. However, according to our speculation, there should be at least 100 million corpses. We

saw corpses from the north of Kalay Mountain Range all the way to the entrance of the underground world on Hurricane Plateau where the demon corps had been discovered!"

'They almost got the concrete figure!' Zhang Tie was more shocked by the two fighters' abilities. They were both brave and smart. No wonder they were favored by Hags.

"Brave fighters of sea bear tribe, tell me your names!" Zhang Tie's voice turned genial.

"I'm Hirokov!"

"I'm Alkin!"

The two fighters answered while chesting out.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile as he pointed at two longswords hanging on the wall of the parlor, "These are rune swords gifted by a major clan in Ewentra Archipelago. From now on, they belong to you, one for one. Only real fighters could live up to such excellent weapons! From today on, you could enter Summer Palace with them."

"Thanks, Your Majesty!" The two fighters of sea bear tribe took a deep breath before forcefully punching their chests. Trying their best to not look too excited, they strode towards the wall and picked off the two longswords in a decent way. After that, each of them put one sword on one side of their waist and returned to Hags' sides.

Being gifted with longswords in the parlor and were promised to enter Summer Palace with the gifted swords was a great honor for any tribal fighter, which made their family members and them proud.

Zhang Tie's award made Hags look more confident. He knew that this award meant the tsar's confirmation about his subordinate fighters and the entire sea bear tribe.

Zhang Tie pretended to think about something. After being silent

for a short while, he asked Pontiff Sarlin and the other elders, "What do you think about it, elders?"

"There must be a major accident across Blackson Humans Corridor which even demons could not have predicted. The only problem is that we don't know the whereabouts of the demon corps and the demon general. The demon corps might have been exterminated by the terrifying ptomaine miasma; however, the 17 knights of demons and Three-eye Association couldn't be killed by ptomaine miasma, including the demon general!" Elder Gouras said as he frowned.

"No matter what, the news that all the demonized puppets were exterminated across Blackson Humans Corridor could shock the entire human world. We don't need to risk our lives to explore the whereabouts of the demon general and its subordinate knights and that super demon corps. We only need to release the news that almost 200 million demonized puppets were killed by ptomaine miasma. Someone will help us figure out the reason. It's a good thing for Sacred Iceland Kingdom." Elder Turin said in an experienced way.

"I will do that!" Pontiff Sarlin smiled, "After all, many people have known my byname in the Mountain of Brightness. Additionally, Sacred Iceland Kingdom needs a channel to pass its voice to the public."

All the other elders nodded.

"Could Elder Sarlin see the future of Waii Sub-continent?" Zhang Tie suddenly asked.

"Since half a year ago, the entire Waii Sub-continent had been covered by a dense black fog. From then on, I could not see anything about this Sub-continent. In the beginning, I thought that this black fog symbolized demons. I had even been worried about that for a long time. However, given the current situation, the black fog might be another unknown power!" Elder Sarlin

sighed.

Zhang Tie didn't speak anymore. He knew that he had already built the channel, what he needed to do was to wait for the result.

'The threats facing Ice and Snow Wilderness and Sacred Iceland Kingdom were finally eliminated. As demon corps could not occupy Waii Sub-continent for the time being, they would not make their preparations to fight Ice and Snow Wilderness. Therefore, they could not pose any substantial threat to Ice and Snow Wilderness. Given the current situation, unless the demons' heads were idiots, they would never have their demon corps appear on the sub-continent which had been absolutely desolate with over 200 million corpses of demonized puppets due to fatal ptomaine miasma. They could not get any resource from this sub-continent anymore.'

'Compared to the other sub-continents, the Eastern Continent and the Western Continent, Sacred Iceland Kingdom is just a sesame in this world, which is in such a cold and barren land. Demons will never pick up such a sesame at the cost of some watermelons. Nobody would like to do that. As for demons, the entire Sacred Iceland Kingdom had lost its value. After Waii Sub-continent became a wasteland, Sacred Iceland Kingdom had become a Shangri-La. Before occupying Eastern Continent or the Western Continent, demons would not organize its power to launch such an expedition to this place.'

'However, Sacred Iceland Kingdom should keep an eye on moles of Three-eye Association clans. They might want to root, reproduce and expand here like parasites so that they could overthrow the ruling of Sacred Iceland Kingdom in another manner. It was another form of war to handle Three-eye Association clans. Whereas, after the Three-eye Association clans on Waii Sub-continent were exterminated, it would take new Three-eye Association clans at least dozens of years to consolidate their positions and powers in this country. Those Three-eye

Association clans don't have a chance to break in Sacred Iceland Kingdom for the time being.'

Zhang Tie fulfilled his promise that he would support Ice and Snow Wilderness to the end in another pattern.

These were the final preparations that Zhang Tie made before returning to Eastern Continent, including the crazy things he had done these days. As Zhang Tie didn't know when would he come back here next time, he took the crazy things that he had done as a communication, compensation, carnival, gift and comfort.

'When O'Laura, Olina or Sabrina made love with me, they desired for sustaining my bloodline, although they didn't say it.' Zhang Tie would sustain his bloodline in Sacred Iceland Kingdom. However, he had to leave for Taixia Country.

Without the holy war, Zhang Tie might pick up his family members from Taixia Country to Sacred Iceland Kingdom or his beloved ones from Sacred Iceland Kingdom to Taixia Country. However, in the holy war, Zhang Tie couldn't bear his friends, family members and clansmen being threatened by demons while he was in a safe place. 'O'Laura, Olina and Sabrina belong to this place, they have everything here. They won't feel like leaving out of here.'

At present, Sacred Iceland Kingdom might be as safe as Taixia Country; however, such a safety was temporary if humans didn't win the holy war.

Donder once said, "One could betray everything but his bloodline."

Faithfully, Zhang Tie could not betray his bloodline.

In the future, the fiercest battle between demons and humans would break out in Taixia Country.

Therefore, Zhang Tie had to return to Taixia Country.

If Taixia remained safe, humans would survive forever.

Even if he was not here, as long as he fought demons and Taixia remained safe on Eastern Continent, it would be a protection for Sacred Iceland Kingdom.

"Over the past years, the Tribal Axis Railway Corporation (TARC) has gathered a great number of profits and assets. With the increasing population across Ice and Snow Wilderness, many more places are to be developed. A few days ago, the TARC and Golden Bank have proposed to build a new railway. How about connecting the next section of the Tribal Axis Railway to sea bear tribe? This section of railway lasts over 1,700 miles. Sea bear tribe could raise fund or dispatch tribal labor forces to participate in the construction of the railway. Sea bear tribe could share 40% of this section of railway and participate to run it!"

It was Zhang Tie's principle to award those who have military exploits. As the sea bear tribe had made a great performance in the past few years, Zhang Tie had to set the sea bear tribe as a good model for all the other tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Hags, the head of the sea bear tribe sprung up with an excited look immediately as he punched his chest, "Thanks, Your Majesty!"

Of course, Hags was excited. Because he knew that this award meant millions of more gold coins' income for sea bear tribe each year. Although the sea bear tribe was poor, they had a lot of labor forces and could gather some money. In the worst scenario, as long as Hags agreed to use the potential benefits or stock options of the new section of the railway as the mortgage, he could raise a great amount of gold coins from those newly riches in Ewentra Archipelago and Golden Roc Bank.

...

Only after a few hours, an article called "Latest News: Terrifying Ptomaine Miasma Exterminated over 200 Million Demonized Puppets across Waii Sub-continent" was issued in the Mountain of Brightness.

The entire Mountain of Brightness was shocked...

Chapter 810: Returning to Taixia Country

After the news that over 200 million demonized puppets across Waii Sub-continent were exterminated was released in the Mountain of Brightness, Sacred Iceland Kingdom also dispatched a large war airship to Waii Sub-continent for further investigation at the order of Zhang Tie. According to the intelligence of the airship, they found 2 airboats above Waii Sub-continent which were moving at very high speeds. Additionally, each of the two airboats was safeguarded by a knight. The knight of one airboat even made a close touch with the scouting airship of Sacred Iceland Kingdom.

However, fighters on the scouting airship could not identify the background of the airboats from the knights on the two airboats. Undoubtedly, the amazing event on Waii Sub-continent had already shocked the rest of the world and attracted the attention of major forces. Those who could arrive at Waii Sub-continent in the shortest period were definitely top forces across Eastern Continent or Western Continent.

With the focus on Waii Sub-continent from all parties, the event that happened on Waii Sub-continent was gradually revealed; meanwhile, more and more mysteries appeared.

From January to June of the 899th year of Black Iron Calendar, human forces evacuated from Waii Sub-continent. What happened on Waii Sub-continent, which had been occupied by demon corps, might become the largest mystery since the start of the 3rd holy war.

Nobody knew the whereabouts of that super demon corps which was composed of demon fighters above LV 9!

Nobody knew the whereabouts of the 17 knights of demons and Three-eye Association clans!

Nobody knew the whereabouts of those Three-eye Association clans on this sub-continent!

Nobody knew the whereabouts of that wealth that had been plundered by Three-eye Association Clans on this sub-continent!

Many people seemingly had disappeared out of the void...

Everybody only knew that this sub-continent was covered with the terrifying skeletons of demonized puppets.

All the skeletons of animals even humans looked white or light-colored, except for that of those demonized puppets which looked as black as ink, which made people scared.

The terrifying ptomaine miasma was named as Full Moons Demon Miasma.

At the beginning, some people doubted whether those demonized puppets died of ptomaine miasma. Compared to those widely-accepted ptomaine miasmas, the latest ptomaine miasma over Waii Sub-continent was colorless and intangible, which didn't have the features of many common ptomaine miasmas at all. It looked more like a rank poison. If not those black bones, people could almost not identify it. Nevertheless, in July, all the doubts had faded away.

When the double full moons appeared, black miasma covered wherever there were black bones across Waii Sub-continent. The black miasma was like the crazily dancing flame in the hell, which almost wanted to devour all the living beings across the sub-continent.

Therefore, the name Full Moons Demon Miasma spread throughout the humans in the shortest period.

With the appearance of Full Moons Demon Miasma, all the doubts in Waii Sub-continent were finally focused on a mysterious knight——Black-robe Gorath!

Based on the traces across Waii Sub-continent, some people even speculated that it was the very mysterious black-robe knight Gorath who had been wrestling with demons across Waii Sub-

continent and making demons run here and there helplessly for many years. Besides being a knight, Gorath was an extremely terrifying voodoo pharmacist. The terrifying Full Moons Demon Miasma was controlled by the black-robe knight Gorath. When humans left this sub-continent, the Waii Sub-continent finally became the testing field of Gorath's Full Moons Demon Miasma. All the demons across the sub-continent were finally devastated by Gorath.

Actually, this speculation was close to the truth. However, it could still barely interpret why the demon corps, the 17 knight and Three-eye Association clans disappeared.

There was one point that they could confirm that the Full Moons Demon Miasma was the killer of all the demonized puppets.

Given the lethality of the ptomaine miasma, demonized puppets who were converted by human corpses were most easily affected by ptomaine miasma.

What happened on Waii Sub-continent had already approved this point. When this sub-continent was covered with demonized puppets, it was also turned into a terrifying hell by the Full Moons Demon Miasma.

The reputation of the mysterious black-robe knight Gorath soon spread across the world. Meanwhile, he became the target of all parties such as humans, demons, Three-eye Association and someone who had ulterior motives. Even Zhang Tie pretended to issue a secret order to seek for the black-robe knight Gorath in Sacred Iceland Kingdom.

Nobody could imagine that Gorath was Zhang Tie. Nobody would match Gorath to Zhang Tie given the looks and abilities. Additionally, according to the public information, when Gorath appeared on the demon's area of Waii Sub-continent for the first time, Zhang Tie was staying with the crown prince of Norman Empire in Huaiyuan Prefecture. Given the distance between them,

nobody would match Gorath to Zhang Tie.

When everybody focused on the mysterious black-robe knight Gorath, Zhang Tie was relieved...

Besides the speculation about Gorath, there were many more versions of what happened across Waii Sub-continent. Some thought that a more powerful human knight had cleaned everything; some thought that Three-eye Association clans on Waii Sub-continent betrayed demons and finally fought demons to the death...

There was even one more reasonable explanation—the demon general collected the ptomaine miasmas that once appeared in Selnes Theater of Operations and cultivated the terrifying Full Moons Demon Miasma so as to improve its all-poisons battle qi. However, the demon general failed to control the Full Moons Demon Miasma. As a result, the demon general lost its consciousness and started to kill the knights on its sides. Finally, it even devastated the demon corps and all the demonized puppets. In order to survive themselves, those Three-eye Association clans and the remaining knights joined hands with each other so as to kill the demon general. Afraid of being revenged, they could only leave Waii Sub-continent for remote areas to survive themselves with the wealth that they had plundered while concealing their identities.

Compared to the explanation about Gorath, the latter explanation was more reasonable and widely accepted.

In the discussions, the truth of that event was buried in the course of history. It soon came to August.

During this period, besides pretending to pay attention to the message about Waii Sub-continent and Gorath, Zhang Tie spent most of his time playing with those women in the harem of the Summer Palace of Saint Petersburg.

In such a carnival, O'Laura, Sabrina, Olina and the 6 women of

Spencer Clan were all pregnant.

Zhang Tie gifted every woman a boy.

After consideration, Zhang Tie only left two ancestral bloodlines in Sacred Iceland Kingdom—a sword affinity, a Kuafu bloodline. Plus the leakless body that those kids would have when they came to this world, these kids would be much more excellent than their peers since they were born.

Zhang Tie didn't leave his pupil-changing bloodline. If pupil-changing bloodline appeared in Sacred Iceland Kingdom, it would easily remind people of Zhang Tie. As a result, it would bring a lot of troubles and dangers to Zhang Tie, even his kids. As their father, if Zhang Tie could bring a lot of troubles to demons like "Gorath" in the future, he was not sure whether demons and Three-eye Association would revenge his kids. Zhang Tie didn't have to worry about this problem in Taixia Country; however, he had to consider it in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Out of this consideration, Zhang Tie didn't even leave his precise throwing bloodline in Ice and Snow Wilderness, not to mention his body-changing bloodline. Body-changing bloodline was Zhang Tie's unrivaled trump card. Before the end of the holy war, Zhang Tie didn't think that he should expose this secret to anybody else. As long as this immortal bloodline appeared on a kid, Zhang Tie was sure that he would immediately become more famous than "Gorath". By then, he would be the top target of his enemies. 'Gorath could disappear himself, what about me and my family members?'

After knowing that they were pregnant, all the other women intended to leave Sacred Iceland Kingdom except for O'Laura.

Olina wanted to go back to Ewentra Archipelago; Sabrina wanted to go back to wild bear tribe; Mattia and Beryl wanted to go back to Eschyle City.

This was the nature of women. Each woman would choose the

safest place to welcome the new life. Even cats and dogs acted in this way, not to mention humans.

Zhang Tie knew that he was almost going to leave here after sowing his seed in Sacred Iceland Kingdom.

On August 21st, Zhang Tie called all the women in a brilliant dining hall of the harem of Summer Palace and started a romantic candlelight dinner with them alone.

At dinner, those women wore brilliant imperial bobtails and presented their arrogant and sexy figures while exposing half of their breasts. Even Sabrina had put up her hair and wore a brilliant diamond necklace. Watching the 9 beautiful ladies in front of him, Zhang Tie became a bit dazzled. He could not imagine that his dream had come true.

Through 9 months of reclamation and nourishment, all the 9 women had turned maturer and more enchanting with finer and redder skins and more brilliant eyes like delicate and charming roses and peonies.

Watching the 9 distinctive women sitting together and eating in front of him, Zhang Tie felt hot all over as he started to glance over their plump breasts and cherry lips.

Those women, who had been extremely familiar with Zhang Tie, sensed his restless look as they revealed smiles. Zhang Tie's desired eyes indicated that he was obsessed with their sexy and charming looks very much.

Previously, they all knew that even a blink would cause a "fight" in such a case. As they knew that Zhang Tie was very "destructive" when he was extremely excited, they didn't want to risk doing this.

"Do you need me to call in some female commissioned officers?" O'Laura, sitting on Zhang Tie's side, wiped her mouth with a piece of napkin gracefully before asking "delicately".

Of course, Zhang Tie knew O'Laura's meaning. His face blushed

as he realized that he had been very dissolute in the harem these days that the 9 women had been used to such cases which were extremely embarrassing for commoners.

Shaking his head and waving his hand, Zhang Tie immediately recovered his composure due to his powerful knight's consciousness. After thinking for a short while, he uttered, "I will soon leave Sacred Iceland Kingdom for Taixia."

The 9 women became silent at once. As they stopped doing what they were doing, the dining hall recovered its tranquility.

"Will...will you come back?" O'Laura asked with a faint, trembling voice.

"As long as I'm alive, I will come back for sure. If I'm dead, you..." Zhang Tie paused as he glanced over the 9 women's faces, "Take care of our kids! They will remind you of me!"

"Can you...not go there?" Sabrina watched Zhang Tie with a plaintive look.

Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh before saying, "The holy war has just started. Although Sacred Iceland Kingdom looks safe for the time being, it is actually not safe as long as humans don't win this war or don't eliminate all the demons and Three-eye Association; you and our kids would face the threat of demons forever. You might even become others' slaves and food one day and be spoiled and fed by pen-like beasts. You would have no dignity at all. As a human fighter, a knight and a father, I could not just wait here for the demons. I have to do something. As Eastern Continent and Taixia Country would be the fiercest battlefield between humans and demons, I have to go back!"

"If you die, I promise to cultivate your kid into the most powerful fighter and commander and let him revenge for you on the battlefield!" O'Laura said with the firm and persistent eyes as she watched Zhang Tie...

2 days later, Zhang Tie left Sacred Iceland Kingdom for Eastern Continent...

...

Chapter 811: Bounty Hunters

An isolated island, blue sky, white clouds, blue ocean, beach and chirping seabirds...

The sea waves were petting the beach. Numerous finger-nail sized sea crabs were climbing out of the dense thumb-sized caves and rushed towards the sea waves at the fastest speed.

As for these sea crabs, the distance from the caves to the sea waves was the first survival test in their lives. If they could reach the sea waves after climbing over dozens of meters, they would survive themselves; if not, they would die.

When the tide came in, these tiny sea crabs would hurriedly climb out of their caves and rushed towards the ocean and the sea waves with snow-white ripples.

A lot of red-mouth seamews were chirping out of excitement and peaking those tiny sea crabs on the beach. As for these red-mouth seamews, these tiny sea crabs were their most bumper food.

Many tiny sea crabs even didn't touch a drop of seawater from their birth to death.

When a sea wave arrived, one more person appeared on the beach.

After climbing out of the sea water, that person, being wet all over with disheveled hair, picked up a shell from the beach.

When someone appeared, the red-mouth seamews who were chasing after tiny sea crabs flew off while chirping.

The person threw the shell at one red-mouth seamew. With a plaintive whine, the red-mouth seamew dropped off right in front of that person. He then caught it and brutally broke its head. Closely after that, he raised his head and started to drink its blood.

After drinking up the blood of the red-mouth seamew, that

person seemingly recovered some strength. He then plucked out the plumes from its chest and legs and started to eat the seabird alive like how savages usually did.

After a short while, he had eaten half of that red-mouth seamew.

All of a sudden, that person stopped and turned around with a ferocious look. After looking at the sea level for a short while, he instantly sprung up like a big bird and reached over 20 m away. In two movements, he had disappeared in the coconut woods.

Only after half an hour, another person showed up from the sea waves and gradually went ashore.

Compared to the former guy, who looked a bit embarrassed, this one looked much more graceful. Although being wet all over, this one wore a suit of water-proof clothes. The moment he left the seawater had he looked to dry up. What was more impressive was his eyebrows, which were dense, black, shiny and were like two longsword, making him very dignified.

When he went ashore, he lowered his head and noticed some faint bloodstains and footprints on the beach. His eyes shot out a shrewd light at once.

He just waited there for over 10 seconds before another person, in the same water-proof clothes, appeared and walked towards him.

"Elder brother, where's that b*stard?" The new arriver asked in a muffled voice.

"That b*stard had already gone ashore. He's right on this island!" The one with two dense eyebrows replied, "It seems that the b*stard wants to fight us to the death here!"

"That son of b*tch, we brothers have chased him for over 80,000 miles from Yongzhou Province to Qiongzhou Province in the past half a year after climbing over mountains and crossing seas. If not elder brother's top tracing skill, that son of b*tch might have escaped this time!" The new arriver swore as he pulled out his

waistband. Only with a shake, the waistband had turned into a shiny soft sword full of killing intent together with a hum. He continued, "Just kill that son of b*tch; we only need to take his head back for the bounty!"

"Second brother, we have to be careful. Zhu Liang, the Ferocious Wolf, has killed and robbed so many people and raped women so many times. However, he could still stay alive after being wanted by the Ministry of Penalty for so many years. Besides being good at disguising, he must have other talents. He could never be matched by common LV 11 battle masters. We'd better watch out; otherwise, we might fail our task!"

"You're right, elder brother. Our reputation that has been gained through so many years' hard work as bounty hunters could not be ruined on this uninhabited island. We have to prevent from being bitten by the Ferocious Wolf. I will follow your order, elder brother!" That tough guy who had pulled out his waistband put it straight.

"Fine, we will take a rest here first!" The guy with dense eyebrows said as he took out a sealed vial. After opening it, he took out two pills and threw one of them to his partner, "Take one qi and blood recovery pill first before going to seek for Zhu Liang, the Ferocious Wolf. I estimate that he has killed a seabird and taken some blood and flesh. He must be hiding somewhere to recover his strength. If we spent physical and spiritual strength to look for him at this moment, we might be trapped by him. The qi and blood recovery pill is more effective than raw and cold blood and flesh. We can go for him after recovering our strength. By then, we will not be afraid of his tricks anymore!"

"Elder brother is really considerate!" That guy with a longsword in hand praised as he took the qi and blood recovery pill.

They then quietly recovered their spiritual and physical strength on the beach.

"Elder brother, when I was in Bright Road Pavilion of Blue Jades City in Qiongzhou Province last time, I saw an item called all-purpose medicament. Some lads in Bright Road Pavilion bragged that this medicament was much more effective and could work faster than qi and blood recovery pill. Additionally, it could detoxify and recover wounds. I didn't pay too much attention to it last time. How about we go and get some after finishing this task? It might be useful in the emergency!"

"Really? If it's true, we will definitely buy some. Compared to our lives, money is secondary!"

"Elder brother, why do you think the Ministry of Penalty raised the bounty so much on the wanted list? Besides Ferocious Wolf, the bounty on the top 10,000 wanted criminals increased by at least 3 times. Those after top 10,000 wanted criminals increased by 2 times. When I returned to Iron Sword Sect last time, I was told that it was a profitable job to be bounty hunters; some fellow apprentices of Iron Sword Sect even wanted to be bounty hunters!"

"As the holy war has broken out, battle flames spread everywhere. Except for Taixia Country, nowhere else is peaceful. I was told that Waii Sub-continent and Blackhot sub-continent had been exterminated by demons. We have to rest the domestic unstable factors before fighting demons. If not eliminate these bandits and criminals in Taixia Country, they might cooperate with demons and Three-eye Association and cause big troubles in Taixia Country in the future. In the last few years, although Taixia had not broken out any war, it had been troubled by some hidden, evil forces. In order to make the overall national situation clear and stabilize local areas, the Ministry of Penalty had to sharply raise the amount of bounty for hunting the criminals on the wanted list. Therefore, the bounty hunter had become the most profitable and hot profession in the last few years. Although we could not kill demons on the battlefield for the time being, if we could do a good job as bounty hunters and protect the local citizens

by hunting evil criminals and scaring small evil forces, we're also making a contribution to the holy war. One day, if we have to go to the battlefield, we will join a powerful army and strive for honors on the battlefield, even at the risk of our lives. We might even be awarded noble wives and have babies. Our ancestors might be honorable for us!"

The tough man with dense eyebrows said as the one with longsword felt excited.

After resting on the beach for over 10 minutes, the two people became spirited as they slid in the coconut woods and prepared to hunt Zhu Liang, the Ferocious Wolf.

Zhu Liang, the Ferocious Wolf, ranked below the 9000th place on the wanted list as posted by the Ministry of Penalty in Taixia Country. He had killed more than one bounty hunter who wanted to kill him so as to be well-known over these years. Therefore, the two bounty hunters were very meticulous. They were preparing for a fierce battle.

The tough guy with dense eyebrows was proficient in tracing skill. Based on the faint traces on the ground, the two guys meticulously deepened into the island.

It was a huge island. The verdant and crisscrossed coconut woods seemed to contain endless killing intents.

...

Zhu Liang the Ferocious Wolf was very smart. After identifying Zhu Liang's few tricks on the island, the two bounty hunters finally arrived at a mountain cave in the coconut woods based on the traces of Zhu Liang.

Watching the mountain cave, that tough guy with dense eyebrows exchanged a glance with that guy who used a longsword before making two hand gestures. The guy with longsword nodded towards him. Closely after that, the tough guy with dense

eyebrows took out something and threw it towards the entrance of the cave. They followed the object in.

The object that was thrown in was called a phosphorous smoke bomb. It was a special equipment. Although being trivial, it worked well in such cases.

When the phosphorous smoke bomb fell at the entrance, it aroused a wisp of white smoke and light at once. In a split second, the two bounty hunters rushed inside shoulder to shoulder.

"Go die..." The tough man with longsword roared as he protected his body with numerous sword qi. The tough guy with dense eyebrows then sprung up like a furious eagle and charged down from the air.

However, the imagined attack didn't arrive, which shocked the two guys so much. The moment they entered the cave had they turned around and leaned against the cliff inside the cave. One in a defensive state, the other in an attacking state. Closely after that, they looked around the cave.

They then widely opened their mouths at once.

They had not imagined such a scene in the mountain cave.

An innocent 17-18-year-old juvenile was sitting beside a bonfire with a longsword in hand. However, the longsword was covered with flesh which was being roasted above the fire. However, Zhu Liang the Ferocious Wolf that they were chasing after was lying on the ground over several meters away whose neck had been twisted with a dumbfounded look. Watching his back, he had been dead...

That juvenile turned around and watched the two bounty hunters with an interested look. Under the gaze of that juvenile, the two tough men felt like idiots who had just jumped onto the stage. They felt embarrassed right away as they didn't know whether they should put down their postures or not...

Chapter 812: The Notorious Alchemist

Demon

After staying still over there in an embarrassed way, the two bounty hunters found that the juvenile was not dangerous at all. He was still roasting his kebab using his sword. After exchanging a glance with each other, they put down their battle postures.

However, the two bounty hunters dared not move closer to the juvenile in case of any misunderstanding. Anyone would feel a bit vigilant if they met such a stranger on the isolated island.

"Ahem...ahem..." The tough man with dense eyebrows pretended to disguise twice as he pointed at the corpse on the ground and asked, "Little brother, did you kill this man?"

"Hmm, yes. Is there anything wrong?" The juvenile answered frankly.

Watching him answer so easily, the two bounty hunters became faintly shocked inside.

"Little brother, do you know the man you killed?"

After hearing this question, the juvenile rolled his eyes as he shrugged, "I don't care, I was roasting meat in the cave. However, this guy rushed inside and wanted to kill me. As I found he was not a good person, I just killed him!"

'Just? Just killed him?'

Watching Zhu Liang's broken neck and shocked look once again, the eye corners of the tough man with dense eyebrows jumped a couple of times.

"This guy is Zhu Liang. His nickname is Ferocious Wolf. He's the criminal being wanted by the Ministry of Penalty. As he's lascivious, he has raped many women. We two are bounty hunters in Yongzhou Province. I'm Li Butian. This is Yang Zhigang, my

brother. We have been chasing after Zhu Liang for a long while. We followed him to this island. We've not imagined that he had been killed by you, little brother. He deserved that!"

The juvenile rotated his longsword as he blinked his eyes, "Is it okay for me to do that?"

"Of course. According to the regulations of bounty hunters, as we've chased him for half a year, though he was finally killed by you. If we give his head to the Ministry of Penalty, we can get a reward of 100,000 gold coins. You can have half of it!" Li Butian said while being neither humble nor pushy.

After hearing Li Butian's words, the juvenile revealed a smile. He seemed to feel okay with it. Waving his hand, he said, "Since you've chased after him for half a year and I've just met him for less than half a minute so it's just an accident. I won't take the money. You can just take away his head. I just find pleasure in helping others, getting rid of the cruel...and pacifying the good people."

The juvenile felt a bit strange while speaking such a phrase which was full of Hua characteristics.

"You really don't want to take the money?" Yang Zhigang moved one step forward with a happy look. When he saw Li Butian's solemn look, Yang Zhigang smirked as he scratched his head and moved back.

It was Li Butian and Yang Zhigang's first time to hear someone who could present 50,000 gold coins without any hesitation. For most of the bounty hunters, 50,000 gold coins was not a small figure. Many LV 6-7 bounty hunters could not even make 50,000 gold coins after many years of work.

"Little brother, may I know your name? If you feel troublesome to take the 50,000 gold coins, you can tell us your address. After taking the reward, we will remit the 50,000 gold coins to you through the bank. Although it's a dangerous job, we've not taken any ill-gotten gains over the past years." Li Butian asked while

cupping his hands with a much more solemn look.

"I'm Zhang Tie! As Zhu Liang escaped here, he only had a small part of strength left like an arrow at the end of its flight; therefore, I killed him accidentally. I could barely take the 50,000 gold coins." Zhang Tie also stood up and cupped his hands with a solemn look as he watched Li Butian cupping his hands towards him. Although this bounty hunter was just a LV 11 battle master, he had an awe-inspiring righteousness. Zhang Tie would treat such a person politely even if he was just a lad in a store. Zhang Tie would not grab the jobs of these guys who risked their lives every day even when he served as a human-flesh bag in Blackhot city, not to mention now.

After listening to Zhang Tie's modest words and seeing his polite movements, Li Butian and Yang Zhigang relieved their vigilance about Zhang Tie greatly. They just felt that this juvenile was very righteous.

"Hahahaha, now that little brother says so, we will take the money. Honestly, we've been chasing after Zhu Liang over the past half a year. We planned to purchase some equipment and pills with the reward of this task so that we could have a higher probability to survive ourselves in an emergency. This time, we almost suffered a great loss from Zhu Liang at the cost of many pills and equipment..." Li Butian said generously.

After Li Butian said that, Yang Zhigang's stomach uttered "gulugulu". Although they became spirited after taking the qi and blood recovery pills, as they had not eaten food for so long, Yang Zhigang's stomach finally protested.

At the same time, the flesh on Zhang Tie's sword was turning golden and spitting oil, which started to drop off the roasted flesh onto the bonfire. The entire mountain cave was filled with a special rich aroma. Sniffing it, Yang Zhigang had silently swallowed his saliva for many times.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he raised his longsword, "Why not eat together with me, two elder brothers?"

"Haha, what a nice day..." Li Butian replied as he walked over there and sat opposite to Zhang Tie, followed by Yang Zhigang.

Zhang Tie divided the flesh into 3 parts and wrapped them with coconut leaves. He then gave two parts of them to Li Butian and Yang Zhigang. After that, 3 of them started to enjoy the food.

Li Butian and Yang Zhigang thought that the roasted flesh was just common sea fish; however, they had not imagined that the flesh was so tasty. It was hard to describe the taste. Although they had eaten too many exotic food from the mountains and seas, they had not eaten such delicious food before. Not only that, the moment the flesh entered their stomach, a warm current had started to spread across their bodies. They soon felt being fully energetic.

The well-roasted flesh had been eaten up by the 3 people in only 5-6 minutes.

"Brother Zhang, what's this flesh of? How could it be so tasty?" Yang Zhigang asked as he glanced at Zhang Tie with shiny eyes as if he wanted to find another piece of roasted flesh, he even wanted to lick off the oil on the coconut leaves.

"It's a mutated octopus that I caught by the sea!" Zhang Tie fabricated. Actually, it was the flesh of the huge deep-sea monster that he got from the refrigerator of Castle of Black Iron. Of course, it was tasty.

"Oh, no wonder my elder brother and I have not eaten it before. Mutated octopus is indeed a rarity!" Yang Zhigang just believed in Zhang Tie's benign lie.

Yang Zhigang didn't notice that Li Butian's eyes turned bright as the latter watched Zhang Tie wiping off the oil from his longsword using coconut leaves.

After cleaning his longsword, Zhang Tie inserted that sword into the ground beside him and revealed a smile.

"Does brother Zhang Tie belong to one of the 7 major sects?" Li Butian suddenly asked.

After hearing Li Butian's question, not only Zhang Tie became faintly stunned, even Yang Zhigang widely opened his eyes and gazed at Zhang Tie with his shocked eyes.

"Ahh, why do think so, brother Li?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

Li Butian shook his head with a bitter smile, "I finally know why brother Zhang Tie doesn't treasure tens of thousands of gold coins. I think his longsword would be worth at least 200,000 gold coins."

Yang Zhigang widely opened his mouth as he watched Zhang Tie with a dumbfounded look. Even though he had just eaten the roasted flesh on the longsword, he still could not believe that Zhang Tie's longsword was worth over 200,000 gold coins. Such a rune weapon was far out of their imagination.

"Hoho, you really have a good eye, elder brother Li!" Zhang Tie revealed a modest smile. The longsword was indeed a top-quality rune weapon. It was plundered from the warehouse of a Three-eye Association clan. Zhang Tie had plundered over 100 swords like this one. After their shapes were slightly changed by Edward, they were just put in Castle of Black Iron. Such weapons were competitive products for those who were not above the battle spirit. However, they were a bit useless for knights, even though it was priceless. Zhang Tie just took one for free. Among his weapons, only the autumn-frost gold sword could play a great role for him. All the other swords were a bit worse than the autumn-frost gold sword.

"Given the top-quality rune weapon which is worth hundreds of thousands of gold coins, the great battle force that you could kill Zhu Liang the Ferocious Wolf so easily and be alone in this isolated

island, you must be practicing outside here. Across Taixia Country, only the 7 major sects could have such young elites!"

"Elder brother Li, why not think that I'm a disciple of a clan?"

"The major clans across Taixia Country have very strict requirements on their disciples. Before clan disciples could undertake tasks alone, they would barely be such indulgent. Young disciples of major clans at your age would always be very low-key. Even if their weapons were exquisite, they would not be as extravagant as you. Generally, only disciples of the 7 major sects would practice alone with such top-quality rune weapons which were rewarded by their sects. Although being very luxurious for commoners, such rune weapons were average for the 7 major clans. After staying in their sects for so long, those disciples get used to carrying such top-quality rune weapons; instead of showing off them! Such rune weapons indicate the background of those young powerhouses above LV 11 and pose a deterrence to those with a good taste."

Li Butian was really an experienced bounty hunter as his analysis was very rigorous. His analysis probably fitted others very well, except for Zhang Tie.

Actually, Li Butian had mistaken Zhang Tie's age, which was actually about 10 years elder than Zhang Tie's look. As a result, all the other speculations about him were wrong.

"Pitifully, elder brother Li guessed wrong. I'm not coming from any of the 7 major sects; instead, I just came from a common clan!" Zhang Tie shook his head as he said with a smile. Huaiyuan Palace which was well-known across Waii Sub-continent also became common in Taixia Country; therefore, Zhang Tie was not modest.

"Ah, which clan does brother Zhang Tie come from? Tianlu Palace, Guanying Palace or Bairen Palace?" Yang Zhigang interrupted.

Zhang Tie knew that Tianlu Palace, Guanying Palace and Bairen

Palace were the top major Zhang clans in Taixia Country. Zhang Tie had heard the names of the three palaces in Waii Sub-continent. The elders of Huaiyuan Palace also took the above three palaces as their idols. The three major Zhang clans were much more powerful than Huaiyuan Palace. Based on the current development speed of Huaiyuan Palace, it could never match the three major Zhang palaces in 100 years even after 10 times' expansion on the premise that everything was developing smoothly at a higher speed.

There was one point that could indicate the power of the three major Zhang palaces: Huaiyuan Palace had elders; however, the three major Zhang palaces had House of Lords.

"I am from Huaiyuan Palace!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's background, Li Butian and Yang Zhigang exchanged a glance with each other in an embarrassed way. Because they had not heard about Huaiyuan Palace before. In Taixia Country, besides those who studied the learning of ancestral bloodlines, nobody could clarify the tens of thousands of palaces in Taixia Country.

"Huaiyuan Palace was once on Waii Sub-continent. After the holy war broke out, it transferred to Taixia Country for further development. It's not strange even if two elder brothers have not heard about it!"

After listening to Zhang Tie's explanation, the two bounty hunters both let out a sigh at the same time. Now that Huaiyuan Palace was once on Waii Sub-continent, it was not discourteous for them to be confused about that name.

Later on, the three guys started to chat freely and learned more about each other.

Li Butian and Yang Zhigang learned more "experiences" about Zhang Tie. In Zhang Tie's mouth, he was amongst the people on Waii Sub-continent, who didn't leave Waii Sub-continent with the

fleet until the arrival of the demons. As Zhang Tie could not bear the distant travel on the ocean, he just left the fleet and swam in the ocean. Previously, Zhang Tie wanted to come back alone; however, after swimming for 8-9 months in the ocean, he almost got lost. Two days ago, he came to this isolated island. He didn't know how far was this place to Eastern Continent. Just now, when Zhu Liang came in, Zhang Tie even felt happy instead of being afraid because he thought that he could finally have someone to talk to. However, it was out of his imagination that Zhu Liang directly rushed towards him with vicious eye light and wanted to kill him. Therefore, he had to kill Zhu Liang.

Li Butian and Yang Zhigang were both speechless about Zhang Tie's experience.

Through Li Butian and Yang Zhigang, Zhang Tie learned about the specialty of the profession "bounty hunter". In the beginning, Zhang Tie thought that bounty hunters were official employees of Taixia Country. Whereas, through the two guys' explanation, Zhang Tie understood that bounty hunter was like a private detective on Waii Sub-continent. In Taixia Country, any innocent warriors above LV 6 could become bounty hunters after going through approval and confirmation. This was also an employment channel for warriors in Taixia Country. The Ministry of Penalty was in charge of the penalty judiciary of Taixia Country. The chief officer of Ministry of Penalty was one of the 9 chancellors of Taixia Country, who was a high-ranked official in Taixia Country. All the bounty hunters were registered in and managed by the Ministry of Penalty to a certain degree.

Zhang Tie was very interested in the episode about how they chased after Zhu Liang the Ferocious Wolf and the wanted list of the Ministry of Penalty.

Later on, a question occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, "Zhu Liang ranks below the 9000th place on the wanted list of the Ministry of Penalty in Taixia Country, who ranks first on the wanted list of the

Ministry of Penalty?"

"Zhao Yuan the alchemist demon!"

When Zhang Tie heard this name, his heart almost stopped beating.

Although being shocked inside, Zhang Tie kept his look unchanged. He continued to ask, "What's this guy's talent? How could he rank first on the wanted list of the Ministry of Penalty?"

"Zhao Yuan the alchemist demon is a ground-breaking figure. 87 years ago, he made a killing spree in Mojiang City of Songzhou Province and killed 7 knights including the deputy head of Taiyi Fantasy Sect and the young master of the Heavens Holding Pavilion. His crime shocked the entire world. From then on, Zhao Yuan the alchemist demon had been ranked on the 1st place on the wanted list of the Ministry of Penalty and started a feud with Taiyi Fantasy Sect and Heavens Holding Pavilion. Anyone who could kill Zhao Yuan the alchemist demon would be rewarded with 100 cities!"

One person for 100 cities. Such a reward was able to drive everybody mad. Li Butian's tone turned ethereal when he mentioned the reward for killing Zhao Yuan.

However, Zhang Tie was more shocked inside.

'Taiyi Fantasy Sect?'

It sounded a bit familiar. After thinking about it for a few seconds, he suddenly remembered that it was the very sect that Lan Yunxi had joined in Taixia Country.

Zhang Tie's heart pounded.

'What the hell!'...

...

Chapter 813: Arriving at Youzhou Province

Covering over 10 square miles, this isolated island was located in the open waters in the southeast part of Qiongzhou Province of Taixia Country. It belonged to the offshore area of the Eastern Continent as it was only over 1,000 miles away from the land.

Being in the east of Taixia Country, Qiongzhou Province was one of the medium-sized provinces in Taixia Country. In Taixia Country, Qiongzhou Province was known as the Province of Tens of Thousands of Islands. The open waters of the entire Qiongzhou Province contained tens of thousands of islands and reefs in various types, big or small. Those isles of Ewentra Archipelago were sharply dwarfed by such islands in the open waters of Qiongzhou Province.

On the map, those islands in the open waters of Qiongzhou Province were spreading over the vast waters like a broken small sub-continent. Such an open waters was called Qionghai Ocean. Li Butian and Yang Zhigang had chased after Zhu Liang the Ferocious Wolf on these isolated islands in Qionghai Ocean like playing hide-and-seek game for over 2 months.

If he kept going northwards from Qiongzhou Province, he would arrive at Youzhou Province after passing Mozhou Province and Gaozhou Province.

Mozhou Province and Qingzhou Province were both medium-sized provinces of the same level. Gaozhou Province was a lower province. Of course, Youzhou Province, which was in the north of Gaozhou Province, was also a lower province.

After knowing that his general orientation was not incorrect, Zhang Tie finally recovered his composure. It was only a distance of a bit more than 17,000 miles between the two provinces in the middle though.

Zhang Tie, Li Butian and Yang Zhigang talked overnight.

Through Li Butian and Yang Zhigang, Zhang Tie knew a lot of information about Taixia Country. Li Butian and Yang Zhigang were also interested in the exotic situation about Waii Sub-continent.

Before the day broke, they took a nap. After that, they became spirited once again.

When the sun rose, Yang Zhigang chopped off Zhu Liang's head and immersed it in a medicament. After that, he put it in a waterproof bag. Li Butian ignited a cracker in an open land outside the mountain cave.

With a shrill sound, the cracker flew into the sky and exploded at over 300 m above the ground. The red smoke formed a red longsword, which remained unchanged for a long time in the sky.

In order to catch Zhu Liang the Ferocious Wolf, Li Butian and Yang Zhigang had employed a mini airship which kept circling around the neighboring airspace.

As was predicted, a mini airship had appeared in the distant airspace and flown towards here in less than half an hour.

"Brother Zhang Tie, aren't you leaving with us? When you arrive at Qionghai City, you can reach Youzhou Province by train in a few days." Li Butian turned around and asked Zhang Tie who was watching them at the entrance of the mountain cave after releasing the cloud-penetrating cracker.

Li Butian and Yang Zhigang would exchange their booty for the bounty in Qionghai City. However, Zhang Tie insisted on moving northwards so as to unite with his family members. The three people would separate from each other soon.

"No, I've got some enlightenment about the cultivation after these days of practice. As Qionghai Ocean has so many islands, its environment is very good and tranquil. I want to meditate and cultivate a few more days!" Zhang Tie fabricated a benign lie.

Although Zhang Tie had long been expecting to reunite with his family members, he had to refuse the suggestion of Li Butian and Yang Zhigang. Because it would take him longer time to return by train. Additionally, if he told them he was going to "swim" back to Youzhou Province from here, he was afraid of scaring them. In this age, even black iron knights who were good at swimming could barely swim 2,000-3,000 miles not to mention Zhang Tie who treated the ocean as a Broadway and a highway.

Until then did Li Butian and Yang Zhigang think that Zhang Tie crossed the ocean alone by a canoe or a sailing boat. Such a "heroic deed" already made the two guys admire Zhang Tie too much; if they were told that Zhang Tie was going to "swim" across the surging ocean alone from another sub-continent, they might be scared stiff.

In order to not be that shocking and not expose his trump card, Zhang Tie could only fabricate a lie.

"It's a rare chance to have insight about cultivation. As this waters is tranquil, it may be a good place for insight. It could not be bought by 10,000 gold coins for each cultivator. Now that brother Zhang Tie wants to continue to meditate here, we will not bother you anymore. We two are a bit famous among the bounty hunters in Yongzhou Province. If brother Zhang Tie needs us in the future, you only need to send a message to the Bright Road Pavilion in Youzhou Province, we will arrive there as soon as possible!"

Zhang Tie felt that the so-called Bright Road Pavilion was similar to the union and industrial organization of bounty hunters in Taixia Country, which was responsible for the identity management, task distribution and information dissemination among bounty hunters. This was a semi-official organization, on the back of which was the Ministry of Penalty of Taixia Country. In Taixia Country, any city of scale would have Bright Road Pavilion.

Zhang Tie didn't take the 50,000 gold coins, which made Li

Butian and Yang Zhigang admire him so much. Additionally, through one night's talk, they felt that Zhang Tie was a reliable friend. Therefore, they said that before departure.

"If two elder brothers need my financial assistance, just tell Golden Roc Bank!" Zhang Tie also cupped his hands towards Li Butian with a solemn look. There was an old Hua saying, 'Give a plum in return for a peach.' As Li Butian and Yang Zhigang were sincere, Zhang Tie also treated them faithfully.

Li Butian and Yang Zhigang then revealed a smile at the same time...

...

After over 10 minutes, the mini airship arrived above the isolated island. After confirming the identities of Li Butian and Yang Zhigang, the crew threw off a rope ladder from the airship. The moment Li Butian and Yang Zhigang boarded the airship had they waved their hands towards Zhang Tie. Closely after that, the mini airship left towards the land.

Zhang Tie didn't move away his eyes until the airship disappeared in his vision.

When Zhang Tie remembered the information about his master Zhao Yuan the Alchemist Demon that Li Butian and Yang Zhigang told him last night, Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile.

If his master fought his wife, Zhang Tie didn't even know whom to help.

'According to the introduction of Li Butian and Yang Zhigang, my master's killing spree in Mojiang City of Songzhou Province was ground-breaking and lunatic. Besides the 7 knights, over 170,000 civilians were killed by my master. 10 generations of over 20,000 people of Han Clan in Mojiang City of Songzhou Province were exterminated by Zhao Yuan.'

In Zhang Tie's impression, although Zhao Yuan's behavior was

inconsiderate, he didn't look like a cold-blooded guy, not to mention that he could kill tens of thousands of civilians. Zhang Tie remembered that Zhao Yuan was almost beaten on the street by some servants of a mansion in Hidden Dragon Island as he broke in their mansion by mistake. However, he didn't kill those servants. Those servants also lived well after that. How could such a man kill over 100,000 innocent people?

'As to what happened in Mojiang City of Songzhou Province, I could only figure it out slowly. If my status as the disciple of Alchemist Demon was exposed, I would definitely be chased by those super sects in Taixia Country. Even Li Buttian and Yang Zhigang had not heard about Huaiyuan Palace, not to mention those super sects in Taixia Country.'

'Alright, forget about that. I will go back home first!'

When he recalled his parents whom he had not seen for many years and his 3 sons whom he had not seen since they were born, Zhang Tie's heart raced.

As a sea wave arrived at the bank, Zhang Tie disappeared...

...

In the ocean, it only took Zhang Tie a few seconds to accelerate to about 650 m per second, which was about 10% higher than when he headed for Ice and Snow Wilderness by sea for the second time.

In each split second, numerous tiny bubbles would come into being and break over Zhang Tie's protective battle qi. The powerful cavitation effect started to present while numerous tiny shock waves, jet flows, high heat and corrosion started to beat and shock Zhang Tie's body and protective battle qi...

As Zhang Tie moved forward, he started to taste the formation and disappearance of each tiny bubble...

With his powerful knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie immediately entered an exotic world by the forming and vanishing

tiny bubbles. In this world, all the formation and disappearance were calculated in milliseconds...

...

After 7 hours, Zhang Tie rushed into the sky from the ocean and reached a high altitude in a split second...

"Ah, I saw something fly out of the sea and disappear in the sky..." A young sailor who was arranging the wire cables on the deck of a huge liner suddenly screamed when he raised his head. The liner was driving on the shimmering sea when the sun moved to the west.

"Gangzi, are you blinded? You've just not f*cked a woman for a few days!" Another sailor teased him as they found nothing abnormal in the sky.

"No, I really saw something fly out of the sea ahead of us. It even aroused a spray. It moved so fast that it immediately disappeared the moment it entered the sky..."

"Like how you did on the Hebrew beauty?" Another sailor winked before bursting out into laughter...

The young sailor blushed at once.

"Quiet, no more kidding. We're arriving at Youzhou Province. Cheer up. After delivering the Fuxi Type-1 difference engine to them, we can rest a few days. By the end of this year, your bonus would increase by at least 1/3 than that of the last year!" A steward with whiskers walked out of the cabin as he told those sailors. These sailors were all members of the same business group, therefore, the steward revealed a message to them when they almost finished their task.

"Steward Liu, Youzhou Province is just a lower province. Which business group is so ambitious? Fuxi Type-1 difference engine has over 200,000 calculating gears. It's more powerful than Xuanyuan Type-7. Is there any business group in Youzhou which could use

such a big machine?" A shrewd sailor asked.

"It's ordered by Jinwu Business Group!"

"Jinwu Business Group? I've not even heard about that. It does not seem to be that famous. I only heard about Long Wind Business Group in Youzhou Province." That sailor doubted.

"The two business groups are closely related with each other as they belong to the same clan" The steward smiled, "Have you heard about the all-purpose medicament?"

"Yup!"

"After delivering this big machine to them and doing a preliminary test to it, we will carry back 100,000 vials of all-purpose medicament. It's a big deal that has been signed by our CEO, we'd better not ruin it..."

All the sailors on the deck became spirited...

...

Although Zhang Tie concealed his battle-qi luster, his speed was also very amazing in the sky.

After a short while, he had already seen a coastal city and a prosperous harbor. The harbor was located between two mountains, which was an advantageous geographic location. Watching the two mountain ranges that surrounded the harbor and extended from the land to the ocean like two sharp claws, Zhang Tie knew that his destination finally arrived.

Huaiyuan Palace bought over 1 million square miles in the southeast of Youzhou Province and built that harbor, which was called Embracing Tiger Harbor or Embracing Tiger Mountain. As a clan elder, Zhang Tie once saw its photo when he was in Huaiyuan Prefecture.

The city behind Embracing Tiger Harbor was called Embracing Tiger City, which was the undertaking that Huaiyuan Palace had

gained in Youzhou Province from the scratch.

At present, 8 branches of Huaiyuan Palace had built 8 cities on the 1 million square miles of land in the southeast of Youzhou Province, which was linked with each other and formed a prefecture called Yanghe Prefecture.

According to the Hua tradition, Yanghe Prefecture became the private prefecture of Huaiyuan Palace and the forever foundation of Zhang Clan. According to the strict regulation of Taixia Country, the land that Huaiyuan Palace occupied in Waii Sub-continent was not Huaiyuan Palace's prefecture. Hua clan's prefecture could only be in Taixia Country on the Eastern Continent, instead of in wild places.

In Taixia Country, the so-called major clans and young members of families holding official ranks for generations would always call the name of their prefectures and families, which indicated the foundation of a person or a clan.

Later on, Zhang's offsprings of Huaiyuan Palace could call themselves Zhang's branch in Yanghe Prefecture.

As his family members didn't live in Embracing Tiger City, Zhang Tie didn't mean to stay here; instead, after throwing a couple of more glances at the city, Zhang Tie continued flying towards the northwest of Embracing Tiger City...

...

Chapter 814: A Reunion

Zhang Tie looked down and saw the vast, sparsely populated land and mountain forest. There was a large area of tidy farmlands outside Embracing Tiger City. So many docks and shipyards were in the north of Embracing Tiger Harbor. It was a well-planned industrial area over 30 miles away from Embracing Tiger City which was linked to other places through railways and highways. One could even see some sparse villages and towns along the railways, highways and farmlands.

As it was daytime, many people were still doing farming work in the farmlands.

The scenery of Yanghe Prefecture in Youzhou Province under his foot reminded Zhang Tie of the former Andaman Alliance. They had too many similarities, except for some obvious differences.

The first difference was that the farmlands under his foot evidently had a higher mechanization than that of the former Andaman Alliance. Even though he was in the sky, Zhang Tie could still see many steam tractors and agricultural equipment running in the farmlands. The second difference was that the urban and rural buildings here had a rich Hua feature.

Of course, the largest difference could not be identified by eyes——There were so many knights in Yanghe Prefecture; however, there was no knight across Andaman Alliance.

Zhang Tie was thrilled more or less. Because he was flying above the homeland of Hua people——Taixia Country, the most powerful country in this age.

Zhang Tie kept flying northwest. Only after flying over 400 miles in half an hour, another city had appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

This city was not large. Looking down from the sky, it was only of about 60 square miles. The city wall was divided into 8 parts like

pedals, making it especially exquisite.

At the sight of this city, Zhang Tie knew that he had arrived at home.

This city was called Golden Light City, the foundation that Golden Sea City branch of Huaiyuan Palace built in Yanghe Prefecture.

When in Waii Sub-continent, the 8 branches of Huaiyuan Palace prepared to use the former names such as Yiyang, Xince, Stars Viewing, Qihai in Huaiyuan Prefecture for the new cities in Yanghe Prefecture. However, someone in Youzhou Province said that this might cause a bad influence for Lord Long Wind who was competing for the governor of Youzhou Province. Therefore, Huaiyuan Palace decided to use the new names for the new cities.

Zhang Tie felt good about using new names, which symbolized new start-ups. When in Waii Sub-continent, Huaiyuan Palace had advantages in both timing and geographic locations. As Golden Sea City, Yiyang City and Qihai City were on the coast, Huaiyuan Palace could enjoy the benefits of sea trade by building harbors in these cities. However, in Youzhou Province of Taixia Country, it was already a great achievement for Huaiyuan Palace to gain almost 1 million square miles in the southeast of Youzhou Province. All the other cities of Huaiyuan Palace in Youzhou Province were not coastal cities except for Embracing Bear Harbor. Therefore if they kept using the former names, it would feel a bit strange. Additionally, these new cities' locations were carefully selected so that Huaiyuan Palace could better control the entire Yanghe Prefecture.

Flying in the sky, the entire Golden Light City was in Zhang Tie's eyes.

There was a brilliant mansion covering over 130,000 square meters in the east of Golden Light City, which contained a huge garden of over 30,000 square meters. Many fiery plants formed a

huge attractive circle in that garden.

At the sight of that garden, Zhang Tie felt like crying as he knew that he finally arrived home.

Although it was his first time to be here, Zhang Tie knew that there was a kind of red maple in the garden of his home. The maples were red all the year round and formed an obvious circle. They were especially planted by Zhang Tie's parents so that Zhang Tie would spot his home from the sky when he came back.

"I've already arrived at my home in Golden Light City. Everything went smooth!" Before Zhang Tie descended, he sent a message to Huaiyuan Palace through his elder's finger ring.

'As I've arrived at the gate of my home, I had better notify Huaiyuan Palace in advance.'

After sending the message, Zhang Tie directly darted downwards from over 10,000 m high without covering his qi.

When he was 3,000-4,000 m away from his home, Zhang Tie felt that he was locked by a knight's consciousness in the mansion downside there. Closely after that, a figure shot into the sky and accelerated towards him.

Zhang Tie just stopped there and waited for that figure.

Elder Muyuan the 6th granduncle appeared in front of Zhang Tie in a split second.

"6th granduncle!" At the sight of the 6th granduncle's solemn look, Zhang Tie bowed towards him deeply.

Zhang Tie had been a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace, he didn't need to bow towards his 6th granduncle according to the regulations; however, as Zhang Tie appreciated his 6th granduncle's care about his family over these years, he insisted on bowing deeply towards his 6th granduncle out of the etiquette as a junior.

"You're...Zhang Tie!" Elder Muyuan looked extremely shocked when he drew closer and identified Zhang Tie.

When Zhang Tie's rotating chakra ceremony was held, Elder Muyuan was in Taixia Country; therefore, he didn't see how Zhang Tie looked after promoting to a knight. Watching Zhang Tie bowing towards him in the sky which indicated his cultivation base as a knight, Elder Muyuan felt complex. After only such a few years, the juvenile who knelt down and kowtowed for appreciating him at the beginning had already become a clan elder like him. What an amazing change! What was more shocking was that Zhang Tie's look remained unchanged after these years. He still looked like a 16-17-year-old.

"Yes, I'm Zhang Tie!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile towards his 6th granduncle, "I really appreciate 6th granduncle for taking care of my family members over these years. Zhang Tie will definitely repay you for your kindness!"

Elder Muyuan glanced at Zhang Tie's face with his sharp eyes. Finally, he noticed the elder's finger ring of Huaiyuan Palace and confirmed Zhang Tie's status.

Elder Muyuan then recovered his composure as he looked calm.

"Do other elders know that you're back?" Elder Muyuan asked.

During the past almost one year since Zhang Tie left Hurricane Corps, Zhang Tie just contacted Huaiyuan Palace occasionally and told them about his schedule and that he was safe. Nobody in Huaiyuan Palace could imagine that Zhang Tie would come back at this moment.

"I've just notified them!"

After getting that answer, Elder Muyuan realized that Zhang Tie was good at handling human relations. Therefore, he didn't ask anymore; instead, he let out a deep sigh, "Since you left Huaiyuan Prefecture for Selnes Theater of Operations last time, you've not

come back home for over 5 years. You'd better go back home for a reunion as soon as possible. As for the affairs in Yanghe Prefecture, Huaiyuan Palace and the key factors in Youzhou Province and Taixia Country, we will talk about them later!"

After saying these words, Elder Muyuan directly turned around and flew away; instead of returning to Zhang Tie's home.

Zhang Tie deeply bowed towards his 6th granduncle's back once again. He knew that Elder Muyuan didn't want him to be restrained at home.

Zhang Tie didn't come back home until he saw off his 6th granduncle.

...

"Who're you?" Some guards instantly sprung up and watched Zhang Tie with vigilant looks as they tightly held the handles of their swords and sabers the moment Zhang Tie landed in the courtyard of his home. If they did not find that Zhang Tie was talking with Elder Muyuan just now, these guards might have charged at him.

After looking around, Zhang Tie found these guards were all Hua people. Although being strange, they were all above LV 9 and very capable. Therefore, Zhang Tie nodded inside.

"I'm Zhang Tie!" Zhang Tie replied frankly.

After hearing this reply, all the guards changed their faces at once out of amazement...

However, before those guards continued to ask him, 3 boys of 4-5 years of age had rushed out of the porch.

"Ah, master has flown off like a bird; master has flown off like a bird; I will also learn to fly; I will also learn to fly..."

The 3 boys looked so cute with black hair, black eyes and jade-like white skins. With a special qi, they looked like half-breeds

more or less.

The moment the 3 boys appeared had Zhang Tie focused on them without a blink.

Zhang Tie felt a bit mysterious resonance between his bloodline and that of the 3 boys.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the 3 boys became stunned for a second.

"Uncle. Have you seen our master?" The boy in the front asked dauntlessly.

Although those guards who surrounded Zhang Tie wanted to say something, after seeing Zhang Tie's undeniable dignified look, they shut up at once.

The 3 boys looked a bit like Linda, especially their eyes.

When he heard what they called him, Zhang Tie didn't know what to say.

With a genial smile, Zhang Tie squatted down in front of the 3 boys, "Who's your master?"

"Our master is Grandgranduncle Muyuan!" The boy in the front replied without any fear.

'Grandgranduncle Muyuan?' Zhang Tie almost laughed at such a naive appellation about Elder Muyuan. Such an appellation included Elder Muyuan's name and seniority in Zhang clan. Perhaps, only these little guys could call him in this way.

"Isn't your Grandgranduncle Muyuan an old man with white hair and beard?" Zhang Tie asked with the same naive tone as that of the kid.

"Ahh, yes, yes, Grandgranduncle Muyuan gave us a lesson today. However, don't know why but Grandgranduncle Muyuan suddenly flew off the courtyard just now!"

"What did you learn today?"

"Grandgranduncle Muyuan brought us a jar of ants. He showed us how small ants caught big insects and taught us how to breathe like a tortoise. That's too funny!" The 3 kids clapped happily as they replied.

"Let me guess, are you Zhang Chenglei?" Zhang Tie watched the 3 kids and asked, "You're Zhang Chengting, you're Zhang Chengpei!"

As the 3 kids had the traits of their moms, Zhang Tie immediately identified them.

"Yes, how do you know our names? We've not seen you before!" Zhang Chengting asked with a vigilant look. Meanwhile, he stealthily drew Zhang Chenglei's clothes' corner and whispered to him, "Elder brother, mom doesn't want us to talk with strangers!"

"It's fine. Don't you see the guards here? If this man could enter our home and tell our names, he must be our relative or a friend of our elder uncle!" Zhang Chenglei also turned around and whispered to Zhang Chengting.

Hearing the two little guys whispering in front of him, Zhang Tie almost burst out into laughter.

"Ahh, you've not even told us whether you've seen our Grandgranduncle Muyuan." Zhang Chengpei asked as he raised his petite face. Even though they've chatted for a short while, the little guy still insisted on figuring out the first question.

Before Zhang Tie replied, a familiar sound and footstep had drifted behind the porch.

"Chenglei, why did you take two younger brothers out?"

With this voice, a grande dame in light green longuette and elegant and exquisite make-up appeared.

The moment that person moved out of the porch, she had caught sight of Zhang Tie. Closely after that, she was fixed...

After touching Zhang Chenglei's head, Zhang Tie stood up and

watched Linda in front of him.

Since he left Huaiyuan Prefecture on the 894th year of Black Iron Calendar, they had departed for almost 6 years. During this period, Linda, after giving birth to a baby, looked a bit plumper due to a noble living style. She looked more like an elegant, mature wife and mother.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Linda instantly covered her mouth with hands. In a few seconds, she burst out into tears...

Zhang Tie just walked forward and lightly embraced Linda.

"Bad man, you made my mom cry, let go of my mom..."

In such a warm moment, an inharmonious voice sounded on Zhang Tie's side. Zhang Tie felt being kicked by someone. Lowering his head, he saw Zhang Chenglei watching him with a furious red face. Meanwhile, Zhang Chenglei was clutching Zhang Tie's clothes and kicking Zhang Tie forcefully. Zhang Chengting and Zhang Chengpei also rushed towards here to give Zhang Chenglei a favor as they started to attack Zhang Tie at the same time, "Let go of Aunt Linda!"

Linda hurriedly wiped off her tears as she squatted down and prevented the three kids from attacking Zhang Tie furiously, "Chenglei, Chengting, Chengpei, this is your papa; hurry, call papa..."

The three little guys were shocked at once. Watching Zhang Tie, they seemed to have not imagined that the "big hero" who was fighting demons in their minds could appear in front of him at this moment...

...

Only after a few minutes, the entire Zhang's mansion had become as boisterous as celebrating the new year's festival...

Chapter 815: An Enchanting Night

At night, in the dining hall of Zhang Tie's mansion, all the family members gathered at a huge round table. This dinner lasted from 7 pm to 11 pm. Many dishes had been heated more than once. However, the atmosphere remained extremely fervent...

At 10 pm, Zhang's next generation was taken to bed by babysitters and servants, leaving Zhang Tie's parents, Zhang Yang who had just arrived at home hurriedly and the wives of the two brothers in the dining hall.

During the past few years, Zhang Yang added two more nephews and one more niece for Zhang Tie. The three kids were both born in Taixia Country. The two new nephews were named Zhang Chengtai and Zhang Chengxia respectively while the new niece was named Zhang Shiqing. As of now, Zhang Tie's elder brother already had 5 sons and 2 daughters; plus Zhang Tie's 3 sons, Zhang family already had 10 juniors.

Zhang Chengtai was delivered by Zhang Tie's eldest aunt Wang Huizhen; Zhang Chengxia was delivered by Zhang Tie's second aunt Lu Shixun; Zhang Shiqing was delivered by Zhang Tie's third aunt Wang Huayin.

Over the past few years, Zhang Yang had been busy running Jinwu Business Group in Taixia Country. Therefore, he didn't marry any more wife.

With the 10 kids at home, Zhang Tie's parents felt less lonely.

As for Zhang Tie, everybody wondered how could Zhang Tie promoted to a knight at such a young age.

When Zhang Tie's dad asked him about this, all the family members watched Zhang Tie with curious looks including Linda, Beverly, Fiona, Zhang Tie's elder brother and eldest aunt.

As no outsider was at home, Zhang Tie talked about the overall

process of Upton Battle.

Of course, Zhang Tie briefed those dangerous experiences. As for the extremely dangerous experience of being chased after by a demon knight, Zhang Tie just briefed it with one sentence—I wrestled with a demon powerhouse and fell into a subterranean stream with it. Speaking of the tower of time, Zhang Tie emphasized its marvel instead of mentioning the loneliness that he felt when he cultivated in it.

Everybody felt like listening to an interesting knight novel.

"You mean...you alone...floated over hundreds of miles in the subterranean stream and stayed in the tower of time for...15 years?" Zhang Tie's mom asked him with a faintly trembled voice.

Watching his mom's shocked look, Zhang Tie purposefully raised his voice, "Ahh, almost like that, it's interesting to float in the subterranean stream. I cultivated in the tower of time every day. Therefore, time flew past quickly. I don't remember how many years did I stay inside!"

After listening to Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie's mom burst out into tears at once, making Zhang Tie a bit flurried.

"Mom, don't worry about me, I'm fine..." Zhang Tie hurriedly comforted his mom.

Zhang Tie's mom hurriedly wiped off her tears and revealed a smile, "I'm fine. It's too late. I'm a bit tired. You'd better go to bed earlier!"

Zhang Yang wanted to say something. However, Zhang Tie's eldest aunt drew his clothes and threw a glance at Zhang Yang. After glancing at Linda, Beverly and Fiona, Zhang Yang realized something at once, "Yes, it's too late. Younger brother, as you have just come back, you must be tired. You'd better go to bed now!"

Linda, Beverly and Fiona faintly blushed.

"Ahem..ahem..." Zhang Tie's dad coughed twice in a dignified

way as he looked around, "Hmm, your mom and I are a bit tired. If you have any story, talk about it tomorrow!"

After watching the bashful looks and alluring figures of Linda, Beverly and Fiona, Zhang Tie's heart pounded...

Therefore, all the family members went to bed.

...

In Zhang's mansion, in order to avoid troubles, especially as Zhang Tie was not at home all year round, they lived separately. Zhang Tie's parents lived in the main courtyard where all the family members always held parties and various activities; Zhang Yang's family lived in the courtyard on the left of the main courtyard which was matched with an independent gate; Linda, Beverly and Fiona lived in the courtyard on the right of the main courtyard. All the female servants and guards in the courtyard on the right once served Zhang Tie in Jinwu Castle such as Sonia, Runo and Paul, etc..

Only 21 of the former 52 female servants from Varner Empire who once served Zhang Tie in Jinwu Castle were with Zhang Tie now. All the others had been set free by Linda, Beverly and Fiona. Many female servants married the Spirits guards of Zhang Tie and settled down in Jinyang City.

Sonia served as the head of servants in Zhang Tie's inner chamber; Runo served as the head of guards while Paul served as the steward.

Zhang Tie's inner chamber covered over 6,000 square meters including the courtyard, which was as same as the size of Zhang Yang's inner chamber. It could hold 100-200 people easily.

Over the past years, although Zhang Tie was not at home, he knew pretty well about what happened at home, especially everything about Linda, Beverly and Fiona through Zhang Yang.

...

When Zhang Tie left the main room, it was already dark while the two crescents were hanging high in the sky. The courtyard outside the main parlor had been lit up by lamps. Insect chirps were drifted from the grasses in the garden. Some teams of guards were patrolling in the courtyard. Linda, Beverly and Fiona led Zhang Tie across the winding corridor towards Zhang Tie's inner chamber. Zhang Tie had not come to his inner chamber since he arrived home.

At night, the fluorite lamps turned dim. Zhang Tie then put his right arm around Linda's neck while pulling Fiona's hand by his left hand, with Beverly in the middle of them. Zhang Tie felt complex.

"Thanks to your hard work for these years!"

Zhang Tie finally spared a chance to appreciate his wives since he met them in the main parlor.

Linda, Beverly and Fiona had not imagined that Zhang Tie would say such warm words to them. Hearing this, they were deeply moved inside.

Although this man fought demons on the battlefield with millions of corpses at the risk of his life so many times, when he came back home, he firstly appreciated his women's hard work at home.

When the three women were deeply moved, Zhang Tie's next sentence exposed his nature as a rogue.

"I will compensate you well tonight. You can eat as long as you want!"

When he said this, Zhang Tie started to move his hands on the three women's plump butts, making them flurried at once.

"Let's talk about it back in the room. We...might be seen by others here!" Linda twisted her waist bashfully.

'We might be seen by others?' Zhang Tie looked around the

winding corridor which was featured with Hua buildings and burst out into laughter...

Winding corridors of Hua people were zigzag. On both sides of the winding corridors, there were always garden buildings such as rockeries, pines and bamboos. Although being winding corridors, they were implicit with lingering charm. Outside people could only see the figures in the winding corridors through the crisscrossed pedal-shaped and diamond-shaped corridor windows. Those corridor windows were all higher than 1.5 m. Watching it in the distance, outsiders would feel people walking in the photo, which was fully aesthetic.

'As a knight, won't I know if I'm followed?'

Linda's mature, beautiful, elegant feminine taste made Zhang Tie fascinated.

"I've told you that he must have other women outside. Look at his stroking skill. It's much more proficient than before. Are all knights good at flirting with women?" Fiona threw a glance at Zhang Tie as she whispered to Beverly, faintly panting. Her sound could rightly be heard by Zhang Tie and Linda.

Zhang Tie's hands became slightly stiff. The three women exchanged a glance with each other before giggling at the same time...

...

Although it was a deep night, all the servants and guards were still waiting for Zhang Tie and his wives in the inner chamber. Watching Zhang Tie walking out of the winding corridor and entering the gate of the inner chamber, all of them knelt down on one knee towards them.

Zhang Tie glanced at Paul, Runo and Sonia in the front of the team.

Paul looked calmer and deeper. After glancing at Paul, Zhang Tie

realized that he would soon promote to LV 12. Zhang Tie was really amazed by such a high cultivation speed.

Compared to Paul, all the other Spirits guards' cultivation situations were within Zhang Tie's expectation. Runo had promoted to LV 8 while the other guards were between LV 5 and LV 7.

Sonia was still very sexy. Her younger sister had been set free and married a man, who was still serving Jinwu Business Group though.

"I'm very satisfied with your performances these years. Get up!" Zhang Tie said calmly.

All of them then stood up and watched Zhang Tie with excited looks. The news that Zhang Tie had promoted to a knight was remarkably meaningful to them.

Linda, Beverly and Fiona returned to their bedrooms ahead of Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie controlled his impulsion to make love with them as he let all the female servants and guards go back to their posts or take a rest except for Sonia, Runo and Paul.

...

Sonia took Zhang Tie to the study of the inner chamber, where Zhang Tie was going to call them in alone. The first one entering the study was Runo.

Of course, Runo was very excited as the first one being called in by Zhang Tie.

After encouraging Runo for a short moment, Zhang Tie picked up a pen and a piece of paper and started to write something on the desk.

"These are my friends' names and their addresses in Taixia Country. Take some subordinates to contact them according to these addresses. Over these years, they might have moved; however, you should be able to find them if you ask others about

their whereabouts. When you find them, tell them I've been back to Taixia Country!" Zhang Tie passed a slip of paper to Runo, which included the names of the other members of God Blessing Brotherhood and their addresses—Twilight City, Anping Prefecture, Guizhou Province, Taixia Country.

Guizhou Province was the largest medium-sized province in Taixia Country, which was over 100,000 miles away from Youzhou Province. It gathered most of the foreigners, who immigrated to Taixia Country from all the other continents or sub-continents due to various reasons. Many exiled royals and nobles would like to live in Guizhou Province. In a Hua phrase before the Catastrophe, Guizhou Province was the biggest China Town in Taixia Country. Guizhou Province contained over 10 billion people, almost half of which were foreigners.

Zhang Tie wondered whether Barley and the other members of God Blessing Brotherhood were still in Guizhou Province and how were they doing. Zhang Tie wanted to contact them first and tell them he was back.

Many things would change as time went by, but some things wouldn't. Zhang Tie believed that those guys of God Blessing Brotherhood would definitely come here to meet him if they knew that he was back.

Zhang Tie had some plans and thoughts which he would tell them when they came here to meet him.

'Although being young and frivolous at that time, as time goes by, it becomes our unforgettable memory. If they have been used to their average lives, I will not ruin their tranquil lives; instead, I will bless them; however, if they are still unwilling to be mediocre, the God Blessing Brotherhood will be the first force and helper of me that I am going to support in Taixia Country.'

'As a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace, I have to rely on the Zhang clan in many cases. However, I cannot fully depend on my clan.'

Not only myself, all the other clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace have their own forces and connections, the most powerful force and connection among which is the background of the clan elders in Huaiyuan Palace. The 8 branches of Huaiyuan Palace left by Lord Huaiyuan are the natural stigma on the elders. Before I promoted to a knight, the Golden Sea branch, also the current Golden Light branch of Huaiyuan Palace always followed the rule of Elder Muyuan. The major of Golden Sea City, also the current Golden Light City was always assumed by the direct descendants of Elder Muyuan. As to others, Elder Muen comes from Yiyang branch, also the branch of the eldest wife of the clan head; Elder Muray comes from Stars Viewing branch; Elder Muan comes from Taian branch; Elder Muyu comes from Qihai branch. All the majors of those cities were assumed by the descendants of the elders respectively. Besides, the elders' own clans also run many business groups. They all have their own needs for interests. The other branches of Huaiyuan Palace which don't have any knights have to depend on the branch of the eldest wife of clan head.'

'After promoting to a knight, if I want to make a further progress in cultivation, I cannot only depend on the cultivation resources provided by the clan, which is equal to each elder. Elders have to seek for cultivation resources themselves. They have to establish and develop their own forces and compete for more resources outside with other knights. Objectively, this makes the clan full of vigor, innovation and ambition, which is the basic driving force for a clan to sustain and further develop. Even clan elders and clan head are expanding their clan forces for more resources, of course, the others are not qualified to live off their past glory.'

'All the other major clans in Jinyun Country and Taixia Country are facing the similar situation as Huaiyuan Palace. Even though I have become a clan elder and a knight of noble status, I should not just wait for everything provided by the clan. The so-called knights are the trump cards that a clan uses to compete with the other major clans.'

Zhang Tie knew that he had increased the influence of Golden Sea branch in Huaiyuan Palace after promoting to a knight. Meanwhile, he formed a competitive relation with Elder Muyuan in Golden Sea City.

'It was definitely not a hasty decision for Elder Muyuan to teach my three sons given their talents and bloodlines. What was more, it indicated my compromise in Golden Sea City.'

After becoming a clan elder, Zhang Tie never cared about the affairs in Golden Sea City. He didn't even care about how his family became the shareholder of Golden Light City. He entrusted his elder brother to handle it.

After promoting to a knight, with his increasingly deep understanding about Huaiyuan Palace and his clan, Zhang Tie had deeper opinions about many problems from more perspectives.

As he had returned to Taixia Country, it was time for Zhang Tie to establish his own force and expand his own influence in Taixia Country.

'Sacred Iceland Kingdom is one of my cards. However, as it's too far away from Taixia Country, it's almost useless. Additionally, I don't mean to show it to the public. Even though this secret is known by Gold and Power Law, I could only be a dark gold CEO in Gold and Power Law.'

Therefore, Zhang Tie considered this return as a new start. He had to establish his own force from the scratch step by step.

Feeling being valued by Zhang Tie, Runo made a bow towards Zhang Tie before leaving the study while chesting out.

After Runo left, Sonia entered. With crossed hands below her lower abdomen, she stood gracefully in front of Zhang Tie.

"Master!" The beautiful head of female slaves of Varner Empire still maintained the same appellation of Zhang Tie.

After a few years, Sonia had become more beautiful and maturer.

She looked tranquil and bright. Due to different human species, women from Varner Empire had especially outstanding hipbone and slim waist. Therefore, they looked pretty charming. Due to the plump butt, Sonia looked concave-convex. In the black and white longuette of the head of female servants, Sonia looked very womanly.

After sizing this woman up in an appreciative way from a pure man's perspective, Zhang Tie said, "I appreciate your loyalty these years. As a compensation, I can fulfill one of your requests!"

"I have no request. I only want to stay on your side and serve you forever, my master!" Sonia lowered her eyes as she said calmly.

Sonia's words made Zhang Tie faintly stunned. 'If she sticks to be my domestic chancellor, it means that she gives up the chances to change her own fate and promote to higher positions. Over the past years, as I became a clan elder and the business of Jinwu Business Group grew better, she could have a better platform and development chances; however, Sonia gave them up so decisively.'

"Are you sure?"

"This is my only request. If my master has no more request, I will go back to work in case of wasting your time!"

Watching Sonia stealthily moving her eyes away from him and sensing her intense heartbeat since she entered the study, Zhang Tie immediately understood something. After touching so many women, Zhang Tie had understood women so well.

He had not imagined that Sonia could fall in love with him.

After being silent for a second, Zhang Tie stood up from behind the desk and slowly walked towards Sonia.

As he moved closer to Sonia, Zhang Tie could sense her tension under her calm look.

Zhang Tie slightly raised Sonia's jaw and watched her beautiful, pure and amber eyes with faint jumping flames.

After being touched by Zhang Tie's finger, Sonia quivered all over as her raised breasts started to undulate due to the quick breathing rhythm.

Zhang Tie gently moved his finger from her delicate jaw onto her lips and started to stroke them...

Sonia's eyes turned blurred. She faintly opened her mouth and held Zhang Tie's finger. She then started to suck Zhang Tie's finger in a very skilled way. Her soft and wet tongue slipped between Zhang Tie's fingers in a dexterous way with the sweetness of her lips. It kept rapidly rubbing and rotating in a piquant way. Zhang Tie felt like getting an electrical shock.

In a split second, Zhang Tie felt that a part of his body became extremely bulgy. After taking in a deep breath, he drew back his finger, "When did you fall in love with me?"

"I don't know...maybe when you let me put on my clothes in slaves market and not show my naked body to others; since you took me away from the slaves market, you have started to appear in my dreams...It's my happiest moment whenever I meet you in my dream..." Sonia's eyes started to turn wet, "Because I'm more beautiful than others since I became a slave, I had been learning to please men. In order to sell me at a high price, although I've not been touched by any man, my fertility has been destroyed by medicines. I'm a hapless and dirty woman. I was destined to be men's plaything and the container of their sperm. It's you my master who helped me find my dignity back. It's you my master who changed my younger sister's fate. Therefore, I'm already very satisfied now. As long as I could serve you, my master, my life would be meaningful. Please don't chase me away."

Sonia's tears streamed down her cheeks.

Watching this woman's watery eyes, Zhang Tie held her face and gently wiped off her tears. What a poor woman!

"Sonia, you're hapless but you're not dirty. You're very pure.

Those who made you hapless are really dirty ones. Your haplessness was not your fault. If you want to stay, just stay on my side forever!" After saying that, Zhang Tie gently kissed her face.

Being immersed in Zhang Tie's kiss, Sonia started to quiver all over once again due to the excitement.

Such a kiss only appeared in her dreams. When Zhang Tie kissed her, she couldn't help but tightly embrace Zhang Tie as she laid her head on Zhang Tie's chest.

Zhang Tie didn't move. Until one minute later, he gently patted Sonia's butt and said, "Alright, go to bed now. It's too late. Call in Paul by the way!"

Sonia opened her eyes as she moved one step back. She seemed to have absorbed a strong energy from the embrace as she recovered her composure.

After wiping off her tears and making herself look good, Sonia revealed a smile at Zhang Tie before pushing open the door.

With the enchanting feeling from his finger lingering in his mind and the residue of tears on his chest, Zhang Tie watched Sonia's graceful and sexy back as he became a bit puzzled. He didn't know whether the kiss was right or not.

'This woman lives in a face mask. Others could only see her one side; however, I could see both sides of her.'

Zhang Tie shook his head...

Paul entered...

...

After talking with Paul for over 10 minutes, Zhang Tie finally left the study.

Nobody else knew what did they talk in those 10 or more minutes.

When Zhang Tie left his study, all the others had left, except for

Sonia, who was still waiting outside the study quietly, sticking to her final responsibility——leading Zhang Tie to the bedrooms of Linda, Beverly and Fiona.

There were over 70 rooms in the three-storey building of the inner chamber. If not being led by someone, Zhang Tie might not be able to find the right bedroom.

After throwing a glance at Sonia, Zhang Tie found that she had already recovered her tranquility.

The study was on the 1st floor while the bedrooms of Linda, Beverly and Fiona were on the 2nd floor. Holding a brass lantern, Sonia led Zhang Tie all the way from the 1st floor to the 2nd. They didn't speak on the way. However, a special qi seemed to flow between them.

In the inner chamber, the bedrooms of Linda, Beverly and Fiona were interlinked with each other. When Zhang Tie came to the 2nd floor and pushed open the door of the bedroom, he heard someone playing water in the bathroom.

After closing the door from inside, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. As he walked towards the bathroom, he started to take off his clothes. When he arrived at the door of the bathroom, Zhang Tie had been naked all over...

Soon after Zhang Tie entered the bathtub for less than 2 minutes, an extremely "enchanted" voice had drifted from the bathtub...

...

Chapter 816: Mother's Disease

Zhang Tie returned home on September 13th; however, his mom fell sick on September 15th.

Her disease occurred without any symptom.

On September 14th, in case of being teased by the family members, Linda, Beverly and Fiona, who had made love with Zhang Tie overnight, got up early as usual and greeted their parents-in-law. After that, they had breakfast together. In the morning, Zhang Tie's mom looked good. However, when they had supper at night, Zhang Tie's mom had a poor appetite. She ate lesser than before. The family members didn't think it was abnormal as Zhang Tie's mom was always healthy. However, they could never believe that Zhang Tie's mom would fall sick on the morning of September 15th. When she ate breakfast, she suddenly felt giddy. Soon after that, she sat on the ground.

Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang were both startled as the mansion became chaotic at once.

...

On the noon of September 15th, Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang and their wives were waiting quietly outside the bedroom of their parents.

The best doctor in Huaiyuan Palace was diagnosing Zhang Tie's mom by touching her pulse. In order to not disturb the doctor, all the family members exited the bedroom for the time being, except for Zhang Tie's dad.

Although Zhang Tie had promoted to a knight, he was not a doctor. Therefore, he was not proficient in diagnosis. Zhang Yang, as a pharmacist, knew something about medicine; however, he could not confirm the cause of his mother's disease either; therefore, they could only invite the best doctor.

"How's mom lately?" Zhang Tie asked Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang forced a bitter smile, "You know, mom has always been in good health; plus mom and dad always ate all-purpose medicament these years; neither do they have to care about the affairs about the family, I don't know how mom fell sick!"

When the two brothers talked with each other, the bedroom's door was pushed open as Zhang Tie's dad walked out with a grey-hair doctor and his female assistant.

"Elder Mushen..." The doctor and his assistant hurriedly cupped their hands towards Zhang Tie the moment they saw Zhang Tie. The status of clan elder could already make people suffocate.

"Mr. Sun, how's my mom?" Zhang Tie hurriedly moved one step forward and asked anxiously.

"Hmm, erm..." The doctor stopped as he looked around.

"Let's talk about it in the small parlor!" Zhang Yang exchanged a glance with Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then nodded and told Linda, Beverly and Fiona, "Go inside with my eldest sister-in-law to talk with my mom, I will be back soon!"

After exchanging a glance with each other, the 4 women entered the bedroom.

Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang, their dad Zhang Ping and Dr. Sun then came to a small parlor. Under the guidance of Zhang's servant, Dr. Sun's assistant was arranged to take a rest in another room for the time being.

After entering the small parlor, Dr. Sun told them the truth.

"Old madam's disease is not physical but mental!" Dr. Sun said with a solemn look.

Dr. Sun was elder than Zhang Tie's parents. However, as Zhang Tie was a Clan elder, who was very honorable, Dr. Sun could only call Zhang Tie's mom old madam.

'Mental disease?' Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang and Zhang Ping

exchanged a confused glance with each other.

"Dr. Sun, can you tell me the details?" Zhang Ping asked.

"After touching old madam's pulse, I found that her guts were healthy, except for her heart meridian, which felt sorrow. She must be worried about something all the year round!"

"Ahh? No way!" Zhang Yang's eyebrows raised as he sprung up. Dr. Sun was evidently indicating that his mom was unhappy while being together with him. Therefore, Zhang Yang could not accept it like having been extremely insulted. He almost lost his temper, "Dr. Sun, you know about our living conditions, my mom doesn't need to worry about anything at home. All the daughters-in-law and grandchildren are obedient and filial to her. Nobody dares violate her intention. My mom was always smiling in front of her grandchildren in normal times. She looked very happy. How could she feel sorrowful about anything?"

"Old madam's disease has nothing to do with living conditions because she was always worried about somebody or something. Therefore, after so many years, she finally fell sick. As a result, old madam feels weak all over and is in low spirits. Additionally, old madam's blood meridian felt sorrow, which was not formed in a couple of years; instead, in almost 10 years. In the decade, old madam was always worried about someone or something and finally fell sick."

After hearing this cause, Zhang Tie felt like getting a thunder strike as he became frozen at once. '10 years? Isn't it 10 years since I joined the Iron-Blood Camp of Norman Empire and fought in Kalur Theater of Operations on the 889th year to the present?'

Dr. Sun explained carefully. However, he didn't notice that Zhang Tie's face turned pale abruptly. He even turned around to ask Zhang Ping, "Wasn't old madam always worried about someone or something in the evening during the past 10 years? Mental disease has to be cured with mental medicine. As the heart

is the master of the body, if the heart meridian was not smooth, one would be affected by many diseases. If old madam's mental disease was not cured from the root, she might feel better in a short period due to medicine; however, her disease might aggravate in the future."

Zhang Ping wanted to say something; however, after exchanging a glance with Zhang Tie, he let out a sigh, "Thanks, Mr. Sun, I got it. Please leave a prescription. We will take care of her for a few days. If there's any problem, we will invite Dr. Sun once again!"

Dr. Sun nodded as he wrote a prescription on a swab on the desk. Zhang Yang took it and glanced at the prescription. Closely after that, he nodded.

"Zhang Yang, send Dr. Sun back!" Zhang Ping said.

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang nodded as he sent Dr. Sun away politely.

Leaving Zhang Tie and Zhang Ping alone in the small parlor. Zhang Tie then moved his eyes on his dad as he asked in a trembled voice, "Dad...whether...mom was always worried about me these years?"

Zhang Ping's face changed at once, "Although your mom doesn't say it at ordinary times, she would always call your pet name guoguo in dreams. Sometimes, she would wake up suddenly. As you always fought outside, since you left Blackhot City and joined the war between Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty, your mom has started to be a vegetarian and bless you day by day. As it was risky on the battlefield, your mom didn't let me tell you about that in case you got distracted. Over the past years, only when you came back home, your mom would sleep well. Last time, you had Linda, Beverly and Fiona to Huaiyuan Prefecture and got lost a few years, during that period, your mom's pillow was always wet each morning. When you returned home two days ago and spoke of your experience in Selnes Theater of Operations and outside Upton

City, your mom dropped tears once again when she went back to the bedroom. She said that if this family's wealth had to be exchanged for your life, she preferred to sell rice brew..."

Hearing his dad's words, Zhang Tie's eyes turned red as tears coursed down his cheeks. Zhang Tie had not imagined that his mom was so worried about him that she didn't even sleep well during the past decade when he left home.

'With Castle of Black Iron, I have been drawn back from the hell and dancing on the blades for so many times these years; however, I've not imagined about my mom's concern about me. What a jerk!'

'My parents treat me so well; however, I'm not a qualified son.'

'As mom has lost one son, I can feel how she was worried about me and hoped me to go back to her side once again.'

'Even though I have promoted to a knight, if I could not keep the most important people in my life happy, it's meaningless for me to fight and kill outside every day.'

At this moment, Zhang Yang's footsteps sounded outside the door. Zhang Tie wiped off his tears and smiled towards his dad, "Dad, don't worry, I know what to do next. I will cure mom's mental disease!"

Zhang Yang pushed open the door and entered. At the sight of the remaining tears on Zhang Tie's face, he had understood what happened, "Dr. Sun has been sent away!"

"Have you handled the affairs in the business group?" Like all the other common parents, Zhang Tie's dad also asked Zhang Yang out of concern.

"Hmm, there's nothing special in Jinwu Business Group today. A difference engine that we ordered a few days ago had arrived at Embracing Tiger Harbor yesterday!"

It was definitely a milestone for a business group to use a senior difference engine to help handle the complex trades and all the

other information. If not being large enough, a business group would never use an expensive difference engine which required a lot of professionals to take care of.

"Elder brother. Give me the prescription. I will cook medicine for mom. Dad and I will take care of the domestic affairs, you can go handle the affairs of the business group!"

After being silent for a second, Zhang Yang gave the prescription to Zhang Tie, "Well, you can get all the medicines in the medicine storage. As you're home, I'm reassured. The business group that transported this difference engine here is a business group of Fan Clan in Yingzhou Province. It was escorted by a CEO of the business group. Fan Clan might be our relative in the future. Therefore, I'd better go greet them!"

"Relative?" Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhang Yang, "Elder brother, you're marrying other girls?"

"It's you, not me!" Zhang Yang smiled.

"Me?" Zhang Tie became surprised.

"Ahem...ahem..." Zhang Tie's dad coughed twice in a bit bashful way, "It's preset by your mom and I in Fuhai City a few years ago. We planned to tell you in a few days. When your mom gets better, ask your mom about that. Go cook medicine now!"

As marriage was always arranged in that age, Zhang Tie didn't ask too much about that. He then left the small parlor with the prescription.

...

Zhang Tie found the medicine and cooked them himself. Finally, he held a kettle of cooked medicine which had cooled down and served it to his mom.

"I'm always good. Don't know why, when I got up this morning, I felt sick. I'm getting old!" Zhang Tie's mom smiled towards Zhang Tie with a benign look after drinking up the medicine.

"Mom, why do you say that? I was told that only with some ailment occasionally could one not be affected by a disease. The doc said you're okay. You just had a poor sleep quality lately. You must be thinking too much. Just take a rest for a few days at home, you will recover!" Zhang Tie said with a relaxed look as he put away the wares, "As I've been back, I will not leave soon. I will have a lot of free time to accompany you at home. I'm waiting for your rice brew when you recover. As I was outside these years, I was always dreaming about your rice brew! Previously, I would not eat rice brew in case of cost; however, now, as a clan elder, I cannot buy one bowl of rice brew that could match with that made by my mom even at the cost of hundreds of gold coins. How poor I am!"

Zhang Tie pretended to let out a sigh with a sorrowful look.

Zhang Tie's elder sisters-in-law all burst out into laughter after hearing Zhang Tie's words, making the atmosphere in the room much more relaxed.

Zhang Tie's mom also smiled with a brilliance in her eyes. She sat up and gazed at Zhang Tie, "You won't leave this time?"

"Unless mom chases me away, I will not leave. I will definitely eat up your rice brew for the compensation that I wandered outside these years!" Zhang Tie grinned.

"Are you cheating me?" Zhang Tie's mom asked seriously.

Zhang Tie shrugged, "As Taixia is as solid as rocks, the entire country is safe without any warfare. Waii Sub-continent has long become a deserted land. Where else am I going to? I've been fed up with fighting outside these years. If anyone wants to fight demons, just let them go there, I will not go there anymore. The world doesn't belong to me. I don't need to worry about it so much. If the heavens collapse, taller guys will be the pillars. It's none of my business. After all, we don't lack anything now. I will just be a leisure clan elder in Huaiyuan Palace. When I'm free, I will help

my elder brother take care of Jinwu Business Group, what do you think, mom?"

"Fine, fine, of course fine, of course fine..." Zhang Tie's mom revealed a smile. Perhaps due to the effect of the medicine, her face had turned a bit red only after a few minutes. She looked a bit spirited, "You and Linda are both young, you can give birth to more babies. Look at your elder brother's family, how boisterous it is with so many babies!"

"Mom, trust me, you will definitely be the head of Zhang's kindergarten. Elder brother has 7 babies now. I swear to catch up with him; otherwise, I will lose my face. Isn't it? Darling? Don't be lazy at night!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Linda, Beverly and Fiona turned red. Over the past two nights, they were too diligent instead of being lazy. They didn't let Zhang Tie's mummy be free at all.

The mating affair on the bed was always a secret in the public. Linda, Beverly and Fiona had not imagined that Zhang Tie the bad thing could expose it in the public; since they could not explain, they could only blush.

After hearing Zhang Tie's blue joke, even Zhang Tie's three elder sisters-in-law blushed a bit; however, they all forgot about Zhang Tie's supreme status as a clan elder and felt him being an intimate younger brother-in-law.

Zhang Tie's mom flicked at Zhang Tie's head with one finger before throwing a tragicomical glance at him, "Thankfully, the kids were not here. Otherwise, even the kids would be spoiled in such a way!"

"Yes, yes, yes. I will watch out later on. Mom, you're flicking at a knight's head; however, speaking of the battle force, you could not even match a demon general!" Zhang Tie grinned cheekily for forgiveness.

Zhang Tie's mom might not remember Zhang Tie's another status until then. After being quiet for a second, all the women in the room burst into laughter...

As the medicine calmed the nerves. After taking it a few more minutes and chatting with Zhang Tie for a while, his mom had felt sleepy and gradually closed her eyes.

"Elder sisters-in-law. You can go back with Linda, Beverly and Fiona for a rest. Don't call me at supper time. I will just stay here with mom..." Zhang Tie turned around and told those women after covering the blanket for his mom.

After exchanging a glance with each other, those women then walked out of the bedroom quietly.

Zhang Tie then held his mom's hands which were still coarse even now after working hard for dozens of years. Watching the silver hair at her mom's ears, Zhang Tie dropped off tears...

Zhang Tie felt that it was more meaningful than anything else to hold his mom's hand and watch her sleep safe and sound...

'Holy war, earth-element realm, demons, Three-eye Association, f*ck you...'

...

Although Taixia Country was still as solid as rocks, it was definitely not peaceful as there were all sorts of hidden evil forces across the country. As Youzhou Province was far away from the prosperous heartland of Taixia Country, it was not peaceful either...

On 17th September, a majestic dragon-shaped golden airboat over 500 m in length flew by Gaozhou Province and arrived at Youzhou Province...

Chapter 817: A Grand Show

The dragon-shaped airboat flew over the border between Gaozhou Province and Youzhou Province as swiftly as a bolt like a majestic golden dragon...

The mouth of the airboat was a huge, top-quality crystal cover which was made up of natural polished crystals. Although it could prevent wind, rain and airflow, it could not block one's vision.

Two people were standing in the crystal cover and looking down at the mountains, rivers and white clouds with glasses in their hand...

"We've already passed Yangui Mountain Range. We must be in Youzhou Province now!" A young man at his 20s with sword-shaped eyebrows and sparkling eyes in white clothes with a longsword at his waist overlooked the land and uttered with a calm and arrogant look.

"Brother Cangwu, have you been here before?" the other man of the similar age with narrow and long blue eyes turned around and asked with a smile. Although this man looked young, his narrow and long eyes looked very scheming.

"It is my first time!" That young man in white clothes replied, "This lower province could barely have any splendid figure. Besides the 10,000 miles' mountains and rivers, all the other things are really boring."

"As Brother Cangwu is very ambitious, few commoners could be favored by you! However, there may be someone splendid in this lower province. As Youzhou province is established, some splendid figures in the local major clans of Youzhou Province may compete for the governorship of Youzhou Province!"

With a shrewd light in eyes, the youth in white clothes asked, "Brother Tianqi, what do you mean?"

"I was told that Zhang Taixuan the Count Longwind had made a lot of military exploits in the earth-elements realm in order to compete for the governorship of Youzhou Province. He had awakened many powerful ancestral bloodlines. His rune equipment craftsmanship and "Breaking-sun Sutra" also reached an unrivaled level. Isn't such a person splendid?"

The youth in white clothes sneered, "As for the branch of Count Longwind, only Lord Huaiyuan is an influential figure. After Lord Huaiyuan, the branch of Count Longwind has vanished in the public. Although Huaiyuan Palace has rooted in Waii Subcontinent so many years, they only occupied a corner; they didn't even take a half of the subcontinent. Although this holy war has broken out for less than 10 years, Huaiyuan Palace has already retreated to Taixia Country. Although the clever rabbit has three burrows, plus he founded Yanghe Prefecture in a short period, which is admirable; he still lacks the arrogance of Lord Huaiyuan. Lord Huaiyuan could be promoted to General West Expedition in the God's Will Army, one of the top four imperial armies in Taixia Country. Look at his offspring, who could only compete for the governorship of a lower province, which is even lower than Class 5. Even though Zhang Taixuan had tried his best, he still could not promote to an earth knight. His achievements are too common. Although being talented and ambitious, he is only limited to one province. He might be splendid; however, it's just like a flash in the pan!"

"How about Lu Dingzhi in Spiritualmaple Prefecture? This guy has promoted to a knight before 30. He served as the coin-casting commissioner of Ministry of Finance of Taixia Country in Gold Rock Subcontinent. He has made a lot of achievements. I was told that Lord Hong of the Ministry of Finance favored him so much. Spiritualmaple Prefecture is also a deep-rooted local major clan in Youzhou Province. He also intends to compete for the governorship of Youzhou Province. Isn't this guy splendid?"

"I was told that Lu Dingzhi 1 had awakened his ancestral bloodline the moment he came to this world. As he was born with the fragrance of irises, he was named Dingzhi by elders. When he was young, Lu Dingzhi had a great potential to make military exploits in the earth-elements realm. Pitifully, he only served as a coin-casting commissioner in the Ministry of Finance. Gold Roc Subcontinent is just a remote area with barbarous people. They could barely have a knight. They admired the majesty of the Hua people in Taixia Country and became very docile and peaceful. Lu Dingzhi was like an emperor in Gold Roc Subcontinent. After becoming a coin-casting commissioner there for so many years, his arrogance had weakened greatly. He's just a guard. Lu Clan in Spiritualsea Prefecture has run business in Youzhou Province for so many years, they might be more powerful than Zhang Clan in Yanghe Prefecture. However, Lu Dingzhi has lost his masculinity. Splendid what?" The youth in white clothes said.

"What about Gu Qingyun in the Gu's Valley of Eastriver Prefecture? Gu Qingyun is very famous across Youzhou Province. He has promoted to battle spirit at the age of 16 and is regarded as a genius who appears once in a 100 years. He was taken as a disciple by an elder of Heavens Holding Pavilion. It shocked the entire Youzhou Province when Gu Qingyun entered Heavens Holding Pavilion. There were always messages about Gu Qingyun these years, all of them were amazing. It was said that Gu Qingyun had promoted to a knight. Isn't this guy splendid?"

"Just because he was talented at a young age doesn't mean that he will become great when he grows old. It's never too late to judge him when he chops off over 10 heads of demon knights!"

The youth in blue clothes let out a sigh, "After listening to your analysis, brother Changwu, our journey to Youzhou Province became meaningless!"

"Yes, even I think so!" The youth in white clothes shook his head as he continued pitifully, "I was told that the black-robe knight

Gorath who had exterminated all the demons across Waii Subcontinent with the terrifying ptomaine miasma reappeared in Blackhot Subcontinent and devastated the demonized puppets corps there with the same terrifying ptomaine miasma once again. He even killed a demon knight in Blackhot Subcontinent and exterminated two Three-eye Association clans. I was preparing to look for Gorath in Blackhot Subcontinent; however, I received the command of my master; therefore, I have to escort the Heavens Ball to Youzhou Province!"

"It turns out that brother Cangwu thinks that the black-robe knight Gorath is the very splendid person!" The youth in blue clothes was suddenly enlightened, "Gorath is indeed an able man. His terrifying ptomaine miasma shocked the world and scared all the demonized puppets and demons away. Besides the Eastern Continent, there are so many exotic talents in this world. However, voodoo pharmacists who have promoted to knights like Gorath are rarely seen in Taixia Country. I really wonder where does this guy come from. As he came to Blackhot Subcontinent this time, all the Three-eye Association clans in subcontinents might not sleep and eat well. They will feel like being on tenterhooks. This guy might have become the eyesore of demons. Demons must hate him very much and want to kill him as soon as possible!"

"How do you know that Gorath is not a Hua man in Taixia Country? Why do you think the so-called Gorath is just a fake one who confuses others?" The young knight in white clothes asked suddenly.

With a shrewd light in his narrow and long eyes, the youth in blue clothes replied, "You mean..."

"There's an old man in my sect, who once traveled in Western Continent for many years. He's proficient in voodoo skills and knows about the voodoo pharmacists and their sects in Western Continent. A few months ago, he went to Waii Subcontinent alone and collected the Full Moons Demon Miasma in Waii Subcontinent

for study. After studying the Full Moons Demon Misama, the elder asserted that no voodoo pharmacist or sect in Western Continent could cultivate such a terrifying ptomaine miasma. Gorath is definitely a master-level hermit among the voodoo pharmacists!"

"Ahh, I see!"

"Topple over an entire subcontinent with his own ability; drive demons and numerous voodoo pharmacists mad for him; scare Three-eye Association; curb the puppet worms of demons with a Full Moons Demon Miasma. Such a person, although we don't know whether he's righteous or evil, is undoubtedly splendid. What a hero!" The youth in white clothes praised in a heroic way.

...

When the two young men stood on the head of the dragon-shaped airboat, the other two elders were drinking playing the game of go in a room of the airboat. They were leisurely immersed in the world between black and white.

"Young men..." An elder smiled as he shook his head. At the same time, he put a white piece on the checkerboard.

"Didn't we also belittle the bigwigs at such a young age?" Another old man with a swarthy face revealed a tolerant smile. After thinking for a second, he put a black piece on the checkerboard, "Without these ambitious young men, our Taixia Country would be lifeless. Whatever, we could not perform on the stage. I like Cangwu among the new elites of your Heavens Fortune Sect. This boy will be an able man in the future. How about lending him to me for some years? I will give you back a governorship of a medium-level province!"

"Too insolent, he needs more practice!" The old man put down a white piece as he replied.

"If he needs practice in the earth-elements realm, why don't you let him escort the Heavens Ball to Youzhou Province? This

Youzhou Province is just a lower province. Even if I want to select a governor for Youzhou Province from some local rascals and want to borrow the treasure of your Heavens Fortune Sect, the best candidate has nothing to do with you motherf*cking Heavens Fortune Sect. How dare you Heavens Fortune Sect interfere with my domestic affair? Do you believe that I will lead my army to destroy your nestle?" The old man who was using the black piece suddenly goggled his eyes, which looked as threatening as the king of hell.

The old man using the white piece just stroked his mustache and smiled. He didn't care about the other old man with a swarthy face at all.

Watching the smiling old man for a few seconds, the old man using the black piece finally let out a sigh. At the same time, his "threatening" look faded away; instead, he started to roll his eyes in a cunning way, "Alright, all the things in the world have been guessed by your Heavens Fortune Sect. You will never suffer a loss. I will see what you have come with to Youzhou, where, even birds would not like to take a shit in!"

Only after 10 more minutes, the black dragon on the checkerboard was going to be chopped. Pinching the black piece, the old man with a swarthy face frowned and formed a character "川" on his forehead. Suddenly he pointed at the window and said, "Ahh, look, Yang Feiqing the old woman is coming for you..."

After hearing his words, the old man using a white piece faintly turned his face. He turned around only to see nobody. When he realized that something was wrong, he had heard a thunder-like sneeze, which almost caused the entire airship to shake. After turning back, he found all the crystal pieces on the checkerboard had been shattered. Rubbing his nose, the old man using the black piece revealed an embarrassed smile, "Erm...it's too windy. I caught a cold. My sneeze has destroyed all the pieces on the checkerboard. How about having another round..."

The old man using the white piece was so angry that he even started to quiver all over. He pointed at the old man using the black piece and swore, "You timid old Cheng, you're too impudent. You've formed 3 chakras, you tell me you caught a cold? You've already lost the game. Hurry! 5 kgs' imperial falling frost tea leaves. If it's one bit less, I will fight you to death..."

"We did not come to the end. My dragon was still on the checkerboard. Why do you say so?" The old man who held black pieces justified while straightening up his neck.

"I remember the former battle situation, how about reappearing them on the checkerboard and continuing it?"

"Haha, I don't remember it. I have a bad memory. What if you fabricate a false battle situation for your benefit..." The old man with a swarthy face insisted on his opinion.

A powerful, dangerous qi appeared over the old man using the white piece, "Do you believe that I can stomp your ugly airboat into pieces?"

"Just do that. It's just an airboat. I have too many such airboats at home. But, as your Heavens Ball is in the airboat. If this airboat was destroyed, it would drop off. I will not care about the loss!"

The old man using white pieces couldn't stand the opponent anymore as he punched the other old man's eye socket...

With this punch, the eye socket of the old man with a swarthy face became as swollen as that of a giant panda. However, he was not angry at all; instead, he burst out into laughter, "Well, one punch for 10 imperial falling frost tea leaves. If you don't agree, I will gift you 5 kgs' falling frost tea leaves. You owe me a punch now. I will punch you back whenever I want...how about...continuing..."

The old man using white pieces glared at the old man with a swarthy face for quite a while. Finally, he took a seat. The old man

with a swarthy face moved his lip faintly. The door was then opened while someone carried in a new checkerboard and two jars of pieces. The two old men started a new round.

...

The airboat moved almost 700 miles per hour in the sky. After entering the territory of Youzhou Province, it flew 2 hours before arriving at a plain with beautiful landscape, lush water resources and grasses. A magnificent city appeared on the plain.

It was a big city, a genuinely magnificent city. It was the only Class A city in Youzhou Province as of far and the capital city of Youzhou Province——Youzhou Province.

The entire Youzhou city was as square as a square imperial jade seal. The length and width of the city wall lasted over 25 miles respectively. The inner area of the city covered 1,000 square miles. The city wall was higher than 70 m while being matched with powerful city-defense weapons. Even large-scale airships could directly take off from and land on the city wall. Such a magnificent city was very overwhelming on the plain.

Youzhou City had just been founded for less than 5 years. The founding of this city also symbolized that Youzhou Province was promoted to an official lower province of Taixia from a wild province.

If in Waii Subcontinent or other remote places, this city would definitely make any country and clan proud of. However, in Taixia Country, as was commented by the old man with a swarthy face, even birds would not take a shit in Youzhou Province.

The over 500-m long dragon-shaped airboat landed in a location of Youzhou City quietly. All the officers of the city had been long waiting for them on both sides of the hatch of the airboat and dared not even breathe smoothly.

When the hatch was opened, the black-face old man appeared

while an extremely powerful qi covered the entire Youzhou City at once.

He wore a fiery costume with a Kylin on it in a 10 cm-wide purple-gold rune jade waistband. His current majestic look could never be matched by that when he played the game of go with the old man who held white pieces.

The old man looked around with his shrewd eyes while all the officers in Youzhou City hurriedly bowed deeply towards him.

"Commander, Your Majesty!"

Chapter 818: Killing Time

"In Taixia Country, the supreme officer of a province is a provincial governor; a province includes prefectures, the supreme officer of which is a prefectural governor. A prefecture includes cities, the supreme officer of which is a municipal major; a city includes countries, the supreme officer of which is a county magistrate."

"A country includes towns, the supreme officer of which is a town mayor; a town includes villages, the supreme officer of which is a village chief, which, as the smallest officer in Taixia Country is usually selected by the villagers themselves. It's an exiled class 7 official position!"

"Above provinces are military regions, the supreme officer of which is a military commander! The military commander is an influential supreme chancellor in Taixia Country. A military region always includes 4-9 provinces. Youzhou Province, Gaozhou Province, Mozhou Province, Tongzhou Province, Qiongzhou Province, Yanzhou Province, Huizhou Province and Chaozhou Province in the northeast of Taixia Country are under the jurisdiction of Northeast Military Region of Taixia Country!"

Zhang Tie was leaning against a deck chair in a pavilion of the garden of the inner chamber in Golden Light City. He was listening to the chapter "establishments" in the book "Regulations about Taixia Country" read by Beverly while eating the fruits which had been peeled by Linda. Fiona was standing behind Zhang Tie so as to let him rest on her half-exposed raised plump breasts by his head; meanwhile, she was gently massaging Zhang Tie's shoulders.

It was daytime in September. The hot sun was suspending high above their heads while the cicadas were chirping in the garden. Although the dog days of summer had passed, it was still almost 30 degrees Celsius in Yanghe River as it was at the end of the sultry summer. It would not turn cold in Yanghe Prefecture until

October.

The pavilion, where Zhang Tie and his wives were, was a hidden and tranquil place in the garden of their inner chamber, which was surrounded by rockeries, streams, springs, verdant bamboos and willows. They could only access to this pavilion through a path that was led to the place behind the rockeries.

Zhang Tie's mom had recovered a bit lately. Just now, after serving his mom with medicine and watching her fall asleep, Zhang Tie left the main room and returned to his inner chamber. He was killing time with his three wives in the pavilion in case of heat stroke. His three energetic sons had been taken away by some children education experts, who played various games with Zhang Tie's nephews and nieces in the playground of the backyard. By playing games, they learned happily.

With the knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie could hear children laughing and playing in the backyard although he was in the inner chamber.

When he stayed with his three sons at home these couple of days, only after half an hour, Zhang Tie would ooze sweat all over. As for Zhang Tie, it was more difficult than handling some Three-eye Association knights. The three little guys even felt that this man called papa was boring as he could tell few stories and play few games. Therefore, Zhang Tie realized that he was not good at playing with kids. In normal times, besides teaching them about martial arts, he mainly let his mother or babysitters or teachers play with them.

Elder Muyuan had not been here for a few days. It seemed that he wanted Zhang Tie to relax himself for a few days at home.

After living in Taixia Country for so many years, Fiona, Beverly and Linda had learned to speak as fluently as Hua people. Besides, they knew "Regulations about Taixia Country" much better than Zhang Tie. After knowing that Zhang Tie wanted to learn about

the contents in the "Regulations about Taixia Country", Beverly took one version and interpreted it for Zhang Tie.

When he heard the Northeast Military Region Headquarters, Zhang Tie, whose mouth had been foisted with a watery lychee by Linda, became faintly dumbfounded as he widely opened his eyes. He even forgot to chew, "F*ck, you mean, a commander of a military region in Taixia could govern many provinces. Isn't it similar to govern some sub-continent? How powerful it is!"

"Of course. Taixia is the most powerful human country!" Beverly threw a pleasant look at Zhang Tie before saying, "Don't interrupt me!"

"Alright, alright, go ahead, go ahead..." Zhang Tie replied with a smile as he realized that he might not see the shy look of Beverly who had become a mother until now.

As it was hot and they were in the inner chamber, Linda, Fiona and Beverly just wore a thin, one-piece short-arm skirt with rich Hua characteristics, which had a narrow upper part and a wide lower part. There was a tiny boob tube top inside the skirt. Their waists were lightly tied with two waistbands. Besides half-exposed plump breasts, their milk-like delicate skins were looming under the thin skirt yarn. Although being not coquettish, they were definitely super hot moms before the Catastrophe.

Zhang Tie sighed with full moods inside, 'That's what I always dreamed of.'

"The officials in Taixia Country are divided into 10 classes and 19 ranks. Class 10 is immortal which is usually conferred to the three top chancellors of Taixia Country, namely, the Dasima who's responsible for the army and warfares of the country, the Dasitu who's responsible for the political affairs of the country and the Dasikong who's responsible for national supervision, education, rituals and sacrifice. Those officials from class 9 to class 1 are further divided into 18 ranks; each class contains two ranks,

namely, *** or deputy***. Besides the 19 ranks of the 10 classes, there were additional exiled 9 ranks, which were conferred to civil servants on all levels in Taixia Country. In Taixia Country, besides officials and civil servants who could be granted with classes and ranks, all the other technicians who have special abilities and made excellent contradictions to Taixia Country in one industry would also be awarded with classes and ranks..."

...

After 2 hours, the sun started to move towards the west. When Beverly was reading the "Chapter of City Construction", Zhang Tie's ears moved as he instantly sprung up from the comfortable deck chair and rapidly kissed his three young and beautiful wives, "Mom is going to wake up. I have to prepare the medicine before the supper for her!" Zhang Tie said as he threw a glance at the three women with a lascivious look, "Hmm, your dress looks nice. I've not imagined that you could look so nice in Hua clothes. Remember to wear these sets of clothes when you work tonight. Don't be lazy..."

"You're disgusting..." The three hot moms uttered a womanly voice in unison. Zhang Tie then burst out into laughter and trotted away from this pavilion towards the kitchen of the main courtyard.

...

Within half an hour since Zhang Tie left his inner chamber, two black limos had driven into the gate of the Zhang's mansion.

When the two limos parked outside the gate of the mansion, Zhang Yang and a gentle 50-year old man with three strips of mustache got off the first limo.

"Mr. Fan, please come in!" Zhang Yang invited the old man into the main courtyard politely.

The moment they entered the main courtyard, CEO Fan had

already seen a handsome juvenile at the age of 16 or so walking out of the parlor on one side with a bowl of medicine soup in hand.

The medicine soup seemed to have just been cooked as it was still steaming. The juvenile blew off the medicine soup so as to cool it down as he walked forward.

"Elder brother, you're back!" The juvenile greeted Zhang Yang casually before throwing a glance at CEO Fan and nodding towards him, "I've just cooked mom's medicine soup, I will send it to her right now!"

"Fine, how's mom today?"

"She's much better. After taking medicine in the morning, she took a walk in the garden for a while. She was spirited in the afternoon and felt much more powerful than yesterday!" Zhang Tie replied as he went upstairs with the medicine soup, causing a sound "Dong dong dong dong".

Hearing the dialogue between Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang, CEO Fan became stunned as he watched Zhang Yang with a dubious look, "This is..."

"This is Zhang Tie, my younger brother!" Zhang Yang smiled.

CEO Fan was shocked inside. He could never imagine that the juvenile who served medicine soup upstairs just now was Zhang Tie, the very one who would marry Fan's rich young lady.

Zhang Tie's look and what he was doing was out of CEO Fan's imagination greatly.

According to Zhang Tie's parents, Zhang Tie should have been 26 or 27 years old; however, given Zhang Tie's look, he was absolutely a juvenile; instead of a youth.

What made CEO Fan more shocked was that Zhang Tie was still doing what should be done by servants although having promoted to a knight.

"My mother feels not good lately. Coincidentally, my elder brother is back. Therefore, Zhang Tie serves my mom at home these days. He selects medicine in the drug storage and cooks it himself!" Zhang Yang explained.

Hearing Zhang Yang's words, CEO's eyes gleamed...

...

The chief household register officer of Fuhai City who urged to marry his daughter to one of Zhang Tie's three sons when he found Zhang Tie's sons were especially talented was a member of Fan Clan in Heavenly Water Prefecture of Yingzhou Province. Fan Clan was not a common clan in Yingzhou Province; instead, it was a local major clan. Fan Clan had 4 cities in Heavenly Water Prefecture. Although Fan Clan could not match Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace, it was deeply rooted in Taixia Country. In some aspect, Fan Clan was a bit more powerful than Zhang Clan.

Due to this marriage relationship between Fan Clan and Zhang Clan, Fan Clan's Darun Business Group had established trade ties with Zhang Clan's Jinwu Business Group. It was a win-win situation.

By the chance that Darun Business Group traded with Jinwu Business Group, Fan Clan dispatched a CEO to Zhang Clan. Besides completing the trade, they intended to fix the marriage between Zhang Tie and the rich young lady of Fan Clan. Although the male party could postpone a marriage, the female party could not. When ladies turned older, they would hardly marry a man.

At supper, although being gentle and graceful at the table, CEO Fan spent 20 minutes of half an hour in stealthily sizing up Zhang Tie.

As it was his first time to visit Zhang Clan, CEO Fan felt a bit weird as he found Zhang Tie being just a 16-17-year-old juvenile with 3 beautiful foreign wives on his side. Linda, although being coquettish, looked 2 times elder than Zhang Tie; she was more like

Zhang Tie's elder than his wife. However, Linda always watched Zhang Tie with a sweet expression.

Zhang's family members had been used to all of this; however, CEO Fan felt especially weird.

Almost the moment they finished the supper, Zhang Tie had become still for a second as he received the call-up through his elder's finger ring from Huaiyuan Palace.

"What happened?" Zhang Tie's mom asked out of concern when she noticed Zhang Tie's sudden changing face, although feeling much better.

"Huaiyuan Palace is calling up elders back in the Shrine Palace for something important. I've just received the call-up!"

"Now that Huaiyuan Palace is calling up, you can leave now!" Zhang Tie's dad immediately uttered with a sense of pride.

"Do you need your elder brother to arrange an airship or a vehicle for you?" Zhang Tie's mom asked out of concern.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "No need, I will fly, it's a bit faster!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie threw a glance at his elder brother, CEO Fan, Linda, Beverly and Fiona before walking out of the mansion. His family members saw him off.

After Zhang Tie promoted to a knight, none of his family members had seen him showing off his amazing flying talent, even when Zhang Tie returned home. After hearing that Zhang Tie was going to fly off himself, all of his family members and CEO Fan came out to see how he would fly off.

Linda, Beverly and Fiona came out of the mansion while cradling their kids. Zhang Tie's nephews and nieces also kept their widely opened eyes on him as they wanted to see their uncle "flying off".

After coming out of the mansion, Zhang Tie reminded his mom

to not forget to take the bowl of medicine soup before going to bed. After that, he pinched Zhang Chenglei's petite face and smiled. He then flew off immediately with a sparkling light in front of all of them.

"Look, uncle is over there!" Zhang Chengan said as he pointed at the sky.

All of them raised their heads and saw Zhang Tie waving his hand towards them from hundreds of meters high. Closely after that, with a lightning bolt, he flew towards Embracing Tiger City like a meteor.

Zhang Tie's family members were all shocked by the meteor; especially Zhang Tie's three sons, who were watching their dad performing "magic" in front of them with widely opened eyes.

"Is this a knight's strength?" Zhang Tie's dad watched the sky with a shocked look. He was stunned for a while, "Is this guy my son?"

'...Is this guy my younger brother?'

'...Is this guy my uncle?'

'...Is this guy my husband?'

Zhang Tie's family members were thinking the same thing. When Zhang Tie was at home, he was always easy-going. As a result, his family members usually forgot about his status as a clan elder; additionally, the status of clan elder was really a bit abstract for them. Until they saw Zhang Tie flying off in front of them, Zhang Tie's status and image as clan elder became vivid in their minds.

Chapter 819: Call-up

Zhang Tie slightly accelerated his flying speed. It took him a bit more than 20 minutes to arrive at Embracing Tiger City from Golden Light City.

Among the former 8 cities of Huaiyuan Palace in Waii Sub-continent, Yiyang branch built a new city in Yanghe Prefecture——Embracing Tiger City.

Geographically, Embracing Tiger City looked a bit similar to the former Yiyang City as they were both coastal cities and depended on marine trade. Yiyang City leaned against Yiyang Mountain while Embracing Tiger City cradled Embracing Tiger Mountain. Although Embracing Tiger City had just been established, its potential was greater than that of Yiyang City. The environment of Embracing Tiger Harbor was better than that of Yiyang Harbor. All this indicated that Huaiyuan Palace had spent a lot here.

The coastal area of Youzhou Province in the east was mountainous. Embracing Tiger Harbor was one of the two big harbors of Youzhou Province. Besides being used to develop marine trade with the other coastal provinces in the territory of Taixia Country, Embracing Tiger Harbor was also an important harbor hub that linked the Chaosang Sub-continent in the northeast of Eastern Continent to Taixia Country. It had a distinctive geographical strength, namely, exchanging south with the north in Taixia Country and link Chaosang Sub-continent, which was the real description of Embracing Tiger Harbor and the foundation of its prosperity.

During the period when he was in Golden Light City, Zhang Tie gradually learned about Youzhou Province and Taixia Country.

On the land, Youzhou faced a vast wild province in the north. Having not been established, the wild province only included some sparse small cities and human inhabited areas. The borders of the

wild province had not been clearly marked in the north, east and west. There were vast grey and black regions which had not been explored or developed in the wild province on the map. As the largest city in the wild province was called Liaocheng City, according to the customs of Taixia Country, the wild province was called Liaozhou Province for the time being.

The policy that Taixia Country adopted about wild provinces completely followed the thoughts of Taoism——take actionless action that had been carried on since ancient times. Taixia Country didn't dispatch any officer to wild provinces or levy a single copper coin from wild provinces. Wild provinces had to maintain the social orders themselves or depend on the bounty hunters of the local Bright Road Pavilion. With this policy, all the wild provinces across Taixia Country would develop at the fastest speed and display a great vitality. Wild provinces in Taixia Country always gathered various talents. Besides Gold and Power Law, all the other 6 of the top 7 major sects in Taixia Country occupied one wild province like the local emperors. Taixia's ruling power also made a compromise to the 6 major sects in this way.

Taixia Country treated lower provinces such as Youzhou Province with slightly stricter policies. However, it was still too loose compared to that of medium-sized or upper provinces. The imperial court of Taixia Country barely interfered with the underdeveloped regions and granted them with greater freedom than that of medium-sized or upper provinces. Take selecting provincial governor for Youzhou Province as an instance, only lower provinces could enjoy such a special treatment. In medium-sized or upper provinces, provincial governors were usually appointed by the imperial court, although there were also competitive relations between the candidates. The opinions of the imperial court were critical in appointing provincial governors for medium-sized provinces or upper provinces. As the 9 major immortal provinces of Taixia Country were directly affiliated to the imperial households of Taixia Country, their provincial

governors, namely imperial chancellors were directly appointed by Emperor Xuanhuan.

Chaosang Sub-continent was bizarre. After coming to Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie was told that Chaosang Sub-continent admired the prosperity and profound culture of Taixia Country so much that they would dispatch diplomatic corps to Taixia Country every year and requested to merge in the territory of Taixia Country. They expected Taixia Country to dispatch a provincial governor to Chaosang Sub-continent so that citizens in Chaosang Sub-continent could call themselves citizens of Taixia Country. In Zhang Tie's opinion, Taixia Country had no reason to refuse such a request. However, Zhang Tie was shocked by Taixia Country's response—all the imperial chancellors in the imperial court of Taixia Country directly ignored their request.

'Even Taixia Country was picky about benefits!' Zhang Tie finally learned about Hua people's honor and pride after arriving at Taixia Country.

The Embracing Tiger City at the foot was brightly lit and very boisterous at night. Even though other sub-continents were troubled with battle flames, Youzhou Province, as a remote lower province in Taixia Country, was still as prosperous as usual. The so-called holy war could not influence this place even a bit.

Zhang Tie was shocked by the greatness of Taixia Country.

Someone might have noticed Zhang Tie's arrival as a knight's qi loomed in the Embracing Tiger Mountain as if it was greeting Zhang Tie. After sensing that qi, Zhang Tie directly flew towards Embracing Tiger Mountain like having received a cruise signal.

A complex of pavilions and palaces with cyan tiles and flying eaves were seated in the most magnificent place of Embracing Tiger Mountain. Among the buildings, Zhang Tie caught sight of the Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace at once, which remained unchanged.

Elder Muen was waiting on the stage outside the gate of the Shrine Palace. Zhang Tie landed on the terrace outside the gate.

"Elder Muen!" Zhang Tie cupped his hands towards Elder Muen.

"Elder Mushen!" Elder Muen replied with a smile as he also cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie, "Congratulations! After a few years, given the momentum of Elder Mushen in the sky, I know that you've already made a great progress in cultivation base!"

"Thanks, Elder Muen!" Zhang Tie smiled modestly, "I wonder about the reason for calling us here."

"As Elder Mushen had just returned to Yanghe Prefecture from Waii Sub-continent and reunited with family members, Huaiyuan Palace would not call you up if not a major event. This event is about competing for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province; it's related to the development of Huaiyuan Palace in the next 100 years; therefore, we needed to call up all the elders of Huaiyuan Palace to negotiate with the next plan after receiving the message!"

Zhang Tie was shocked inside, "Have other elders arrived?"

"Elder Muray is in Liyuan City, which is a bit far from here. Besides Elder Muray, all the other elders have arrived!" Elder Muen replied.

Liyuan City was established by Huaiyuan Palace's Stars Viewing branch in the westernmost part of Yanghe Prefecture. After moving to Youzhou Province, the former Stars Viewing branch which ran the largest slave-trading center in Huaiyuan Prefecture restarted their slave trade in the Yanghe Prefecture. Non-Hua slaves also existed in Taixia Country. Additionally, the slave trade was legal here. Youzhou Province and Liaozhou Province were both vast but sparsely populated; especially Liaozhou Province, which had a high demand on slaves. Non-Hua people who sold themselves as slaves in the territory of Taixia Country and those slaves from Chaosang Sub-continent and the other sub-continent

even people in border regions of Taixia Country were greatly demanded in the slave trading market of Liaozhou Province and Youzhou Province.

After hearing Elder Muen's words, Zhang Tie nodded before entering the Shrine Palace.

After entering the Shrine Palace, Zhang Tie gasped in admiration. This Shrine Palace remained as same as before. When he entered it, Zhang Tie thought that he had returned to Yiyang Mountain.

"Elder Mushen..."

Elder Muyuan, Elder Muan and Elder Muyu had already arrived. Watching Zhang Tie coming in, they all moved their eyes on Zhang Tie and greeted him.

After greeting the three elders, Zhang Tie sat on his seat.

Those elders gasped in admiration about Zhang Tie's mediocre and majestic look, 'All knights are top elites!'

"Before Elder Mushen arrived, we were discussing the event in Waii Sub-continent. During those years when Elder Mushen guarded in Huaiyuan Prefecture, Hurricane Corps made a great progress; Huaiyuan Palace's interests in Waii Sub-continent were also guaranteed to the largest degree. In the holy war, Huaiyuan Prefecture ran in good order under the rule of Elder Mushen; our forces also evacuated from Huaiyuan Prefecture with the least losses among those major clans in Jinyun Country. Those border Hebrew people in Youzhou Province are eulogizing the majesty and mercy of Elder Mushen. Because Elder Mushen handled Huaiyuan Prefecture properly, those people are very docile; they settled down here soon. Elder Mushen has made the greatest contribution for Huaiyuan palace to settle down in Youzhou Province!" Elder Muan watched Zhang Tie and said seriously. The other two elders nodded at the same time.

Honestly, Zhang Tie's achievements were completely out of the elders' imaginations during those years when Zhang Tie guarded in Huaiyuan Prefecture; especially after making a contrast with that of the other major clans in Jinyun Country. In the later phase before Waii Sub-continent was collapsed by demons, after realizing that the methods adopted by Huaiyuan Palace were very effective, all the garrison elders and corps of the other major clans in Jinyun Country almost copied Zhang Tie's methods in Huaiyuan Prefecture, including the mode that he divided Hurricane Corps into three levels, the special military administration and circuit military courts that he adopted in garrison cities, even stabilizing refugees' heart by providing free porridge to them. They made the same nice achievements. After his rotating chakra ceremony, Zhang Tie's reputation spread over the major Hua clans in Jinyun Country and Qilan Country once again, making Huaiyuan Palace extremely outstanding.

"In the battle, you defended demons and strengthened forces; in defense, you stabilized commoner's hearts and created wealth. Elder Mushen, you indeed made great achievements during the period when you guarded Waii Sub-continent!" Elder Muyu praised as he stroked his mustache.

"I was just lazy. All the achievements that I made were benefited from the forever majesty of Huaiyuan Palace and the dauntless commissioned officers and soldiers of Hurricane Corps. I believe that you would have done it better if you guarded it!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

Watching Zhang Tie being so humble and easy-going, the other elders liked him more. They started to approve Zhang Tie's position as a clan elder deep in their hearts. To be honest, even though Zhang Tie had promoted to a clan elder after the rotating chakra ceremony, the other elders still felt a bit uncomfortable to see him being on the equal footing with them. The achievements that Zhang Tie made during the period that he guarded Waii Sub-

continent helped him completely consolidate his place in Huaiyuan Palace.

"We heard that Waii Sub-continent had been turned into a hell by a black-robe knight Gorath. As Elder Mushen returned to Waii Sub-continent recently, can you tell us about the situation over there?" Elder Muyuan uttered while the 3 elders moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie once again.

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie exposed all the information that he heard about Waii Sub-continent from Sacred Iceland Kingdom.

After hearing such a miserable situation facing Waii Sub-continent, Elder Muyuan became speechless, Elder Muan let out a sigh of relief while Elder Muyu let out a deep sigh.

Closely after that, with two light beams outside the Shrine Palace, Elder Muray and Elder Muen entered with the familiar qis...

Chapter 820: The Conference

Knights could hear a sound clearly from hundreds of meters away with the powerful perception of knight's consciousness as long as the sound was not intentionally covered. Some knights who cultivated special secret methods could even hear farther. Therefore, Elder Muen had almost heard the talk about what happened in Waii Subcontinent between Zhang Tie and Elder Muyuan before entering the Shrine Palace. Even Elder Muray who came in the end also heard a part of their talk.

At this moment, besides the head of Zhang Clan, all the other 6 clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace had arrived at the Shrine Palace.

"I did not imagine that Waii Subcontinent would deteriorate into such a lifeless land being covered with Full Moons Demon Miasma only after we left Waii Subcontinent for a few years. I wonder whether Sacred Iceland Kingdom has been influenced by the miasma over Waii Subcontinent." Elder Muen asked Zhang Tie.

"As there is an ocean between Sacred Iceland Kingdom and Waii Subcontinent, the terrifying Full Moons Demon Misama didn't extend to Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Before I came back from Sacred Iceland Kingdom, I had issued an order to forbid people to land on Waii Subcontinent once again except for soldiers and other special forces who had to execute their tasks!" Zhang Tie answered.

"It seems that Sacred Iceland Kingdom don't need to worry about being attacked by demons in a short period. The accident in Waii Subcontinent makes Ice and Snow Wilderness a Shargri-la. Misfortune may be a blessing in disguise."

"If not the threat facing the Sacred Iceland Kingdom had been cleaned off for the time being, I might still be in Sacred Iceland Kingdom! I promised those guys in Ice and Snow Wilderness that I would fight demons to the death with them shoulder to shoulder. Trust is the coin of the realm. I was also worried about their safety

when I came to Sacred Iceland Kingdom. However, I had not imagined that the black-robe knight Gorath could have such a trump card. Benefited from that, I could return to Taixia Country without eating my words!" Zhang Tie gasped with admiration as he felt lucky. He performed his disguising ability to the utmost. Nevertheless, none of the elders at present could imagine that Zhang Tie was the very Gorath.

"Have you handled the affairs in Sacred Iceland Kingdom?" Elder Muray asked.

"Sacred Iceland Kingdom is just a combination of tribes and Ewentra Archipelago. The clan elders of those tribes and the major clans in Ewentra Archipelago are still managing the affairs in their own territory. I don't need to worry about that at all!"

Honestly, Zhang Tie felt a bit pleasant when he became the tsar of Sacred Iceland Kingdom. However, when he came to Youzhou Province, he found that a province of Taixia Country was almost as large as a subcontinent and a provincial governor governed the region as large as a subcontinent with military region commander who had extremely great power above them. After that, Zhang Tie's pleasure eased. Taixia even ignored the Chaosang Subcontinent who hoped to merge in Taixia Country and pay tax to Taixia Country, not to speak of a tiny Sacred Iceland Kingdom. 'Sacred Iceland Kingdom could only be a wild province in Taixia Country at most and I could only serve as a Class 6 Prefectural province in Taixia Country at most with the foundation of Sacred Iceland Kingdom, not to mention that Sacred Iceland Kingdom was in the north of the remote Waii Subcontinent.'

"Sacred Iceland Kingdom could serve as a trading center and connection between Eastern Continent and Western Continent and grow increasingly prosperous. It could also trade with Huaiyuan Palace and benefit both parties!" Elder Muan suggested while the other elders nodded at the same time. Zhang Tie also nodded.

Elder Muen let out a sigh, "There are so many unexpectations in

this holy war. The super demon corps which swept over Waii Subcontinent; the black-robe knight Gorath who exterminated so many Three-eye Association clans and released the terrifying ptomaine miasma over Waii Subcontinent; either the hundreds of millions of demonized puppets or the terrifying ptomaine miasma could topple over a sub continent. Whenever I thought about the current situation facing Waii Subcontinent, I would feel both lucky and worried. I feel lucky that Huaiyuan Palace left the lifeless land in advance and laid our foundation in Youzhou Province of Taixia Country; I'm worried that we cannot predict the progress of the holy war. We cannot see clearly the future of Huaiyuan Palace. In the holy war, numerous clans would be exterminated; numerous clans would grow prosperous at the same time. All the elders at present are shouldering responsibility for the prosperity of Huaiyuan Palace. There's a major event that could determine the future of Huaiyuan Palace, which Huaiyuan Palace have planned for a long time. We, as Clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace, should negotiate about it."

"Have the Northeast Military Region Headquarter of Taixia Country set the regulations about the selection of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province?" Elder Muyu asked.

"Yea, I've just received the message that Lord Cheng Honglie, the commander of Northeast Military Region Headquarter, had already arrived at Youzhou City, the capital city of Youzhou Province by an airship yesterday. He had already set the regulations about the selection of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province!" Elder Muen said.

Hearing Elder Muen's reply, all the others at present straightened up, including Zhang Tie. After throwing a glance over the other elders, Elder Muen continued, "Lord Cheng borrowed a special object from Heavens Fortune Sect—Heavens Ball. He will use this Heavens Ball to select the provincial governor of Youzhou Province."

"Heavens Ball? What's that?" Elder Muray asked while widely opening his eyes.

Elder Muen forced a bitter smile, "I don't know. I was just told that it was a treasure that Heavens Fortune Sect got from the earth-elements realm. A marvelous world and many eccentric objects could be imitated in this Heavens Ball. People could enter it by their spirits and souls and do whatever they want in the Heavens Ball just like how they do in the outside world. It's told that Heavens Ball was like a senior training field in Heavens Ball Sect, which was used for elders and disciples of Heavens Fortune Sect to compete in military skills or practice their battle skills. They could exert their utmost efforts in the Heavens Balls without concerning about losing their lives."

After hearing the introduction of the Heavens Ball, all the elders exchanged glances with each other. As they were in Waii Subcontinent, although they might have heard about the secret treasures of the 7 major sects of Taixia Country, they had not seen that before. Therefore, they all became stunned by this treasure.

This time, Zhang Tie was really shocked. Because he realized that the Heavens Ball was completely like the trouble-reappearance situations in trouble-reappearance fruits.

When Zhang Tie felt complex, he abruptly realized that one object of Heavens Fortune Sect, one of the seven major sects on Eastern Continent, was somewhat related to his biggest secret.

"Does Lord Cheng want all the candidate clans to fight in the Heavens Ball?" Elder Muyuan asked with a solemn look.

"Yes, I'm afraid so. As the holy war has broken out, it's the right time to select talents, especially in military skills. I was told that Lord Cheng was bold and dauntless. I'm afraid that he would have us fight the other Clan elders in the Heavens Ball. We will know the details when we arrive at Youzhou Province. According to the message from Youzhou Province, the powerhouses of candidate

clans who want to compete for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province have to arrive at Youzhou Province before 5th of October. The head of Zhang Clan has received the notice in advance. He has left the earth-elements realm for Youzhou Province. He would come back to Youzhou Province before 5th October. We will have to converge with our head before that date and help our head to ascend to the provincial governor of Youzhou Province. After that, our Huaiyuan Palace would be able to officially take over Youzhou City, the most magnificent city in Youzhou Province and control the surrounding hundreds of thousands of square miles of land; meanwhile, Huaiyuan Palace would become a clan with provincial governor in Taixia Country. Huaiyuan Palace's offsprings would be awarded as officials with certain classes and ranks by the head of Huaiyuan Palace..."

According to the explanation of Elder Muen, Zhang Tie gradually realized the importance of this competition for Huaiyuan Palace. It could be said that if Huaiyuan Palace won this competition, Huaiyuan Palace would have a great influence in Youzhou Province, even Taixia Country. As for a clan which had just rooted in a lower province of Taixia Country, the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province was of great significance.

If they won the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, they would have the entire Youzhou City, which meant that they would have the most prosperous region in Youzhou Province. Meanwhile, they would open a shortcut for their offsprings to promote to higher-class officials in Taixia Country and help Huaiyuan Palace root in Youzhou Province, even Taixia Country more deeply. The power, honor and interests being related to the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province really made people drool.

Besides Huaiyuan Palace, at least 7 powerful clans cast greedy eyes on the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, some of them had deep roots in Youzhou Province just like that of

Huaiyuan Palace. They were even a bit more powerful than Huaiyuan Palace.

As the first provincial governor of a lower province which had just been established, the first session would last 20 years, during which period, the provincial governor would have enough opportunities to lay a solid foundation for his clan and himself in a lower province. To put it straight, if any clan could take the position provincial governor of Youzhou Province, it would be the first clan in Youzhou Province for sure. The competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province was actually the competition for the number one clan in Youzhou Province in the future.

As it was a major event for Huaiyuan Palace, of course, Zhang Tie had to be the vanguard.

...

After Elder Muen introduced it, a question occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, "How many chakras have Commander Cheng formed?"

"Commander Cheng have already formed both earth chakra and water chakra. He's a shadow knight for sure!" Elder Muen answered with an admiration.

Zhang Tie's heart pounded as he took in a cold breath.

After black iron knights formed their earth-elements chakra, they would promote to earth knights; after forming their water-element chakra, they would promote to shadow knights, whose name originated from the changing feature of water. Water could form ocean, river, stream, dew, ice, mist, cloud, even disappear in the air. Water was colorless and variable. Therefore, those who had formed water-element chakra were called shadow knights.

Even the demon general who had almost promoted to an earth knight was unrivaled across Waii Subcontinent, Zhang Tie could not imagine how powerful was a knight who had formed his water-

element chakra.

After recalling his "weirdo" master Zhao Yuan and this Commander Cheng, Zhang Tie gasped with admiration inside, 'How many talents are there in Taixia Country...'

"A journey of a thousand miles begins with a single step. Elder Mushen, now that you could promote to a black iron knight at such a young age, as long as you could practice hard, Elder Mushen would definitely form the second chakra. You might even form the third chakra!" Elder Muan comforted Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie smiled, "Thank you for your auspicious words, Elder Muan. As for the cultivation road forward, it's a distant way, I could only explore it at my full efforts. As there are all sorts of scenery on the roadside, the cultivation road is not the only one which could lead me to a wonderful scenery in my life. It depends!"

All the other elders had not imagined that Zhang Tie could be so open-minded. Only a sorrowful look flashed by Elder Muyuan's face after hearing Zhang Tie's words...

Chapter 821: Creating a New Battle Skill

It was too late when Zhang Tie came back home from the Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace in Embracing Tiger Mountain. Zhang Tie had a new plan. However, as he found his parents had gone to bed, he didn't say it to them; instead, he went back to his inner chamber and had a big fun with his wives.

Beverly and Fiona were very diligent. After playing a game with Zhang Tie for almost one night, the three women finally fell asleep with a fatigued and satisfactory look.

Like charging, sleep was the best way for a person to recover his spiritual energy and vitality. Knights' sleep pattern was different than that of commoners.

Commoners' sleep was shallow. A part of the region and cortical tissue of commoners' brain was half excited in sleep, which consumed human's energy and vitality like an idling engine. Therefore, commoners would have a long sleep. Usually, it would take a commoner 7-8 hours to recover the vitality that he had consumed in the past day. There was a Hua phrase called sitting in repose with ones' eyes closed, the principle of which was that one could decrease the degree of excitement of a part of the region and cortical tissue of his brain by closing his eyes so that he could consume less physical and spiritual energy.

Knights' sleep pattern was different than that of commoners. Almost every knight had mastered a deep sleep skill when they promoted to knights. Like rapid charging, in such a deep sleep, it would take a knight only 3-4 hours to recover his spiritual energy better than that of commoners who would sleep 7-8 hours.

When he promoted to a knight, Zhang Tie had mastered a deep sleep skill. After his spiritual energy made a breakthrough once again, Zhang Tie's sleep skill further improved as he would enter a sleep state that he could not tell.

In this special sleep state, besides maintaining some senses and vigilance to the environment, his full brain and cortical tissue would enter an absolute tranquility. In this sweet and ethereal state, he didn't watch any dream or have any distracting thoughts like returning back to the huge placenta, which was comfortable and pleasant. Besides his consciousness becoming still, his guts seemingly started to "hold" things such as his qi, blood, vitality and spiritual energy, which formed and vanished in the dark quietly and established subtle relations with the energy between the sky and the land. They just quietly nourished, strengthened and purified his body; made him more vigorous and granted him with the greatest energy in the tranquility.

In such a quality sleep, Zhang Tie only needed to sleep 2 hours a day, which was many times more effective than sleeping 9 hours per day when he was in Blackhot City. Whenever he slept, he would feel like taking a special tonic. Whenever he woke up, his body and each surging point in his body would display a wholly new and great vitality, which always brought him a big surprise.

Sometimes, Zhang Tie even doubted that he only needed to take a nap one day in such a deep sleep mode so that he would root deeply in the ground and grow stronger like the big trees in the woods without having to do any cultivation or practice.

Now, Zhang Tie only needed to sleep 3 hours a day when he would feel being "full". After sleeping 3 hours, Zhang Tie would feel his vitality, qi and blood spilling out of his guts and being full of strength. He then could not fall asleep or become still any longer except for entering meditation. He could only radiate his brilliance. Zhang Tie didn't know whether other knights had the same feeling when they got up, he didn't know how to describe it. However, each time Zhang Tie got up, he would feel his body blooming like flowers and full of pleasure while another wholly new and nice day was coming.

...

It was September 19, when he woke up, Zhang Tie laid on the bed for a short while. After tasting the nice feeling of his blooming body, Zhang Tie opened his eyes.

It was 5 am. His bedroom was pitch-dark. It was still dark outside.

Linda was resting on his right arm; Fiona was lying on his chest; Beverly was leaning against his left arm. There was a pleasant complex smell in the room, which carried the fragrances of the three women's bodies and the faint, elegant fragrance of some purple rosemary in the vase. What was more, the smell of protein which had been sprayed by Zhang Tie also evaporated in the air.

The three women were in a sound sleep. Zhang Tie carefully drew his arms away from the heads of Linda and Beverly. After that, he moved Fiona's head onto the pillow lightly. He then kissed the three women's foreheads and covered the quilt for them before getting off the bed. After that, he left the bedroom and came to the outside bathroom. After taking a bath, he put on his clothes and left the room.

The female servants in the mansion would get up at 6 am. Therefore, it was pretty tranquil in the inner chamber. Besides those guards who were sticking to their posts, nobody else had gotten up in the mansion.

Zhang Tie came to the grassland in the backyard which had been covered with red maple. After warming up his body, he started to practice fist position slowly.

Zhang Tie moved slowly and naturally like moving clouds and flowing water. Although it didn't look powerful, it made onlookers comfortable. In the eyes of outsiders, Zhang Tie's fist position was nothing different than those performed by old men and women in the urban squares and parks in the morning.

After promoting to a knight, the so-called practice such as forming chakra or improving battle skills was always like deep

water flow, which could not be sensed by outsiders.

As a knight, he was always different than commoners. Only after practicing fist position for over 10 minutes, his invisible qi had gradually spilled out his body while all the red maple's leaves and twigs and grasses within 20 m swayed themselves along with Zhang Tie's movements with an extremely strong sense of rhythm. When Zhang Tie's hands were facing upward, those twigs, leaves and grasses would face upward; when Zhang Tie's hands were facing downward, those twigs, leaves and grasses would face downward; when Zhang Tie faced east, they would face east; when Zhang Tie faced west, they would face west. It seemed that there was an invisible line between Zhang Tie's hands and those twigs, leaves and grasses, causing them to move with Zhang Tie.

The morning dew jumped off the twigs, leaves and grasses; broke apart and evaporated, causing the area within 20 m to become misty and weird. With Zhang Tie's movements, the mist formed and disappeared from time and then in a very unpredictable way. Like a drawing board, it showed dragons and snakes in the mist time and then. If some rustic villagers witnessed this scene, they might fabricate some stories about mountain spirits and wild monsters.

Zhang Tie's elder brother Zhang Yang had stood over 20 m away from Zhang Tie and watched Zhang Tie practicing fist position for quite a while.

Over the past years, Zhang Yang had formed a stable daily routine. When he got up, he would always do morning exercise. However, he had not imagined that he could meet Zhang Tie here.

The moment Zhang Yang entered the backyard, he had been attracted by Zhang Tie's movements. Although Zhang Yang wanted to move closer, he was blocked by Zhang Tie's invisible qi wall over 20 m away.

Watching the twigs, leaves and grasses swaying with Zhang Tie's

movements and the changing mist beside Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang was more astonished than that when Zhang Tie flew off in front of him last night.

This was Zhang Yang's first time to see Zhang Tie practicing his battle skills over the past years.

Zhang Yang had no talent in cultivation. He could not identify which kind of fist position was Zhang Tie practicing. Although it was similar to iron-blood fist, it was different than that as it contained forming and vanishing intentions like the ebb and flow in Zhang Tie's movements and sudden pauses.

The forming and vanishing intentions were very terrifying. Zhang Yang could sense that as long as Zhang Tie liked, he could shatter everything around him including Zhang Yang himself. As he knew that Zhang Tie would never do that; therefore, he just felt relieved while watching Zhang Tie's performance on one side.

After practicing for a while, Zhang Tie moved to the original place and stood well. Closely after that, he leveled up his hands before his chest and let out a breath of relief while the surrounding mist disappeared at once. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang felt that the invisible qi wall disappeared too.

The stars in the sky had almost faded away while some rooms in the mansion had been lighted up. Some female servants were getting up.

Zhang Yang walked over there.

"What's this fist position? It did not look like the iron-blood fist that you usually practiced before." Zhang Yang asked.

"It's not the iron-blood fist. I was just warming up my limbs. It could relax tendons; stimulate the blood circulation and improve my health." Zhang Tie answered in a bashful way.

Actually, it was not a casual fist position. Zhang Tie attempted to simulate and reappear the cavitation effect that he had sensed

underwater using this fist position and battle skills. Zhang Tie had realized the great destruction of the cavitation effect, he thought that if his fist position and battle skills could be as destructive as that of the cavitation effect, it would be awesome. Even if common bubbles' formation and vanishment in water could make him unbearable, not to mention the formation and vanishment of battle qi and fists.

Zhang Tie lately realized that the situation that the five elements in his Five-element Ground-look Sutra were mutually generated and constrained was similar to the formation and vanishment of bubbles in water; therefore, he tried to simulate it just now. However, as he had not made it, Zhang Tie felt too bashful to tell his elder brother that he wanted to create an extremely powerful battle skill as it would be too amazing. Even knights could not create a battle skill, especially a powerful battle skill as easily as they would. Most of those battle skills that were popular in this world had two origins, the pre-historical secret skills that had been excavated by people from the underground world and the battle skills and martial arts of humans before the Catastrophe which modern humans had inherited and made the breakthrough. Iron-blood Fist belonged to the first category; the inheritance and breakthrough that Hua people had made to the battle skills and martial arts of humans before the Catastrophe led the humans. Although humans had created some battle skills in that age, very few of them were popular among humans and posed a great influence on humans. The creators of new battle skills were always masters of certain sects.

After hearing that Zhang Tie was just warming up his limbs, Zhang Yang forced a bitter smile, "Warming up limbs? That hurts my self-esteem so much! If you were warming up your limbs, we were practicing sh*t."

"Of course, elder brother is practicing something much better than me. When you promote to a knight, you could also warm up

your limbs!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's witticisms, Zhang Yang burst into laughter, "As you're here, how about guiding your elder brother's kungfu?"

"Fine, elder brother, just show it!" Zhang Tie replied as he moved a few steps back.

When in Blackhot City, before Zhang Tie graduated from the 7th National Middle School, his battle skills and cultivation were always guided by Zhang Yang. This time, although being completely opposite, the two brothers didn't feel anything wrong.

Zhang Yang was not talented in cultivation; additionally, he spent most of his time running Jinwu Business Group these years, he would have less time to cultivate. As for Zhang Yang, the battle skills and cultivation completely deteriorated into morning exercises. It was more like a lump of sh*t than being average in Zhang Tie's eyes. Any LV 9 demon fighter would kill Zhang Yang countless times.

Watching Zhang Yang's fist position, Zhang Tie completely gave up the idea of guiding him. 'Alright, no matter how much time elder brother will spend in battle skill, he could at most fight a LV 9 iron-armored demon to death. Don't waste time anymore. Just consider how to light more surging points! He should just take this battle skill as an aerobic exercise.'

After performing twice forcefully, Zhang Yang finally stopped when he started to ooze sweat over his forehead with a red face. After that, he watched Zhang Tie and asked with a bit pleasant look, "How do you feel about my Heavens and Land Palm?"

Rubbing his face, Zhang Tie answered, "Elder brother, do you remember how you described my fist position before? Ahh, I got it, it makes me excited. Your Heavens and Land Palm makes me too excited to provide you with any guidance!"

After being stunned for a second, Zhang Yang burst out into laughter, followed by Zhang Tie.

"I need to go to Youzhou City!" Zhang Tie said with a big smile, "As the selection of the provincial governor for Youzhou Province is going to be hosted in Youzhou Province by Commander Cheng, we elders have to go there; the Clan elders were talking about this last night!"

Zhang Yang stopped smiling at once as he asked, "Is it dangerous?"

"It's safe. It's said that Youzhou City is very boisterous. Therefore, I plan to take mom, dad and my wives there!"

"Together?" Zhang Yang became confused...

"Yup!" Zhang Tie nodded...

Chapter 822: The Traveller

"Dad and mom, have you been to Youzhou City?" Zhang Tie asked at breakfast. Zhang Tie's dad and mom stopped their chopsticks at once. Even Linda, Beverly and Fiona moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie's mom had recovered as she looked as spirited and healthy as before. Therefore, the family members were very happy. They talked and laughed, making the atmosphere in the dining hall very fervent.

Zhang Tie's and his elder brother's kids ate breakfast in their own inner chambers. As these kids' age and physical growth were inconsistent, their breakfasts were especially allocated by nutritionists according to their demands. Therefore, kids didn't eat breakfast together with adults.

"As we've just moved to Golden Light City, we've not been to Youzhou City yet!" Zhang Tie's dad threw a strange look at Zhang Tie when he was drinking black rice porridge, "Why do you ask this?"

"Haha, I'm free lately. As I've been outside so many years, I've not traveled with you for a long time. I just want to travel to Youzhou City with you. Additionally, I owe Linda, Beverly and Fiona a honeymoon. Therefore, I think we can have fun in Youzhou City for a few days and learn more folklore about Taixia Country!"

Closely after Zhang Tie's suggestion, Linda, Beverly and Fiona eyes were brightened up. Even Zhang Tie's mom sat up straight and looked interested in it. Zhang Tie's dad was greatly attracted by Zhang Tie's suggestion.

Although they had moved to Youzhou Province, as Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang had babies one after another, Zhang Tie's parents had spent most of the time with those babies at home. In the beginning, they lived in Fuhai City; later on, they moved to

Huaiyuan City; finally, they settled down in Golden Light City. Zhang Tie's suggestion was very attractive to all of them.

"Dad and mom, you can have fun outside for a few days. You don't need to worry about the domestic affairs. Mom, the doctor said you would recover faster if you could always take a walk!" Zhang Yang added on the other side, "As the capital city of Youzhou Province, Youzhou City is very boisterous. You can have fun there with Zhang Tie for a few days!"

"Didn't Huaiyuan Palace convene you yesterday?" Zhang Tie's mom asked Zhang Tie with a smile.

"Haha, mom knows me the best. The Northeast Military Region Headquarter of Taixia Country have fixed the regulations about competing for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province. At the beginning of next month, elders of Huaiyuan Palace will arrive at Youzhou City to help Huaiyuan Palace compete for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. We can travel there by the way!" Zhang Tie grinned cheekily.

"Ahh, the competition for the position of provincial governor is of great significance. Is it dangerous?" Zhang Tie's dad asked out of concern immediately.

"It's safe. It's told that the Commander Cheng of the Northeast Military Region Headquarter borrowed a treasure from a sect of Taixia Country, which will be used to select the provincial governor of Youzhou Province! It's very simple!" Zhang Tie put off his dad as it was unnecessary for him to explain the working principle of the Heavens Ball to his family members. "If it was dangerous, I would never ask you to go with me. Additionally, Youzhou City is more boisterous than before because of this selection. People from all areas of Youzhou Province will converge in Youzhou City. There must be a lot of fun and tasty food over there!"

"Will we go there by airship?" Zhang Tie's mom started to long

for that.

"Airship is boring. We cannot appreciate the roadside scenery. We will travel there by a touring car and stop wherever we want!"

"Touring car?" Although being surprised, they were more excited.

"Yup, there are highways and railways between Golden Light City and Youzhou City. It's just about 2,000 miles. Additionally, there are many rural areas and towns on the roadside which could serve as supply points. It's said that many people in Taixia just took a round in Taixia Country by touring cars all year round. They enjoyed traveling everywhere. We can also have a try. Buy a luxurious super touring car and travel all the way to Youzhou City. After that, we will travel all the way back."

Watching the brilliance in the eyes of his mom and the three women, Zhang Tie knew that this plan had been approved. As they were dreaming for that, if anyone dared say no at this moment, Zhang Tie believed that his parents would reprimand that one for sure.

...

However, Zhang Tie had not imagined that his mom and wives could be so excited; even if Zhang Tie's dad was driven mad by that. Soon after breakfast, they had rustled to buy a touring car in Golden Light City. Zhang Tie had a servant prepare a vehicle for his family members. After selecting a big car trading center, he drove those 5 people to that place.

Being a new city, Golden Light City's population could not match that of Golden Sea City. However, it was still vigorous. Driving in the streets of Golden Light City, Zhang Tie could see new stores, shopping malls and high buildings on roadsides. Even the urban residential area was well planned. The urban roads were broad with no traffic jam. Under the guidance of his dad, Zhang Tie had arrived at the biggest touring car shop in Golden Light City in less

than 20 minutes.

This touring car shop almost occupied half a football field. Being made of reinforced steel and iron frameworks, the entire shop looked modern, magnificent and nice.

The moment Linda, Beverly, Fiona and Zhang Tie's mom got off the car outside the touring car shop, a sales manager at his 50s had brightened up his eyes at the sight of the modern and noble women and Zhang Tie's car. He then instantly passed by some salesmen and walked towards them, "Madams, you're in the right place. We can provide you with the most complete types of touring cars and the best services. We can satisfy you whatever touring car you want. We can even customize one for you!"

Those women smiled before moving their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

"We will not see small types. Show us the best, largest, most luxurious and comfortable one which is suitable for family travel!" Zhang Tie said like a newly rich, causing them to burst out into laughter, including his mom.

...

Zhang Tie had seen touring cars in Waii Sub-continent. However, being restricted to traffic facilities and consumption capacity, very few people in Waii Sub-continent liked touring cars. Zhang Tie just saw 3-4 types of touring cars over there. However, this largest touring cars shop across Golden Light City greatly widened his horizon.

There were dozens types of touring cars in this shop.

As people were rich and lived well in Taixia Country, many of them chose to purchase touring cars. Most of those who were rich, free and liked to travel across Taixia Country to experience different natural sceneries and human cultures would choose a touring car. Even though they just stayed in one city, many families with good economic conditions would also purchase a

touring car for family travel. This point could never be matched by Waii Sub-continent.

When they arrived, there were already some groups of people selecting touring cars in the shop. That sales manager directly led Zhang Tie's group to the exhibition hall with the largest touring cars.

All the touring cars were longer than 15 m with odd types.

It seemed that his family members had reached a tacit understanding. The moment they arrived there, Zhang Tie's family members had focused on the same, most special touring car.

Being very huge and nice, that yellow and green touring car was longer than 20 m. Its type was very exquisite. Like a cute caterpillar which had been enlarged for so many times, the car's body rested on 4 rows of 1.7-m high tires. The entire touring car was about 7-8 m in height. The car's chassis was over half a meter high. It seemed to have a great gradeability. Looking through the windows, they found that the inner space of the touring car was divided into two floors. There was a sightseeing platform with a movable, transparent dome made of reinforced steel...

"You really have a good taste. This "Traveller" is the best and the most luxurious touring car in our shop. It's suitable for an over 10-people's travel. Given its chassis, you would know that this car could almost match off-road vehicles in trafficability and road adaptability. Not only that, its internal design would make your travel pleasant and comfortable..."

...

The inner space of the "Traveller" was completely like a miniature palace, which was both luxurious and comfortable. It was matched with a parlor, a kitchen, a bar, a sightseeing platform and 4 bedrooms which were in different cabins and a toilet which was satisfactorily designed. They would not face any "embarrassing" situation in the travel.

The touring car had a good performance. It could reach a speed of 70 miles per hour. It could run more than 250 miles in one-time.

In a few minutes, after looking around the touring car from both inside and outside and watching the happy looks of his mom and wives, Zhang Tie asked, "How much?"

"Each detail about this touring car is perfect. Its internal materials are of great learning; especially those immortal fantastic ice cubes in the insulating layer of the refrigerator of the touring car which are of a high price, this touring car is a bit expensive!" The sales manager replied as he stealthily glanced at Zhang Tie and his wives, "If you want to pay off it in one-time, you need to pay 27,600 gold coins!"

After the sales manager finished his words, Zhang Tie and his mom almost uttered at the same time...

Zhang Tie, "So cheap!"

Zhang Tie's mom said, "Ahh? So expensive!"

Noticing his mom's glare, Zhang Tie hurriedly coughed twice, "Erm...it's indeed a bit expensive!"

In the next 10 minutes, Zhang Tie shut up. Through bargaining with the sales manager, they finally fixed the deal with 27,460 gold coins.

Zhang Tie paid it off at present. In the afternoon, a wholly new "Traveller" was driven into Zhang's mansion.

...

On the morning of September 21, Zhang Tie happily drove his parents, wives and three kids away from Golden Light City towards Youzhou City...

When the touring car was running on the ground, it was followed by a fury-level airship in the sky, which would provide them with logistics at any time. What an extravagant travel...

Zhang Tie had not watched the brilliant smiles of his family members for a long time.

...

Right on the same day, All the elders were shocked so much by that message that Zhang Tie was taking his family members to Youzhou City by a touring car that they became speechless for quite a while.

Chapter 823: An Encounter by the Riverside

Golden Light City was over 2,000 miles away from Youzhou City. It was vast but sparsely populated with beautiful scenery on the way. However, it was not wild. In each dozen miles, there would be a village or inn along the roadside for the convenience of vehicle replenishment. They could occasionally enjoy Hua food with extremely distinctive local features. Since they left Golden Light City on September 21st, Zhang Tie and his dad would drive the touring car alternatively, each one a few hours per day. Whenever they found a fun place somewhere, they would park and loiter over there. Sometimes, Zhang Tie would go hunt some wild animals such as pheasants and made a barbeque on the sightseeing platform of the vehicle. The family enjoyed the trip so much.

On the second day, since they left Golden Light City, Zhang Tie's mom had completely recovered with higher spirit and greater strength. Watching his mom becoming better, Zhang Tie knew that it was a right trip.

After leaving Golden Light City for 10 days, on the evening of 1st October, their "Traveller" had reached at plain being less than 200 miles away from Youzhou City.

In the twilight, when they watched the grass waves in the breeze and the wild antelopes eating grass being not far away in the endless prairie, Zhang Tie drove off the highway and parked it at the bank of a shallow river beside the road. The limpid river water could only reach his knees. The river shoal was covered with cobblestones. This place was suitable for cooking food and having a rest.

"Dad and mom, how about sleeping here tonight?" Zhang Tie turned around his head and shouted towards the sound-transmitting brass pipe on his side. Zhang Tie's family members were appreciating the beautiful scenery on the sightseeing platform at the top of the touring car. When the touring car drove

off the highway, Zheng Chenglei, Zhang Chengting and Zhang Chengpei exclaimed in the sightseeing platform.

"Fine, your mom agreed to sleep here tonight!" Zhang Tie's dad replied through the other end of the brass pipe together with Zhang Chengting's exclamation.

Previously, Zhang Tie had just seen a sound-transmitting brass pipe in an airship, he had not imagined that there was also such a facility in the touring car. How considerate it was!

Zhang Tie braked on a plain ground over 20 m away from the riverside and adjusted the power boiler to parking state. Closely after that, he opened the door of the car and jumped out of it.

Zhang Tie went to the riverside to check the quality of the river water first. After finding it was clean, he took a barrel from the vehicle and started to fill the barrel with river water for the power boiler of the touring car. If in a motel, he only needed to link the touring car with a water pipe. However, as it was in the wild, he had to lift water from the river. Additionally, they needed water to wash vegetables in the kitchen and cleanse themselves before bed. Water became especially important in the wild.

When Zhang Tie filled the barrel with water, his three sons couldn't wait to run away from the sightseeing platform and started to catch fish in the river. Zhang Tie's dad took a fish pole and urged that he would compete with the three kids for catching fish.

It was full of cheers and laughter.

When Zhang Tie charged water for the touring car, he dug a pit on the ground near the touring car to bury the boiler ash. After doing this heavy labor work, the ladies had prepared the dinner. On the sightseeing platform of the touring car, they opened its movable sunroof and watched the beautiful scenery in the distance while enjoying the supper in the pleasant night breeze under the twilight.

The competition between Zhang Tie's dad and the three kids ended with Zhang Tie's dad catching over 30 cm-long fish. Therefore, they had one more fresh fish soup.

...

After supper, Zhang Tie washed bowls. After Linda, Beverly and Fiona cleaned the table, he carried a pile of bowls and chopsticks to the riverside and carefully washed them.

Only after a few minutes, ground-breaking clops drifted to Zhang Tie's ears from the distance of the plain. Zhang Tie was still washing his tableware. Zhang Chenglei, Zhang Chengting and Zhang Chengpei who were playing beside the vehicle were called in the car by Linda and Zhang Tie's mom.

Taixia Country had a very good security. After traveling for a few days, they had not met any bad people. However, as it was in the wild, they'd better watch out. It seemed that the clops came from a team of cavalries. After hearing the thunder-like clops, the flock of wild antelopes in the distance were scared away in a flurried way.

Only in a few minutes, the thunder-like clops had drawn closer. The clops didn't stop until they reached the riverside.

It was a team of over 50 Hua cavalries. It seemed that they had long known about this river. They just came here to let their mounts drink water, which were bigger and stronger than iron-horn beasts with a bent horn on their head.

As Zhang Tie washed his tableware, he observed those people and their mounts over 20 m away.

The heads of the team of cavalries were two youths, followed by those ferociously intrepid cavalries. What was more attractive was their mounts which were bigger and stronger than iron-horn beasts with a bent horn on their head. Those mounts looked very mighty.

Zhang Tie knew that this animal was called rhino-dragon horse.

It was a LV 6 living being. Like xiphodon, this kind of animal was much more ferocious than iron-horn beasts. However, xiphodon was a carnivore while the rhino-dragon horse was a herbivore, which meant that rhino-dragon horse was more senior. In Eastern Continent, the rhino-dragon horse was the standard mount of Taixia's cavalries. Except for very few special troops, all the cavalries across Taixia Country rode rhino-dragon horses. Zhang Tie heard that there was a huge military breeding farm of rhino-dragon horses outside Youzhou City. There were 600,000 rhino-dragon horses in the entire military breeding farm. Such a scale could never be matched by Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Many provinces in Taixia Country were feeding rhino-dragon horses. Rhino-dragon horses were also slightly different in abilities in different regions due to different living environments, breeds and lineages. Rhino-dragon horses in Youzhou Province ranked top in the territory of Northeast Military Region of Taixia Country. It was well-known even across Taixia Country.

A common rhino-dragon horse would be worth over 600 gold coins in Taixia Country. Special rhino-dragon horses would be worth more. Rhino-dragon horse was very important in the foreign trade of Youzhou Province. Over 400,000 rhino-dragon horses would be sold out from Youzhou Province every year, which meant a total trade volume of about 300 million gold coins. After arriving at Youzhou Province, Huaiyuan Palace had intended to trade rhino-dragon horse. Until then, Huaiyuan Palace had not gotten through the joints of this business. If Huaiyuan Palace could help Zhang Taixuan win the position provincial governor of Youzhou Province, those problems facing Huaiyuan Palace, especially the source of rhino-dragon horse would be handled immediately.

Zhang Tie and was glancing at those cavalries and rhino-dragon horses on the other bank of the river. Those cavalries were also gazing at Zhang Tie. However, when they caught sight of that touring car and Zhang Tie who was washing bowls on the

riverside, they lost their interest in Zhang Tie at once.

"Brother Cangwu. What do you think about the rhino-dragon horse in the military breeding farm of Youzhou Province?" One of the two young men on the other bank asked, which could be clearly heard by Zhang Tie.

"Rhino-dragon horse in Youzhou Province could run 700 miles a day. They're indeed as excellent as their reputation. Whereas, they were still a bit dwarfed by those in Jianzhou Province, Hezhou Province, Liangzhou Province and Ganzhou Province in speed and endurance. Compared to those in Chuanzhou Province, Tangzhou Province and Yunzhou Province, these rhino-dragon horses don't take advantage in carrying capacity. If they could be further modified and make a further breakthrough in one aspect, they might enter the list of top horses in Taixia Country!"

"It's not easy to modify a horse breed. Very few animal controllers could have such a talent. It depends!" The youth sighed.

"Hahaha, brother Tianqi is right. I'm more like an armchair strategist!"

"Brother Cangwu's opinion goes right to the heart of the matter and matches that of Commander Cheng. If you're an armchair strategist, the think tank of Commander Cheng would be driven mad."

"I'm flattered. It's late. Let's go back!"

"Fine, the rhino-dragon horses have drunk enough, let's go back to Youzhou City then..."

The two young men threw another glance at Zhang Tie before turning around the heads of the rhino-dragon horses and leaving, closely followed by the team of cavalries...

Few minutes after those people left, Zhang Tie finished washing his tableware and returned to the touring car with them.

"Hubby, who are they? They look aggressive!" Fiona asked him

while patting her plump breasts.

"They might be cavalries in Youzhou City!" Zhang Tie answered.

When he replied, the two youths' faces flashed across his mind once again. Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside. 'Taixia is really full of talents and resources. It could never be matched by Waii Sub-continent. I met two young Hua knights even when I washed bowls at the riverside. I really have not seen anyone who could promote to knight at such a young age in Waii Sub-continent except for me.'

...

After over 1 hour, that team of cavalries had been over 70 miles away from the riverside. Suddenly the young man called Cangwu grabbed the rein. With a neigh, his rhino-dragon horse suddenly raised high its front legs and stomped onto the ground forcefully. Closely after that, it stopped.

As the other cavalries were very good at horsemanship, watching this young man stop, the entire team stopped in a split second.

"Brother Cangwu, what's wrong?"

"Nothing, I was just recalling something. It's okay; it's okay!" The young man called Cangwu revealed a smile. Without giving any explanation, he continued to gallop his rhino-dragon horse. After exchanging a glance with each other, the others followed him up towards Youzhou City at once.

The scene that Zhang Tie was washing tableware at the riverside always loomed in Cangwu's mind.

'The 16-year old boy was too calm.'

'That young man didn't even stand up when he watched us galloping towards him until we left...'

'He just squatted down there...'

'Squatting down there... all the way!'

'This is where the problem lies!'

'Youzhou City is becoming more and more boisterous these days!'

The younger elites of Heavens Fortune Sect sighed with emotions inside...

...

It felt very special sleeping overnight in the wild. In the evening, after closing the sunroof of the sightseeing platform, they could watch the countless stars in the sky as long as they lay in their bedrooms.

There were 4 bedrooms in the touring car, two 2-people bedrooms, one 3-people bedroom and one 5-people bedroom. Zhang Tie, Linda, Beverly and Fiona lived in the 5-people bedroom; his dad and mom lived in the 2-people bedroom while the 3-people bedroom was for the 3 kids.

Zhang Tie put his arms around the necks of Linda, Beverly and Fiona on the bed and watched the stars. Zhang Tie talked about the embarrassing things that he did in Blackhot City and the 7th national male middle school, especially when he went for Ms. Anna, which made the three women giggle for quite a while.

"Well, well, I was doubting how could you be that docile when joining the survival training in Wild Wolf Valley. We thought that you were a gentleman. It doesn't seem now!" Beverly smiled.

Zhang Tie's face blushed faintly as he replied, "Ahem...ahem...I was very innocent at that moment. I indeed had no evil thought!"

"What about now?" Fiona watched Zhang Tie with an enchanted look while her hands started to fumble over Zhang Tie's body.

As it was turning cold outside, Zhang Tie's room turned hot...

What satisfied Zhang Tie the most was this touring car's expert-level sound insulation...

...

On the second day, after catching fish with the three kids in the

morning, they set off once again in the afternoon.

When the night fell on October 2nd, they finally arrived at Youzhou City.

Although not being rustic, Zhang Tie was still stunned for quite a while when he caught sight of Youzhou City for the first time.

When people saw a Class A city in front of them since they came to Taixia Country, they would definitely be greatly shocked.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, Youzhou City was really large.

This was a shocking, magnificent city.

In the nightscape, the shocking light effect of the immortal fluorite lamps on the city walls made Youzhou City a huge fortress made of jadeites...

The airships above Youzhou City were as many as crucians in the river. What a dreamlike, prosperous city!

...

Chapter 824: Count Long Wind

Zhang Tie's family arrived at Youzhou City on the evening of October 2nd. In less than 3 days, the competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province would start. The entire Youzhou City had become the focus of everybody in Youzhou Province as all the talents across Youzhou Province had gathered in Youzhou City. Besides those clans which wanted to compete for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, even though those who wanted to join the fun and take advantage had also converged in Youzhou Province.

The selection of the first provincial governor of Youzhou Province was of great significance to all the people across Youzhou Province. Additionally, Commander Cheng also came here by airboat. It was said that the Heavens Ball of Heavens Fortune Sect was also carried here. Due to various reasons, Youzhou City was as hot as holding a grand lantern festival, which was even more boisterous than the new years festival.

Actually, Zhang Tie was the latest elder of Huaiyuan Palace who arrived at Youzhou City.

Yesterday, Elder Muyuan, Elder Muan, Elder Muray, Elder Muyu and Elder Muen of Huaiyuan Palace had arrived at Youzhou City by airship on the same day, including Count Long Wind Zhang Taixuan, the head of Huaiyuan Palace who had just come from the earth-elements realm.

Actually, someone was more worried whether Zhang Tie could arrive at Youzhou City on time more than Zhang Tie himself.

When Zhang Tie was about 10 miles away from Youzhou City, he had already met some deacons of Huaiyuan Palace who were raising their heads and waiting for him.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's touring car, those deacons and disciples almost burst out into tears.

"God bless us!" They had arrived at Youzhou City earlier than elders; especially those clan deacons and disciples who were ready to receive Zhang Tie, who had been waiting for Zhang Tie outside Youzhou City for almost a week.

As Zhang Tie left Golden Light City by a touring car, they didn't know when would he arrive at Youzhou Province. Therefore, these deacons and disciples just waited here for him. As Zhang Tie was very engrossed in this travel, they dared not urge him. If they made Elder Mushen unhappy, they would never dream about having a bright future in Huaiyuan Palace. However, if Elder Mushen was late and failed to join this competition timely, they, who were responsible for receiving Zhang Tie, would definitely be regarded as being incompetent and would not have a bright future in Huaiyuan Palace either, the other clan elders might not reprimand Elder Mushen though; they might even be severely punished due to this.

They had almost been driven mad when Clan head arrived yesterday.

When they caught sight of the touring car "Traveller" with the driving plate of Golden Light City of Yanghe Prefecture 12345 on the highway, they finally became reassured.

They waved their hands to block the touring car. Zhang Tie then jumped out of his cab swiftly.

Zhang Tie felt that he had seen them on Yiyang Mountain before.

"You're..."

"Elder Mushen, I'm Zhang Desheng, a clan deacon of Huaiyuan Palace. We're dispatched here to receive you!" That deacon and three disciples bowed towards Zhang Tie respectfully. At this moment, only the deacon was qualified to speak; the other 3 disciples didn't even have a chance to introduce themselves.

"Hmm, it's late. I'm thinking about finding an inn!" Zhang Tie

smiled as he let out a sigh of relief.

"Huaiyuan Palace has a mansion in Youzhou City. We will take you there right now, Elder Mushen!" Zhang Desheng said as he threw a glance at the touring car behind Zhang Tie. He then pointed at the Faerie-Dragon elder-level cars behind him, "Would Elder Mushen and family members like to take a ride in these cars? I will have a disciple drive the touring car into the mansion!"

"No need. You can just lead the way in front of us. I will follow you!" Zhang Tie jumped into the touring car once again after saying that.

The deacon and the 3 disciples threw a glance at each other as they had not imagined that Zhang Tie was so easygoing. Without saying anything, they just got on the cars and escorted Zhang Tie's touring car towards Youzhou City.

In the touring car, a small window behind Zhang Tie's cab was opened, showing his dad's face.

"Zhang Tie, what happened?"

"Nothing, dad, some deacon and disciples of Huaiyuan Palace were waiting for me!"

"Hmm, fine!" Zhang Tie's dad let out a sigh of relief obviously, "Your mom wants to know whether will we live in the car or in a hotel tonight?"

"Huaiyuan Palace have a mansion in Youzhou City. We will go to the mansion of Huaiyuan Palace!" Zhang Tie answered as he turned around his head.

"It's crowded on the way, watch out when you drive!"

"Don't worry, dad. I could even drive with closed eyes!" Zhang Tie replied casually like talking something big.

"You, bad boy!" Zhang Tie's dad forced a bitter smile before closing the window.

Zhang Tie then followed the limos in Youzhou City.

Before entering Youzhou City, Zhang Tie raised his head and watched the towering city wall as he drew in a cold breath. The city wall was above 70 m in height. The deep passage beneath the city wall was at least 100 m in strength.

Higher than 70 m, wider than 100 m and longer than 25 miles. Zhang Tie had not seen or heard such a magnificent city wall before. He could imagine about the terrifying defense capability of such a city wall.

In Waii Sub-continent, all the city-defense forces had camps and encampments inside cities; however, in Taixia Country, all the city-defense forces lived in the city walls. City walls were both an urban defense facility and the camp of Taixia soldiers. In Taixia Country, except for the camps of city-defense forces, all the other city-defense forces were built outside the cities.

This was the "military code" in "Regulations about Taixia Country". Taixia soldiers' responsibility was to protect the country and the cities; instead of being protected by the country and the cities. Therefore, no camp would be stationed in cities across Taixia Country as it would be regarded as a shame by Taixia soldiers. Brave Taixia soldiers regarded quartering camps at dangerous places as a great honor and responsibility. The more dangerous the camps were stationed in, the higher respect those troops would have in Taixia Country. Among humans, only Taixia Country had established troops based in the earth-elements realm.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Youzhou City could be so boisterous and prosperous; especially in the evening when the big Youzhou City was brightly lit and crowded with vehicles on the roads. Roadside hotels were filled with a confused noise of voices; righteous and heroic men were drinking and knocking jars while singing songs generously; playboys were calling their friends and partners in the restaurants; female dancers in colorful frocks were contending in beauty and fascination, who were surrounded by

many playboys; acrobats were showing off all sorts of talents on the streets and attracting a lot of onlookers.

Zhang Tie had not seen such a prosperous and boisterous scenery in such a magnificent city before. It was the most vivid exhibition in Taixia Country.

Although it was Zhang Tie's first time to see all this, Zhang Tie always felt everything here being very intimate perhaps because of his blood and genes of Hua people.

...

Huaiyuan Palace's mansion was located nearby an unknown avenue in Youzhou City. Occupying over 66,700 square meters, it was pretty magnificent.

It took Zhang Tie more than half an hour to arrive here under the guidance of the Faerie-dragon vehicles.

There was a huge 5-6 m long board on the front gate of the mansion, which was marked with four big, powerful golden Hua characters "怀远会馆 1".

The characters reminded Zhang Tie of the scene when he raided the Zhen's Mansion in Heavens Cold City. After making a comparison with it, Zhang Tie sensed a vicissitude.

However, the moment Zhang Tie's vehicle arrived at Huaiyuan Mansion, he had sensed a weird atmosphere around the front gate of the mansion—at least 7-8 groups of people were gazing at those people accessing to Huaiyuan Mansion. Zhang Tie realized that they must be dispatched by Huaiyuan Palace's opponents. Those people just gathered on the streets within 100 m of the front gate of Huaiyuan Mansion fearlessly while pretending to taste the tea and sell goods on the roadside; some even directly squatted down on the opposite of the street and gnawed fruits while stealthily throwing a glance at the Huaiyuan Mansion time and then.

Until Zhang Tie drove in the mansion were those eyes isolated by the courtyard walls and tree shadows did Zhang Tie feel a bit comfortable.

Zhang Tie parked in the parking lot. His family members then got off the touring car and glanced over here with curious looks.

"Huaiyuan Mansion doesn't look bad!" Zhang Tie's dad said pleasantly when he looked around this mansion which was almost like a park.

"Have you prepared for the bedrooms?" Zhang Tie asked Deacon Zhang.

"The mansion has prepared an exquisite courtyard for Elder Mushen's family members. All the female servants in it are loyal to Huaiyuan Palace. Elder Mushen can use them at your will!"

"Fine, lead us there then!" Zhang Tie waved his hands while Deacon Zhang led them to an exquisite courtyard beside the lake inside the mansion. It was as delicate as their own courtyard. Given that Zhang Tie took his 3 kids here, there was even a mini children's playground on the lawn. Zhang Tie's parents and wives were also very satisfied with the designs.

After settling down his family members, Zhang Tie left that exquisite courtyard and told that deacon to lead him to the other clan elders and the head of Huaiyuan Palace.

The other clan elders and the head of Zhang Clan were rightly negotiating something in the conference room of the mansion.

When he realized that he would meet Lan Yunxi's dad for the first time, Zhang Tie became a bit intense.

...

"Clan head, elders, Elder Mushen has arrived!"

After hearing a deacon's report, the 6 elders in the conference room stopped talking at once.

"Call Elder Mushen in!" A man in the chief seat of the conference room issued an order faintly.

"Yes, sir!" The deacon exited.

...

After over 10 seconds, under the gaze of 6 pairs of eyes, Zhang Tie entered the conference room frankly and saw Zhang Taixuan the Count Long Wind, the head of Huaiyuan Palace for the first time...

Chapter 825: Why Not Replace him?

At the sight of Zhang Taixuan, Zhang Tie had found that Lan Yunxi was similar to him.

To be honest, if Zhang Tie was requested to select a middle-aged man who was the most charming to women, Zhang Tie would choose Zhang Taixuan first.

Given his look, this man was between 40 and 50 years old. Besides, he had a pure white and flawless face, well-combed hair, sparkling eyes and the dignity as the head of a major clan and a gentleman.

Although Zhang Taixuan didn't look strong, he had an extremely powerful qi field among those elders in this room. After sensing it carefully, Zhang Tie was slightly shocked as he felt that the knight qi of Zhang Taixuan was even more powerful than that of the demon general.

Zhang Tie sensed that Zhang Taixuan was going to promote to an earth knight, 'No wonder he dares compete for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province.'

Zhang Tie and Zhang Taixuan just watched each other.

Among the clan disciples of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie didn't have an outstanding look. He was not as handsome as Apollo. He just looked straight and frank. However, Zhang Tie's age made him very special among all the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace.

Even Zhang Tie didn't know why he maintained his look of 16-17 years old. His look was 10 years younger than his factual age.

"Clan head!" Zhang Tie crossed his hands and bowed towards Zhang Taixuan.

Zhang Tie was very polite as it was his first time to meet Zhang Taixuan. As for this man who might be his father-in-law, Zhang Tie wanted to leave a good impression on him. If he made this man

feel that he was too arrogant and fickle, this man would be a high mountain between him and Lan Yunxi in the future.

Watching Zhang Tie's good performance, Zhang Taixuan revealed a bit smile and uttered kindly, "Elder Mushen, please take a seat!"

Zhang Tie then sat next to Elder Muyuan.

"Elder Muen, as Elder Mushen has just arrived, he might be confused about something. You can introduce what we talked to Elder Mushen!"

"Yes, sir!" Elder Muen replied before briefly introducing what happened in Youzhou City lately to Zhang Tie.

As the competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province was going to start, all the details about the competition gradually became clear.

This competition would indeed proceed in the virtual battlefield of Treasures Ball.

There were 9 candidate clans, only 2 of which could match Huaiyuan Palace, namely Lu Clan of Spiritualmaple Prefecture in Youzhou Province and Gu Clan of Easternriver Prefecture in Youzhou Province.

With 10 knights, Lu Clan was a noble clan in Youzhou Province. Its clan head Lu Dingzhi was a hereditary count, who had a high reputation in Youzhou Province. He once promoted to the coin-building officer of the Ministry of Finance. With a deep background, he could probably win this competition.

Gu Clan of Easternriver Prefecture was also a local major clan. Although being not a hereditary noble clan, Gu Clan was also well-known across Youzhou Province. Gu Clan had 8 knights, the most able ones of which were the clan head and the young master. Gu Dashou the head of Gu Clan and Gu Qingyun the young master of the clan, were both knights, which were unique in Youzhou

Province and were always praised by people. Gu Dashou had Gu Qingyun at an old age. Among knights, Gu Dashou was not tough, Gu Qingyun was much more talented than his dad.

In Youzhou Province, Gu Qingyun ranked first in cultivation talent. Gu Qingyun had promoted to a battle spirit at 16. Closely after that, he learned from the elders of Heavens Holding Pavilion, one of the top 7 major sects in Taixia Country. After entering Heavens Holding Pavilion for 6 years, he had promoted to the black iron knight at 22, when his name shocked Youzhou Province. It was said that Gu Qingyun was pretty appreciated by the elders in Heavens Holding Pavilion. He would have a limitless bright future for sure.

Lu Clan and Gu Clan were better than Huaiyuan Palace which had just settled down in Youzhou Province in all aspects.

Besides the above two clans, the other 6 clans were Yan Clan of Chaoyang Prefecture, Liu Clan of Changshan Prefecture, Simon Clan of Xingbei Prefecture, Sun Clan of Guide Prefecture, Guo Clan of Sanquan Prefecture and Li Clan of Miyun Prefecture.

All of them were local major clans. With special forces on their back, they were most powerful in their prefecture. Each of them had at least 3 knights. They had also prepared well for this competition.

Given all aspects, Huaiyuan Palace could only rank 3rd. Huaiyuan Palace had a poor chance to win. Among those onlookers, none of them thought that Zhang Taixuan could win the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. The odds for Huaiyuan Palace in the gambling house of Youzhou Province was 1: 1.35, which meant that most of the people thought that Huaiyuan Palace only had a chance of less than 30% to win the battle. Those who were keeping their eyes on Huaiyuan Mansion included those who were dispatched by Huaiyuan Palace's competitive opponents and those in the gambling house of Youzhou Province; especially the latter who were concerned about Huaiyuan Palace's actions very

much.

After hearing the brief introduction of Elder Muen, Zhang Tie turned solemn too. Youzhou City was really full of talents and powerhouses, who were all drooling about the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province.

After saying that, Elder Muen paused before continuing, "This is the situation facing Youzhou City which had been told by the Clan head. After that, when the Clan head was talking about Heavens Ball with the other elders, you arrived!"

Zhang Tie nodded. After hearing the Heavens Ball, he became spirited once again.

After Elder Muen's introduction, Zhang Taixuan coughed twice faintly. When the other elders moved their eyes onto him once again, he uttered, "Heavens Ball is a marvelous treasure. As it was excavated from the underground world, it was not exclusive to the Heavens Fortune Sect. It is not unique as I've seen such an item in the Taihang Fortress of Earth-elements Realm during these years when I fought in the Earth-elements realm. I have even experienced inside it. Therefore, I knew how it works. I will tell you about that for your reference..."

...

After over 20 minutes, the conference came to an end. After bidding a farewell to Zhang Taixuan politely, all the elders left the room one after another while feeling gloomy.

Zhang Tie's mind had been filled by the Heavens Ball. After listening to Zhang Taixuan's introduction, Zhang Tie was not thinking about this competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, but the mysterious Earth-elements Realm.

Zhang Tie didn't notice that Count Long Wind was stroking an odd-looking brilliant jade ring and watching his back while a

sorrowful look flashed by Zhang Taixuan's eyes.

...

"Elder Mushen!" Elder Muyuan stopped him when he was leaving the pavilion.

"Elder Muyuan!" Zhang Tie stopped as he faintly bowed towards Elder Muyuan.

"Did your mother get better?" Elder Muyuan asked out of concern.

"Thank you for your concern, Elder Muyuan. My mother felt very pleasant on the way here. She has almost recovered!"

"Hmm, that's good!" Elder Muyuan let out a sigh of relief, "This competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province is of great significance, Elder Mushen should think more about it!"

"I know, I will exert my full efforts for sure!"

Elder Muyuan nodded as he touched his mustache and asked Zhang Tie suddenly, "I wonder what do you feel about Gu Qingyun, Elder Mushen?"

Zhang Tie became confused about Elder Muyuan's intention. After being silent for a couple of seconds, he uttered, "He's talented. Additionally, he relies on Gu Clan and the 7 top major sects of Taixia Country. He lives up to his reputation."

"Everybody in Youzhou Province knows about Gu Qingyun, don't you want to replace him?"

'Replace him?' Zhang Tie was startled by Elder Muyuan's words. To be honest, he had really not thought about such a domineering opinion.

Watching Zhang Tie's dumbfounded look, Elder Muyuan revealed a wisdom and experienced smile, "When we could strive for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province for

Huaiyuan Palace in the Heavens Ball, why not strive for yourself, Elder Mushen? Haven't you learned something from Gu Qingyun who became famous across Youzhou Province at 16 and grew more and more famous from then on? Humans would always belittle the weak ones and praise those stronger ones. Aren't reputation, wealth and power circling around vanity? After promoting to a knight, your cultivation road forward would grow narrower. It would be more difficult for you to reach a new level. You need greater strength to reach a new high. Whether in Waii Sub-continent or Taixia Country, have you seen any one form 2 or 3 chakras silently?"

Zhang Tie became stunned as he felt that Elder Muyuan's words were very meaningful.

"Retrospecting to the past 5,000 years, you would find that very few people became something silently! Whether it was because they were not making their full efforts? Whether it was the God's will or humans' will?" After leaving this sentence, Elder Muyuan sighed with emotions before leaving.

After standing still for a few seconds, Zhang Tie deeply bowed towards the back of Elder Muyuan...

Chapter 826: Preparation for the Competition

Zhang Tie's family members had left on the second day since they arrived at Youzhou City.

Previously, Zhang Tie intended to take a look around Youzhou City with his family members on the second day; however, after arriving at Huaiyuan Mansion, Zhang Tie sensed the intense atmosphere that all the other elders were trying their utmost best to prepare for the coming competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. After knowing the importance of Zhang Tie's task, Zhang Tie's dad and mom didn't want to travel in Youzhou City anymore as they were afraid of distracting Zhang Tie from the competition. Therefore, they determined to leave Youzhou City for Golden Light City by airship on the next morning.

"Son, your mom and I really had a good time these days. We've not been so happy for many years. No need to worry about us. No matter what, your mom and I belong to Huaiyuan Palace. Although we cannot help you; if we influenced your preparation, we would feel restless even though we were not condemned by others. Therefore, your mom and I have negotiated with Linda, Beverly and Fiona last night that we would return to Golden Light City today in case of distracting you from the competition. Once the competition comes to an end, we will find another chance to travel here!"

Zhang Tie's dad said.

Realizing that his family members had determined to leave, he could only have the fury-level airship, which had been escorting them all the way here, carry his family members back to Golden Light City together with the touring car "Traveller".

The airship then landed in the airship port of Huaiyuan Mansion.

It would take them only 1 day to return to Golden Light City by airship. Before departure, after confirming that Zhang Tie would not have any dangers in this competition, Zhang Tie's parents and wives became reassured. After Zhang Tie bade a farewell to his parents, he was kissed by his three wives on his cheeks.

"Dad, come on!" Zhang Chenglei, Zhang Chengting and Zhang Chengpei encouraged Zhang Tie in unison before leaving. Zhang Tie replied with a big smile.

At this moment, the clan elders and head of Huaiyuan Palace had closed their doors and entered meditation in Huaiyuan Mansion so that they could handle the fierce battle in Heavens Ball in the best state two days later.

Zhang Tie raised his head and saw the airship flying towards Golden Light City. Until the dazzling morning glow reached his eyes did he move his eyes away and returned to the backroom in the exquisite courtyard.

There was one point that Zhang Ping was right about. After they left, Zhang Tie could indeed try his utmost best to prepare for the battle in 2 days without any concern.

...

Beneath the courtyard, the backroom only covered more than 40 square meters. As for Knight-level powerhouses, it was a bit small for long-time closed meditation; however, it was available for short-term closed meditation.

The backroom had been matched with enough water, food, some kinds of possible medicament and 4 earth-elements crystals which were specially prepared for this competition. After arriving at Youzhou City, each clan elder was rewarded with 4 earth-elements crystals. The 4 earth-elements crystals for Zhang Tie just lay in the backroom of this exquisite courtyard.

When he caught sight of the 4 earth-elements crystals, Zhang Tie

remembered those achievements that he had made in Waii Subcontinent. Besides the 5879 earth-elements crystals in the space teleportation equipment of the demon general, he gained 3511 more earth-elements crystals from the secret warehouses of those Three-eye Association clans. All the 9390 earth-elements crystals could not even light 30 scales on his earth-elements chakra.

'Although almost 10,000 earth-elements crystals is already a great figure for the other knights; it's still far away from the 100,000 earth-elements crystals that I need to form the second chakra of King Roc Sutra.'

'100,000 earth-elements crystals? Even if I'm always as lucky as when I was in Waii Subcontinent, I might have to plunder 10 subcontinents at least so as to gain 100,000 earth-element crystals. It's impossible for me. Three-eye Association and demons are not idiots. They will not provide me with so much convenience.' Gorath had been the target of demons and Three-eye Association. After disguising as Gorath and releasing the terrifying ptomaine miasma across Blackhot Subcontinent, Gorath had completely disappeared as Zhang Tie sensed the danger facing Gorath. Demons and Three-eye Association would at least dispatch an earth knight to handle Gorath; instead of a black iron knight.

After picking up one earth-elements crystal, Zhang Tie touched its smooth and brilliant surface before letting out a sigh. He then sat on the bed with crossed legs and took out the Elements Gathering Matrix from that space teleportation equipment of the demon general and put it in front of him. Closely after that, he entered the Elements Realm...

In the Elements Realm, spiritual hands started to form one after another, 1, 2, 3...10,11...18.

9 spiritual hands were carrying earth elements from earth-elements crystal while the other 9 spiritual hands were capturing those polyhedral earth crystals which were moving swiftly in the Elements Realm.

Anyone would be dumbfounded by such a high efficiency. However, as Zhang Tie had made a breakthrough in this spiritual energy in the Dragon Cave and spent almost half a year to digest that fruit of brilliance which contained the spiritual energy of 13 Three-eye Association knights and practice, he had felt as easy as taking a walk by doing this.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether he had reached a limit in multitasking. Even though he felt that he had surplus spiritual energy, he could not make any progress in multitasking anymore. Whenever he tried to make a breakthrough by visualizing 19 abacuses in his mind, he would feel his brain blowing up with deafening ears, sparkling eyes and disordered spiritual energy. After attempting twice, Zhang Tie did not dare do that any longer. Therefore, he only maintained the current frequency.

18 was 2 times that of 9. In Hua people's recognition, 9 represented an upper limit in mathematics. When he remembered that those fruits on the small tree were always limited to mathematical laws, Zhang Tie speculated that 18 might be the upper limit of multitasking of black iron knights. He didn't know whether he could make the breakthrough after promoting to an earth knight. Currently, if he didn't use earth-elements crystal and just captured those earth-elements crystals in the Elements Realm with the help of Elements Gathering Matrix by spiritual hands, he would capture them faster than the frequency that those earth-element crystals appeared in the range of his perception. 9 spiritual hands were the upper limit that Elements Gathering Matrix could support as of now.

With the concerted efforts of the 9 spiritual hands, the earth-element crystal was consumed very fast. Each earth-element crystal could only stand less than 4 hours.

In 2 days, Zhang Tie consumed 12 earth-element crystals in the backroom in total.

After 2 days of cultivation, the 10th dragon scale on Zhang Tie's

knight's crystal plate slowly turned bright...

11 of the 12 earth-elements crystals that Zhang Tie had consumed came from his storage. He only used 1 of the 4 earth-elements crystals that Huaiyuan Palace placed in the backroom for each clan elder.

In this way, if someone else entered the backroom, he would find that Zhang Tie had consumed 1 of the 4 earth-elements crystals in the past 2 days, which was normal for a new knight.

Zhang Tie was usually meticulous in such details.

On the evening of the second day, Zhang Tie entered the trouble-reappearance situation and activated Master Abyan and a lot of demon fighters in Dragon Cave. After reviewing that battle, he drank up two vials of all-purpose medicament and threw himself onto the bed.

Zhang Tie slept 4 hours, which was the longest period that he had slept lately.

At 5 am, October 5th, Zhang Tie exited the backroom as energetic as a horny buffalo with sparkling eyes.

A team of female servants had been waiting in the exquisite courtyard. At the sight of Zhang Tie coming out of his bedroom, they started to help him bathe and cleanse up. They also helped him to put up a set of a brilliant robe of python silk, making him look refreshed all over.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie burned a stick of incense in the exquisite courtyard and entered meditation with closed eyes. When it was 7 am, Zhang Tie opened his eyes and left that exquisite courtyard.

The sky was bright as the first ray of sunglow had reached Youzhou City.

Youzhou City today looked like a still pendulum clock. Previously, the street outside Huaiyuan Mansion used to be

boisterous at this time; however today, the street was pretty quiet.

Zhang Taixuan and the other 5 Clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace left their own exquisite courtyards at the same time. Watching Zhang Tie's energetic look, all of them nodded inside, 'It seems that Elder Mushen has made good preparation during the past two days. He's already reached his best state.'

All the members in the Huaiyuan Mansion had gathered solemnly in the main courtyard in rows like muddy sculptures.

"Let's go!" Zhang Taixuan uttered while all the other Clan elders left the ground...

"We hope Clan head and elders to win this battle so as to make Huaiyuan Palace more awe-inspiring!" All the members of Huaiyuan Palace bowed deeply to the ground and saw them off respectfully...

Chapter 827: A Shock Before the Battle

After Zhang Tie and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace flew off, they could clearly see the sceneries on the streets below them.

Youzhou City today indeed looked different than before. It was especially solemn. As almost all the citizens knew that the provincial governor of Youzhou Province would be selected in White Tiger Complex, they had gathered in pubs, tea houses or urban squares and parks for the latest news in the early morning.

As a grand event in Youzhou City, it was even more solemn than celebrating a festival.

The area within 20 square miles of White Tiger Complex had become the focus of the entire Youzhou City. Numerous people were surging towards White Tiger Complex. Garrisons of Youzhou City had to maintain orders on streets in case of a stampede.

Soon after Zhang Tie and the other clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace left Huaiyuan Mansion, Zhang Tie had seen a light beam shooting into the sky near White Tiger Complex. Like a mirage, it stretched and formed a vast heavenly curtain, tinting the sky above Youzhou City to glow.

As the light beam rose, the entire Youzhou City began to boil.

The heavenly curtain reminded Zhang Tie of the artificial thing "film" before the Catastrophe.

The light beam and the heavenly curtain originated from the Heavens Ball. Zhang Tie was told that the battle in the Heavens Ball between 9 clans would be reflected into the sky. Therefore, all the people across Youzhou City would be able to watch it live.

If it was a film, the grand show today might be a free super action movie starred by knights that could be enjoyed by everybody.

This was why Youzhou City was so boisterous now. Being attracted by such a grand show, all the major clans across Youzhou

Province had gathered in Youzhou City; even many people from neighboring provinces had arrived in Youzhou City by various traffic tools such as airship.

As this film could be seen for free as long as one was in Youzhou City, the hotels in Youzhou City had been crowded lately. Even if it was a paid film, who could have so many knights of major clans across Youzhou Province participate in such a grand show pleasantly?

When he recalled his family members who left Youzhou City in advance, Zhang Tie was deeply moved as he felt like crying. In order to not influence his performance in the ring, his family members didn't even stay here for two more days. In order to support him, they even ignored such a grand show. When he recalled what his parents had done for him in their lives, Zhang Tie felt complex; however, being gazed by numerous pairs of eyes, Zhang Tie felt a bit excited faintly.

At this moment, Elder Muyuan turned around and threw a profound glance at Zhang Tie.

Watching Elder Muyuan's expression and remembering what Elder Muyuan told him last night, Zhang Tie slightly nodded.

This competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province was not only for Huaiyuan Palace but also for Zhang Clan and Zhang Tie himself. Zhang Tie had determined to do something in the ring.

'Elder Muyuan is right. Sometimes, I should not be silent when I could show off myself. Over these years, my elder brother has been running Jinwu Business Group meticulously in Taixia Country. He limited the production of all-purpose medicament to only a bit more than 2 million vials per year, even though all-purpose medicament's supply could not meet its demand. The reason was that elder brother was afraid of being envied by people as Jinwu Business Group had no powerful forces on its back. With Huaiyuan

Palace on its back, Jinwu Business Group indeed developed fast these years with increasingly deeper root. Jinwu Business Group could make about 10 million gold coins per year through cooperating with Long Wind Business Group; it's easy for Jinwu Business Group to expand this business by 10 times or 100 times; whereas, what then? Can Jinwu Business Group avoid from being envied by competitors?'

Actually, Zhang Tie's elder brother was not worried about making money for the time being but to keep the business growing sustainably.

As Zhang Tie had returned home, Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief. Through private communication, Zhang Yang had intended to build a city.

Zhang Tie felt that someone should stand out and shoulder the responsibilities for the Zhang Clan in Youzhou Province, Taixia country.

'Who else the person would be except for me? We cannot depend on those kids.'

Actually, it was not a matter of "to be or not to be", but a matter of degree for Zhang Tie.

'It is a matter of degree for me to show off myself in the ring on the premise of keeping a part of my trump cards; especially my most powerful trump card.'

...

As knights flew very fast, soon after they left Huaiyuan Mansion, they had arrived at White Tiger Complex.

"Ahh, knights!"

Watching knights flying over there, so many people exclaimed loudly in the nearby streets of White Tiger Complex.

For many commoners in Youzhou City, although the number of

knights in Taixia Country ranked top among all the human places, there was still a sharp disparity between knights and commoners. Commoners might only see knights a few times in their whole lives. Therefore, so many people came to White Tiger Complex to watch the grand show being performed by so many knights across Youzhou Province.

White Tiger Complex was a Hua palatial complex where central organs of power were located. The provincial governor of Youzhou Province which was selected today would live and work in White Tiger Complex and rule the entire Youzhou Province.

When Zhang Tie and the other clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace arrived at White Tiger Palace, all the other clans' knights had also arrived there consecutively, causing a series of exclamations among the nearby onlookers. Perhaps many people dreamed to fly; therefore, they felt watching people flying in the sky much more interesting than watching acrobatics in the streets of Youzhou City.

When they saw knights flying over, many kids exclaimed while riding on their fathers' shoulders, "I will fly too, I will fly too..."

"If you learn well at school and practice hard, you will also fly like a knight in the sky like them one day. Do you want to be a knight?" A father asked his kid who was riding on his shoulders.

"I want to be a knight!"

Many kids clapped their hands happily with gleaming eyes as they set a lifetime dream.

This was why many parents would like to take their kids here——Each kid in Taixia Country dreamed to be a knight. Each parent hoped their kids to be elites. Even the singles across Youzhou City had crowded here since last night in order to watch that grand show to boost in front of others in the future. All the fathers who took their kids here so as to give a lesson to their kids by this chance.

'Just because this father failed to be a knight doesn't mean this father's son could not promote to a knight either. I will show knights to my kid today from a short distance. Maybe my son could also promote to a knight in the future.' All the fathers thought inside.

...

There was a huge square covering about 1 square mile being made up of white marble stones outside White Tiger Palace, which was over 1 m higher above the ground. It was the portal of White Tiger Complex to the outside. The four corners of the square were guarded with ferocious white-marble tigers, which indicated the majesty of this square and the origin of its name.

At present, over 200,000 commoners were circling around the White Tiger Square. Two rows of strong city guards in iron armor isolated those onlookers from the square.

Almost the moment Zhang Tie and the other clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace landed on the White Tiger Square, onlookers' sigh with emotions had drifted from around the White Tiger Square. Almost at the same time, numerous people attempted to surge forward; however, they were blocked by the city guards.

"Is that young man Gu Qingyun?"

"He's too young. He looks only 16 or so. How could he become a knight at such a young age?"

In a split second, tens of thousands of exclamations sounded.

"Show me, show me, where is that 16 year-old knight?"

Almost the moment Zhang Tie landed on White Tiger Square, he had shocked those commoners around the White Tiger Square. As Zhang Tie was really too young. He was more like a neighborhood juvenile than a knight. As for those who had seen Zhang Tie, they were greatly stunned by Zhang Tie's age.

"No, that's not Gu Qingyun. Gu Qingyun is not that young. That's

a knight of Zhang Clan in Yanghe Prefecture!" Someone shouted...

"Zhang Clan? Which Zhang Clan?"

"Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace!" More and more people identified the status of Zhang Tie and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace...

Listening to the exclamations among the crowd, Zhang Taixuan and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace threw a glance at Zhang Tie with a faint smile. What a shock before the battle! The shock that Zhang Tie brought to the onlookers was beneficial for Huaiyuan Palace to consolidate its position in Youzhou Province at a higher speed. It was a great assistance for Zhang Taixuan who aimed to compete for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. With such an elite in Zhang clan, of course Zhang Taixuan felt very pleasant inside. Because the honor of Huaiyuan Palace was the honor of the clan head...

Chapter 828: The Arrival of Knights

"Are you Count Long Wind from Huaiyuan Palace, Yanghe Prefecture?" When Zhang Tie aroused exclamations outside White Tiger Complex, a middle-aged officer walked over there and bowed towards Zhang Taixuan with crossed hands before asking politely.

"Yes, I'm Zhang Taixuan!" Count Long Wind answered.

"Please wait for a second. It's already well prepared inside. We can go inside at scheduled time!" That middle-aged officer said politely as he stealthily threw a glance at Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie's young look shocked both those onlookers outside White Tiger Complex and those inside White Tiger Complex.

"It's okay!" Count Long Wind looked gentle and easy-going, making Zhang Tie shout "bravos" for him inside.

The competition would start at 8 am. At 7:15, they would enter White Tiger Complex to learn about the rules. After that, they could prepare for half an hour or so. As Commander Cheng was sitting in the White Tiger Complex, nobody dared be late today. In order to show their respect and prudence, all the clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace and Count Long Wind had arrived at 7:10 am, 5 minutes ahead. The other clans also arrived consecutively in a few seconds.

"Wow, so handsome, so handsome, Huaiyuan Palace's knights are so handsome..." Louder and shriller exclamations drifted from the girls and middle-aged women among the onlookers.

Any men, who appeared in such an open land in a set of brilliant boa-silk costume as a knight, would look extremely handsome in the eyes of women, as long as his original look was not too ugly. As Zhang Tie was not ugly; plus the make-up in Huaiyuan Mansion, he drove hundreds of thousands of women mad at once the moment he arrived.

When the next two teams of knights landed, they were also stunned by Zhang Tie's young age as they started to stealthily glance at Zhang Tie.

In a wink, two more teams of knights arrived.

Given the population of the two teams of knights, Zhang Tie knew that the real opponents of Huaiyuan Palace had arrived.

One of the two teams included 10 knights, which was the greatest population among all the teams of knights at present. The head knight of the two teams was a genial middle-aged man with an unbearded white face. He looked as majestic and handsome as Zhang Taixuan the Count Long Wind.

At the sight of them, Zhang Tie had known that they were from Lu Clan of Spirituallmaple Prefecture in Youzhou Province. That middle-aged man should be Lu Dingzhi.

Besides a good look, Lu Dingzhi's qi was almost as that of Count Long Wind. 'Another would-be earth knight.' Zhang Tie was faintly shocked inside, 'Although being just a lower province in Taixia Country, Youzhou province has so many talents. If in Waii Sub-continent, such people would be greatly influential too.' However, Zhang Tie had not seen anyone else in Waii Sub-continent who was going to promote to an earth knight except for the demon general. What a grand show!

The other team included 8 knights, the two heads of which looked like a father and a son. The father had whiskers, which made him very heroic. The son looked 27-28 years old. He was almost the youngest one among the knights at present except for Zhang Tie. Needless to say, this team belonged to Gu Clan of Easternriver Prefecture. The father was Gu Dashou while the son was Gu Qingshan.

After Gu Clan's knights arrived, they were a bit shocked by the crazy onlookers and Zhang Tie in the team of Huaiyuan Palace.

At this moment, some bold women among the onlookers were exclaiming loudly.

Zhang Tie noticed that they were hailing his handsome look. After throwing two glances at Zhang Tie, Gu Qingshan's eyes turned gloomy.

As for a man who had been used to be eye-catching in the public, if he found that others changed their idol in front of him, he might feel a bit disappointed.

After noticing Gu Qingshan's changing look, Zhang Tie had an evil thought, 'According to the suggestion of Elder Muyuan, Gu Qingshan should be my first stepping stone in Youzhou Province today. I hope Gu Qingshan doesn't turn today's disappointment into a psychological shadow in the future.'

...

"Are you Brother Taixuan?" Lu Dinzhi hailed Zhang Taixuan the Count Long Wind after landing on the White Tiger Square.

"Ahh, hoho, Brother Dingzhi!"

"I've long heard about your reputation, Brother Taixuan. You look even more majestic than the legend. The "Early sunshine after light snow" in the White Deer Building on the Long Dragon Mountain outside Youzhou City ranks top in Youzhou Province, after leaving White Tiger Square, how about having a cool drink there?"

"Fine. I was told that "Early sunshine after light snow" was brewed by the first drop of melted snow from the plum blossom petals on the Long Dragon Mountain. I've long been dreaming of that. Now that I met Brother Dingzhi today, we will have a cool drink tonight! It's pleasant for us to drink liquor and appreciate the moons tonight."

After exchanging a glance with each other, Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan burst out into laughter at the same time...

Although the competition would start soon, the two most capable competitors were neither talking about the position of provincial governor nor the competition, but the cool drink in White Deer Building. Their open-mindedness was really awe-inspiring like real gentlemen. Even Zhang Tie was applauding for them inside.

"How could we just drink liquor without meat? Occasionally, I brought some cyan-horn deer from Gu Clan. I will roast some cyan-horn deer and send them to White Deer Building today for our pleasure. Will you welcome me?" Gu Dashou interrupted with a laugh.

"Why not, Brother Gu?" Lu Dingzhi replied with a smile.

"I've long heard about the cyan-horn deer of Gu Clan in Easternriver Prefecture, which was well-known in Youzhou Province. If I could taste the two delicacies in Youzhou Province tonight, I would have no regret here!" Count Long Wind sighed with emotions.

The three men burst out into laughter at the same time. Watching this, the other clans' heads who had intended to swarm up stayed silent on one side. Because 3 people would form a group. However, If others swarmed up too, they would be disadvantageous.

Someone became silent; someone replied with a cold harrumph. After hearing the obvious cold harrumph, Zhang Tie turned around and saw 3 knights landing on.

The head of the 3 knights was a female whose qi field could even match that of a male.

She looked about 30-40 years old. In a set of red clothes, she looked hot with a pair of golden hooks on her back. Her look and figure would make men's dicks turn hard. Even men would be dwarfed by her powerful qi field and cold face. She was the very one who uttered a cold harrumph.

'Even a female dares compete for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province?' Zhang Tie was really startled. What made Zhang Tie more amazed was that aggressive cold harrumph. Lu Dingzhi coughed twice slightly as he dared not speak to her. Gu Dashou also smirked in silence. Count Long Wind slightly nodded towards the latest three knights.

After sensing Zhang Tie's gaze, that woman threw her sharp eye light at Zhang Tie. After finding that Zhang Tie was too young, her look turned a bit tender. After throwing two more glances at Zhang Tie, she continued to leave a cold harrumph to Zhang Tie, "Hmm..."

Watching that woman turning around, Zhang Tie scratched his head as a question occurred to his mind, 'Who's she? She's really a tantrum thrower.'

"This woman is Guo Hongyi, the head of Guo Clan in Sanquan Prefecture. Guo Clan is not the most powerful clan in Youzhou Province; however, this woman is extremely tricky. She's completely a troublemaker. Don't irritate her!"

Elder Muen whispered in Zhang Tie's ears in a secret way. Zhang Tie nodded as he replied in the same secret way, "Even women could compete for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province?"

"Of course, it's normal for women to be officials in Taixia Country. It's told that there are even female chancellors in Taixia Country. Additionally, female provincial governors exist in other upper and major provinces. Therefore, you'd better not belittle women in Taixia Country!"

'Female provincial governors? Female chancellors?' Zhang Tie became speechless. Taixia Country really brought him constant surprises. When he recalled Gongsun Liniang in Golden Roc Bank, Zhang Tie realized that any female knight might be tricky in Taixia Country. He really wondered what those people who supported the

feminist movement in Waii Sub-continent would think when they saw these female knights and provincial governors.

'However, she might be elder than her look. After promoting to a knight, her physical functions would be greatly improved; especially for many female knights, they paid more attention to their look and figure than their battle strength. Therefore, their real age was more elusive than that of male knights. With a look as young as Linda and qi like that of 30-year old women, her real age might have been over 100 years old.

...

As everybody had arrived, after waiting for a few minutes, each clan team had been led into the White Tiger Complex by an official.

If it was in Waii Sub-continent, White Tiger Complex would definitely be more magnificent than many international imperial palaces.

After passing through many gates and squares and stepping on many steps, they saw a square like temple of heaven.

A huge ball on a base in about 3 m high was placed in the middle of the square. The light beam which shot to the sky just now was originated from the top of this ball...

'Heavens Ball!' Zhang Tie knew what it was the moment he caught sight of it.

Its diameter was over 2 m. He didn't know what the ball was made of. It looked somewhat like crystal or metal. It was misty with changing colorful luster inside the ball. The base of the Heavens Ball was made of certain metal, which was full of classic sense. The base was covered with dense runes and lines.

In the palace being not far from this square, a man with a swarthy and profound face was sitting on the high seat and watching the 9 clan teams.

What made Zhang Tie more amazed was the two young knights on two sides of that man. At the sight of Zhang Tie, the two young knights were stunned at the same time while shooting out a shrewd eye light...

"Commander Cheng!" Everybody bowed towards that man with a swarthy face including Zhang Taixuan and Lu Dingzhi.

"Hmm, stand up!" Commander Cheng glanced over the 9 clan teams. Zhang Tie felt a great pressure facing him. After promoting to a knight, he had not felt such a feeling for a long time.

"You're here today for the seal of provincial governor in my hand. Show me your talents now!" Commander Cheng put his hand upside down while a brilliant adult's head-sized seal appeared in his hand abruptly.

With a loud sound "bang", Commander Cheng put the seal on the desk and stimulated their hearts, "Alright, cut the crap, read the rules and prepare for the battle!"

Closely after Commander Cheng finished his words, the atmosphere across White Tiger Complex turned intense immediately...

Chapter 829: Rules and Start

"The rules for the selection of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province are as follows..."

A young man on one side of Commander Cheng moved one step forward and started to read the concrete rules of this selection. The moment he started, all the knights at present pricked up their ears.

This young man was rightly one of the two young men whom Zhang Tie had seen that day. Given his clothes, he should be a young officer beside Commander Cheng. 'Such a young knight on the side of Commander Cheng on such an important occasion must have a bright future. He must have a deep background.'

Zhang Tie thought, 'I heard the other one call him "Brother Tianqi" that day. However, I don't know his surname.'

"This competition will proceed in Heavens Ball. Each clan could have limitless knights access to Heavens Ball at the entrance fee of 10 million gold coins per person. You can give up if you want now!" When the youth said this, he waited for a few seconds and wanted to see whether someone would give up the opportunity.

"Hmm, cut the crap. They've already known that. If you want to compete for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, of course, you need to be rich and powerful; otherwise, you'd better roll back home to take a pee and play mud with your pee!" Commander Cheng waved his hands impatiently as he revealed the essence of this competition in the most coarse humor—Only the richest and powerful people could take the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province.

Without money and power, did you think you could hold the position of provincial governor? The admission fee of 10 million gold coins scared off those who just wanted to join the fun. 'You want to enter Heavens Ball? Go get 10 million gold coins first.'

Of course, there were more than 9 major clans in Youzhou Province. However, after considering their own power and the expensive admission fee, they were all scared off. As it were, the nine clans which joined in the competition for the position provincial governor of Youzhou Province were excellent in both power and boldness.

When Zhang Tie heard this, he threw a glance at Guo Hongyi in the distance as he started to admire her boldness and battle strength. The young man on the side of Commander Cheng forced a bashful smile before coming to the key points.

"The head of the clan with the highest points in Heavens Ball will take the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province!"

"After Heavens Ball is triggered, it will simulate a spatial topography covering 100,000 square miles in the earth-elements realm. The clans of each clan will appear in any place across that space. After entering it, you will have 3 minutes to adapt to its environment. After 3 minutes, you will see your enemies. In the beginning, you will see 53 LV 15 demon battle-spirits in total, one point for killing each demon battle-spirit!"

"After eliminating the first batch of demon battle-spirits, you will see the second batch of enemies, whose number is twice that of yours!"

"After eliminating the second batch of demon battle-spirits, you will face the third batch of enemies, whose number is thrice that of yours. After you clean up the third batch of demon battle-spirits, you will see standard black iron demon knights in the Heavens Ball. 5 points for each black iron demon knight. When the 4th batch of demons appears in the Heavens Ball, you will experience the cruelest test!"

"The number of black iron demon knights in the 4th round is 10 more than that of the living human knights before they appear. That is to say, if you don't suffer from any casualty before the 4th

batch of demon knights appear in Heavens Ball, you will have to fight 63 demon knights in the next round!"

"After the 4th round, the number of demon knights in each round will be 10 more than that of the living human knights in the Heavens Ball!"

"This selection will come to an end when the last human knight is killed inside. By then, the head of the clan with the highest points will take the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. If two clans have the same highest points, they will start a fiercer overtime!"

"There is one point that you should bear in mind, namely, you could not attack any human knight in the Heavens Ball. Commander Cheng will enter Heavens Ball to supervise your live performance. Meanwhile, your performance and clan points will be reflected on the mirage above Youzhou City by the Heavens Ball, which will be watched by all the people in Youzhou Province!"

"You're not allowed to take your own weapons and equipment in the Heavens Ball. Your weapons are limited to those provided inside the battlefield. Additionally, it only takes you a bit spiritual energy and a fraction of vigor to die inside the ball, instead of causing a damage to your health. You will be okay after taking a rest for 2 days. Those who are killed inside will exit Heavens Ball!"

"Additionally, remember, you could not get points unless you kill your enemy. Wounds don't work. If you wound an enemy, who's finally killed by another one, you will not get that point!"

"Each of you will get a copper plate. You only need to hold the copper plate and trigger it by injecting your spiritual energy into it before entering the Heavens Ball!"

After saying that, that youth waved his hands while 9 servants served trays in front of the 9 teams respectively so that knights of each clan could get one copper plate from one tray to access to the Heavens Ball.

When one servant came to Zhang Tie's front, Zhang Tie also picked one copper plate from the tray. Zhang Tie found it was purple. Being not like common copper, it felt cold and was covered with dense odd-looking runes. Additionally, there were 4 holes on the copper plate, which were specially set for people's fingers.

That man called Tianqi made a demonstration in front of them. After putting his 4 fingers into the holes, he clenched his fist and held the copper plate tightly.

"You need to hold the copper plate like this. If it drops off your hands, you could only exit the Heavens Ball and not access to it any longer!"

After hearing that youth's warning, all the clan knights at present clenched their fists.

In the period of a few breaths, they had almost prepared for the battle.

There were some cattail hassocks in front of each clan team, where sat those knights.

"After 30 seconds, the Heavens Ball will be triggered. The adaptive period of 3 minutes will start to count down since the first knight enters it!"

Soon after this guidance, the Heavens Ball in front of them started to change its luster. At the sight of this scene, all the clan knights began to prepare for activating their own copper plates immediately, including Zhang Taixuan and Lu Dingzhi, etc..

Zhang Tie also started to inject his spiritual energy into that copper plate.

Based on his current spiritual energy, Zhang Tie could activate his copper plate in a split second. However, as he found others were "slowly" activating their plates, he slowed down his speed too.

With the injection of the spiritual energy, the copper plates in the

hands of those knights started to radiate faint blue light...

"Brother Taixuan, please!" Lu Dingzhi revealed a smile.

"Please!" Zhang Taixuan replied with a smile.

Closely after that, the two people closed their eyes and entered the Heavens Ball at the same time.

After their copper plates radiated blue light one after another, all the knights at present closed their eyes and entered the Heavens Ball.

After over 20 knights entered the Heavens Ball, Zhang Tie finally activated his copper plate...

Before entering the Heavens Ball, Zhang Tie evidently felt that Commander Cheng threw a glance at him once again.

After a few seconds, all the knights entered Heavens Ball spiritually while sitting around the Heavens Ball physically with eyes closed.

"Who's that juvenile of Huaiyuan Palace?" Until all the knights entered the Heavens Ball did Commander Cheng turn round to ask an officer on his side.

"According to the information submitted by Huaiyuan Palace, that person is Zhang Mushen, the elder of Huaiyuan Palace. His original name is Zhang Tie, who promoted to a knight in Waii Sub-continent. He was born on March 26th, the 873rd year of Black Iron Calendar. He's actually 26 years old!" The officer answered strictly, "Through our approval, his information is true."

"Ahh? I've not imagined that there could be such a young knight in the offsprings of Lord Huaiyuan! Additionally, he's good at preserving his youth!" Commander Cheng uttered a strange voice as he stroked his mustache with his hand. Closely after that, he turned around and asked that elder of Heavens Fortune Sect, "Which one is better in your eyes, Zhang Tie or Gu Qingyun?"

With a cold face, the elder of Heavens Fortune Sect replied like having been ripped off by Commander Cheng lately, "Sometimes, knights win by the thickness of their face; instead of battle strength. If anyone's face is thicker than the city wall of Youzhou City, he may be unrivaled when the other conditions between him and the others are the same!"

After hearing this sentence, all the officers in White Tiger Complex lowered their heads like having not heard that at all.

"Ahem...ahem...I've not imagined that elder of Heavens Fortune Sect could have such a deep study on the learning of face. You've exposed the essence of the learning of face." Commander Cheng coughed twice and made a counterback. However, before the elder of Heavens Fortune Sect lost his temper, he hurriedly said, "I will take a look inside..."

Soon after Commander Cheng's words, the light beam of Heavens Ball had changed its color. Closely after that, a splendid scene slowly spread in the misty mirage like a huge curtain. Numerous onlookers in and out Youzhou City raised their heads. At this moment, all the people's hearts across Youzhou City seemed to come to a stop...

Chapter 830: The Lion in Youzhou Province (I)

In the simulated earth-elements realm...

Zhang tie had heard the name earth-elements realm for many times. However, it was his first time to enter it and see its real look.

When he entered the Heavens Ball, Zhang Tie felt very familiar as he had experienced the same feeling for many times during the past years.

It was like entering a trouble-reappearance situation.

The copper plate in the hand of each knight was a tool that linked each one to the Heavens Ball.

When he landed on the ground, Zhang Tie looked at his hands and body and found that he didn't take in any equipment with him except for his clothes.

After finding that he was in normal conditions, Zhang Tie looked around before taking in a deep breath.

Zhang Tie found that he was in a huge space.

Zhang Tie was really shocked by the look of the earth-elements realm.

Standing on the ground, he could not see the upper limit of the height of the sky. The clouds in the earth-elements realm were fiery, golden, blue and purple in the shape of those outside, illuminating the entire earth-elements realm.

The clouds were floating like being blown by the wind. There was indeed wind in the earth-elements realm, which indicated that there was atmospheric motion in the earth-elements realm.

The plants above the ground looked a bit strange. Within the

range of his vision, Zhang Tie saw at least 10 kinds of plants, which grew very well. Rooting in the soil of the earth-elements realm, some plants were very huge. After wind blew over, the umbrellas on a plant like dandelion flew off in front of Zhang Tie. However, compared to the dandelion outside, this dandelion was almost as large as a millstone. When its plume-like seeds flew off, it was especially beautiful and full of fairy-tale colors.

Besides these plants, there were many cone-shaped natural stone pillars on the ground, big or small. Smaller ones were only dozens of meters high while bigger ones were higher than 1,000 m. Zhang Tie was really shocked by these items which didn't exist outside.

After entering the Heavens Ball, Zhang Tie understood something.

Heavens Ball was not a trouble-reappearance fruit. The two items might be related to each other; however, they were not the same.

When Zhang Tie entered the trouble-reappearance fruit for the first time, he was just a rookie as he had just lit two surging points. However, Zhang Tie felt that only knights could enter this Heavens Ball. This Heavens Ball could faintly sense and resonate with the chakras of knights entering it. It seemed that the energy that could run the chakras of knights could support the knights to manifest their complete bodies inside Heavens Ball. Therefore, those who had not formed their chakra could not access to it.

Besides this point, this Heavens Ball had some advantages over the trouble-reappearance fruit. For instance, Heavens Ball could hold many people at the same time; additionally, it could freely adjust the number and level of enemies. It could even hold demon knights, which was never available to the trouble-reappearance fruit.

However, Zhang Tie preferred the trouble-reappearance fruit, because the trouble-reappearance fruit could fully recreate the scene. Additionally, the trouble-reappearance fruit had an amazing

ability, namely, it could help Zhang Tie restore an emperor-level secret knowledge. Given this point, the trouble-reappearance fruit was more advanced than the Heavens Ball.

When he recalled the mirage above Youzhou City, Zhang Tie even had a weird thought, 'Is this Heavens Ball similar to a "recreational machine" in the former brilliant age? The function of the mirage is not designed for people entering it, but for the demand of those onlookers.'

Although the thought was a bit weird, it might be true.

As Zhang Tie was thinking about these strange things, he flew off and started to be familiar with the surrounding environment. The real combat would start in 3 minutes even though he had already spent half a minute just looking around.

Zhang Tie flew off while releasing his battle qi. He hoped that the elders of Huaiyuan Palace could gather together at the sight of his battle qi.

Actually, most of the knights were thinking the same. The moment Zhang Tie released his battle qi, he had seen some battle qis shooting into the sky within 70 miles. Apparently, the other knights were also hailing their own partners. Pitifully, all the other battle qis were strange to Zhang Tie.

In the space of 100,000 square miles, as knights appeared in optional places, it was almost impossible for Zhang Tie to meet the other elders of Zhang Clan in 2-3 minutes. All the knights were just making an attempt. As the battle was going to break out, they didn't have time to hail their friends at all.

In another half a minute, the sky in the earth-elements realm changed its color suddenly while a pair of shadowy eyes appeared in the sky like a mirage and overlooked everybody in this space. It seemed that everything in this space was within the range of his vision.

That pair of eyes reminded Zhang Tie of Commander Cheng as they were the same as that of the latter.

Together with the pair of eyes were rows of huge words in the sky——Lu Clan of Spiritualmaple Prefecture, Gu Clan of Easternriver Prefecture, Zhang Clan of Yanghe Prefecture, Yan Clan of Chaoyang Prefecture, Liu Clan of Changshan Prefecture, Simon Clan of Xingbei Prefecture, Sun Clan of Guide Prefecture, Guo Clan of Sanquan Prefecture and Li Clan of Miyun Prefecture. Below these words were respectively the names of the clan heads and elders. Each elder's name was followed by points while each clan was followed by total points. Onlookers could see clearly each clan's ranking and points in this earth-elements space.

Zhang Tie saw his name at the end of Zhang Clan's column——Zhang Mushen, points: 0.

At this moment, a red figure flew towards him and arrived at Zhang Tie's front in a split second.

"It's you?" Guo Hongyi threw a faint, amazed glance at Zhang Tie. Actually, Zhang Tie left a deep impression in Guo Hongyi's mind among the clan elders of Zhang Clan.

"Elder sister Guo!" Zhang Tie grinned cheekily. He was not flattering her as he indeed admired her to a certain degree.

After hearing Zhang Tie's "appellation", Guo Hongyi slightly relieved her cold facial expression; at the same time, she slowed down her flying speed.

"What's your name?" Guo Hongyi asked.

"Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen!" Zhang Tie pointed at the last rank of Huaiyuan Palace in the sky and replied, "The one at the bottom of Huaiyuan Palace."

"It seems that you're clear-minded!" Guo Hongyi replied in a malicious way. Closely after that, she threw a glance at Zhang Tie and made a cold harrumph, "Hmm, given your look, you must

have spoiled a lot of Hua women. After promoting to the knight at a young age, men would never lack money. All of you are assholes!"

"Hahaha, Elder Sister Guo, you must be kidding me. I've not even spoiled one Hua woman since I was born. I embraced and kissed one at most; however, I was still almost beaten out sh*t by her!" Zhang Tie explained with a smile. Meanwhile, he added one sentence inside, 'Although I've not spoiled any Hua women, I've indeed experienced some absurd things with some non-Hua women. But, I've not spoiled any of them.'

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Guo Hongyi became really shocked. She threw her glance at Zhang Tie twice before further relieving her serious look, "I feel that you are much better than Gu Qingshan among the knights in Youzhou Province. I hope Gu Qingshan doesn't defeat you!"

"Haha, I will try my best!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie and Guo Hongyi found something sparkling especially on the ground in the distance at the same time. After throwing a glance at each other, they flew towards that place.

It was an open mini-arsenal on the ground. The special luster that they saw was reflected by various weapons in the arsenal.

There were all sorts of weapons in the arsenal which were available for the knights entering the Heavens Ball in case that someone won the competition by practicing fraud with equipment or weapons.

Two more knights caught sight of the sparkling luster over here and also arrived here soon. Although knights would cause a remarkable greater destruction with weapons in hands than without weapons, nobody forced them to use weapons.

Guo Hongyi charged at a pair of golden hooks as they were her well-content weapons.

Zhang Tie picked up one longsword and read its attributes.

——Fantastic Iron Long Sword

——Attributes, Class III sharpness, Class III firmness.

Zhang Tie then picked up one long saber.

——Fantastic iron long saber.

——Attributes, Class III sharpness, Class III firmness.

Without having to check all the other weapons, Zhang Tie knew that all the weapons in this arsenal were only granted with Class III sharpness and Class III firmness. Only in this way could it be fair for this competition.

At the sight of that metal spear container in the corner of the arsenal, Zhang Tie's eyes sparkled as he instantly caught that metal spear container by his hand.

The moment he caught it, Zhang Tie saw another hand stretching towards the spear container with an anxious and furious voice, "Put it down, it's mine!"

...

Chapter 831: The Lion in Youzhou Province

(II)

Zhang Tie chose spears as they were the sharpest and most effective weapon for him to handle demon battle spirits.

To be honest, if anyone among the knights entering the Heavens Ball really wanted to use these spears, Zhang Tie could give them to him if that knight asked him politely. Because the pass of demon battle-spirits was just the appetizer of this competition, Zhang Tie could handle them even in other means. However, this knight was very rude and wanted to rob it away from Zhang Tie's hands. Zhang Tie hated such kind of a person the most.

Zhang Tie could be persuaded by reason but not be cowed by force. At the sight of that hand stretching out towards his spear container, Zhang Tie immediately punched towards him.

With a loud sound "Bang", Zhang Tie slightly flew backward while that man who wanted to rob away the spear container from Zhang Tie responded with a muffled harrumph and flew backward at the same time. The powerful qi, which spilled out of this collision, blew off those weapons at this corner in a split second.

A knight with gray hair, thick eyebrows and leopard's eyes stretched his beard and hair while standing in the air and watched Zhang Tie with a furious look. Zhang Tie also watched him with a cold look.

Zhang Tie had a bit impression about this man—a knight in Gu Clan.

"Hmm, Elder Gu Qingyun is really majestic. You dare even rob other's weapon in the Heavens Ball. Gu Dashou is not the provincial governor of Youzhou Province yet!" Guo Hongyi ironized as she stood on Zhang Tie's side.

Zhang Tie faintly felt something special about Guo Hongyi's cold

harrumph.

When Gu Qinglong heard Guo Hongyi's words, he faintly changed his face. Closely after that, he watched Zhang Tie with a sneer, "Zhang Clan in Yanghe Prefecture is really insidious. You know that my nickname is 1,000-step Immortal Spear; however, you still grabbed spears ahead of me. Don't you think it shameful to do that?"

Zhang Tie picked his ears by his hand and flicked his fingernail, making Gu Qinglong's eyebrows keep jumping, "What a coincidence. I've also got a nickname Demon-killing Immortal Spear. I excel at using spears. As I got it ahead of you, of course, it should belong to me. Do you think that you're too arbitrary?"

"How could it be so fortuitous?" Gu Qinglong felt Zhang Tie was fabricating a lie.

With a sparkling light in the eyes, Zhang Tie asked, "You don't believe that, Elder Gu Qinglong?"

As Elder Gu Qinglong was always emulative, how could he admit his mistake to this juvenile orally? Therefore, he answered immediately, "Of course not!"

Zhang Tie almost burst out into laughter. However, apparently, he let out a deep bitter sigh, "Now that Elder Gu doesn't believe in me. In order to preserve the reputation of Zhang Clan in Yanghe Prefecture, I have to show off my spear throwing skill in front of you; otherwise, if the head of Zhang Clan in Yanghe Prefecture wins the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province in a fluky way, Elder Gu might fabricate that our Zhang Clan won the competition by playing tricks. Such a victory is shameful, our Zhang Clan usually win people by virtue!"

Before Elder Gu Qinglong responded, a roar had drifted from afar. Hearing that, everybody's heart pounded as the competition finally started.

The roar came from a demon battle spirit less than 15 miles away from here.

Hearing that sound, Gu Qinglong threw a glare at Zhang Tie as he immediately picked up a huge saber and darted towards the source of that roar.

Of course, Guo Hongyi and Zhang Tie also accelerated towards there. The remaining knight flew towards the demon battle spirit after selecting a weapon too.

Gu Qinglong, Zhang Tie and Guo Hongyi could fly almost at the same speed. Of course, Zhang Tie could fly faster. However, he didn't think it was necessary to show off his trump card at this moment.

There were also 53 LV 15 demon battle spirits. After they appeared in the Heavens Ball, it seemed that they could sense and lock the locations of the surrounding human knights. When Zhang Tie, Gu Qinglong and Guo Hongyi rushed towards them, those demon battle spirits also darted towards them.

4 demon battle spirits flew towards them. After flying a couple of miles, they had seen the first demon battle spirit. Guo Hongyi accelerated in a split second and rushed towards the nearest demon battle spirit.

Gu Qinglong and Zhang Tie didn't compete with Guo Hongyi as the first battle spirit could only help her be familiar with the battle sense in this space. Although she could get a point ahead of them, it had not come to the grand show. Additionally, if they competed with Guo Hongyi even for only one battle spirit, they might be revenged by her.

Noticing that Gu Qinglong gave up the first demon battle spirit, Zhang Tie abandoned the chance too. He then continued to fly towards far neck and neck with Gu Qinglong.

In the flight, Gu Qinglong became faintly shocked as he found

that Zhang Tie could fly easily as fast as him with a metal spear container which contained 18 heavy spears weighing at least 300 kg on his back. Although such a bit weight was nothing for a knight on the ground, it tested his flying ability in the sky at such a high speed.

'It seems that this junior is something!' Gu Qinglong made a cold harrumph inside. He still didn't believe that Zhang Tie's nickname was Demon-killing Immortal Spear until now. 'How could it be so fortuitous! The moment I told him that my nickname was 1,000 Step Immortal Spear, he had exposed his nickname. He dares plagiarize two words of my nickname, how disgusting he is!'

That was how men always felt. As long as they had an impression of something, they would form a fixed opinion about that thing and would stick to their opinion.

The two knights flew over 50 m above the ground while there were undulating hills below their feet. The hills were covered with 1 m high odd-looking bluegrasses.

In front of their eyes, two LV 15 iron-armored demon battle spirits flashed out of a hill from 200 m ahead of them and rushed towards Zhang Tie and Gu Qinglong. The battle qis of the two iron-armored demons pushed bluegrass waves towards two sides.

With bold temperament, bloody eyes, grim expression, exposed fangs, they were same as real iron-armored demons. Commoners, at the sight of two iron-armored demons rushing towards them, would feel terrified, except for Zhang Tie.

At the sight of the two iron-armored demons, Elder Gu Qinglong growled as he sped up immediately towards the first iron-armored demon, leaving Zhang Tie behind.

When he surpassed Zhang Tie, Elder Gu Qinglong sneered inside, 'That's what a junior should be! However, he had not noticed the faint smile on Zhang Tie's face when Zhang Tie slowed down his speed on purpose.

Zhang Tie took out two spears from his spear container.

...

"Go die!" Elder Gu Qinglong roared when he was over 50 m away from the first demon battle spirit. At the same time, he waved his big saber, causing a powerful saber qi to roll towards the nearest demon battle spirit. It seemed that he wanted to kill that demon battle spirit in a split second.

This Gu Qingyun was also a saber sage.

Generally speaking, although the black iron knight's battle strength was above that of the demon battle spirit, the battle spirit was able to wrestle with the black iron knight. Common black iron knight could barely kill a battle spirit easily. However, sometimes, powerful saber sage and sword sage could also kill a demon battle spirit in a split second based on his powerful battle strength and battle skills.

Elder Gu Qinglong's saber qi was like a huge sickle's sharp blade. With sparkling white light, it cut through the 1-m high purple prairie and rolled towards the demon battle spirit. When the saber qi was less than 20 m away from that demon battle spirit, it split into halves and blocked all the dodging space of that demon battle spirit from top to bottom.

This movement displayed Gu Qinglong's powerful battle strength and control force as a saber sage.

It seemed that the demon battle spirit was destined to be killed by Gu Qinglong. Elder Gu Qinglong even revealed a faint smile.

Right then, a flame flashed across...

When Elder Gu Qingyun's saber qi was only 3-5 m away from that demon battle spirit, the target was suddenly shattered like being struck by a lightning bolt, causing a loud sound "Boom".

A fiery line burned in the air...

As a powerful knight who also excelled at throwing spears, Gu Qingyun knew what did that fiery line mean. It indicated that someone's spear throwing skill had reached a legendary realm, in which, it would not produce any sonic boom; instead it would cause a flame, which was due to the ignition of the free hydrogen and oxygen in the air when in flight. The remaining flame was the only evidence of the flying spear while the thunder-like sound would not be heard until the spear hit the target. Such a realm of spear throwing skill enjoyed a name in Taixia Country—thunder in a palm.

It was far more than awakening ancestral bloodline. It was the perfect combination of unrivaled strength, knight-rank battle qi, insight and transcendental skills. Even though the energy of the explosion was reduced. How powerful was that spear!

"Zhang Clan used to win people by virtue!" Zhang Tie's sound drifted into Gu Qinglong's ears. At the same time, Zhang Tie had passed Gu Qinglong and released another fiery line towards the 2nd demon battle spirit hundreds of meters away as fast as a lightning bolt. With another thunder, the 2nd demon battle spirit was shattered too. Zhang Tie waved his hands for the 3rd time while another flame flew off and hit another battle spirit. With another boom, the 3rd demon battle spirit was shattered.

At the sight of this, the other knight who had arrived here a bit later instantly turned around and went to seek for other battle spirits. Because he realized that he could not even have soup behind such a domineering guy, not to mention eating flesh.

The points in Zhang Mushen's column in the sky surged from 0 to 3 almost in a second...

Chapter 832: The Lion in Youzhou Province (III)

The mirage above Youzhou City could simultaneously manifest the battle situation in the Heavens Ball. However, as the Heavens Ball's space covered over 100,000 square miles, it could not be fully manifested in the mirage at the same time. Therefore, the mirage only manifested the battle situation in the eyes of the controller of the Heavens Ball, namely Commander Cheng.

Almost the moment Zhang Tie threw his first spear, the pair of eyes in the sky of earth-elements realm had narrowed and moved onto Zhang Tie. Closely after that, Zhang Tie's image in the pair of eyes was manifested clearly in the mirage. After that, everybody in and out of Youzhou City could see it.

It was like making a live aerial video using a special apparatus in a glider or an airship from a certain visual angle. When Zhang Tie showed his trump card thunder-in-palm, onlookers were really shocked.

Although nobody saw Zhang Tie's first blow, everybody across Youzhou City caught sight of Zhang Tie's second and third blows.

Two LV 15 ferocious demon battle spirits with full killing qi were crossing over the prairie and rushing towards a juvenile and an old man from hundreds of meters away. Although they were still hundreds of meters away, all the onlookers across Youzhou City had sensed the power of the two battle spirits. However, nobody across Youzhou City could see clearly how that juvenile launched an attack while a fiery line suddenly appeared between the juvenile and a powerful demon battle spirit. Closely after that, the demon battle spirit was shattered like a broken balloon...

With the appearance of another fiery line, the second further demon battle spirit was shattered too.

'Second Kill!'

'Killed two LV 15 demon battle spirits in a split second?'

'Demon battle spirits who were almost as powerful as knights were killed like shi*t?'

Amazing! After a transient tranquility, the entire Youzhou City was in an uproar. Nobody could imagine such a shocking scene at the beginning of the competition. Many people who came to Youzhou City especially for watching the competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou City instantly became spirited like winning the lottery. 'What a worthwhile trip! Otherwise, I would never see such a splendid scene in the future.'

Almost at the same time, the same question spread across millions of people in and out of Youzhou City.

'Who's that juvenile knight?'

'What's that battle skill?'

'How could he kill a LV 15 demon battle spirit from 500 m away in a split second? That's terrifying!'

"That's cool..." Many ladies and girls who had seen Zhang Tie land on the White Tiger Square just now almost passed out when they watched Zhang Tie's majestic battle performance in the mirage. Zhang Tie's image was much more shocking and exciting than those so-called superstars before the Catastrophe.

...

In Huaiyuan Mansion, after watching how Zhang Tie killed two demon battle spirits in a split second in a cool way, some deacons and disciples of Huaiyuan Palace in the Huaiyuan Mansion were stunned immediately. Closely after that, they jumped up due to excitement, "That's Elder Mushen, that's Elder Mushen..."

All the other people in Huaiyuan Mansion became thrilled too. They all knew that it was uneasy for Huaiyuan Palace to compete

for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. Apparently, Lu Clan and Gu Clan were both a bit more powerful than Huaiyuan Palace. However, all the deacons and disciples of Huaiyuan Palace had not imagined that the first one who showed up in the mirage was Elder Mushen, the youngest elder in Huaiyuan Palace.

When Zhang Tie took his family members to Youzhou City two days ago, although the deacons and disciples in Huaiyuan Mansion didn't dare complain about Zhang Tie apparently, they felt a bit unhappy inside; some even felt that Elder Mushen was a bit slack about the competition which was related to the benefits of everybody in Huaiyuan Palace. However, given Zhang Tie's current performance, all those deacons and disciples had to digest their bad thoughts in an extremely shameful way. Meanwhile, hearing the exclamations across Youzhou City, everybody in Huaiyuan Mansion felt proud and honorable. Even the eldest deacons of Zhang Clan became so thrilled that their facial muscles started to quiver. They kept shouting "cool" many times forcefully.

...

"Thunder-in-Palm, Thunder-in-Palm..." The two young knights on both sides of the original body of Commander Cheng in White Tiger Complex exchanged a glance with each other and found the other's shocked look——Thunder-in-Palm, virtual flame in the air. It's extremely irresistible and indestructible. All those below knights were nothing but sh*t. Few knights in Taixia Country could reach such a supreme realm in spear throwing skill. They had not imagined that they could see such a talent in Youzhou City.

Flames appeared in the eyes of the disciple of Heavens Fortune Sect...

...

Watching the points behind Zhang Mushen of Zhang Clan from

Yanghe Prefecture to surge from 0 to 3 in a split second in the sky of earth-elements realm simulated by the Heavens Ball, all the other knights in the Heavens Ball were slightly shocked, including Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan.

As for those knights in the Heavens Ball, they could not see the scene that could be watched by people outside the Heavens Ball. Zhang Tie's efficiency was so high that no other knight knew the reason. Because at this moment, even Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan had just killed two demon battle spirits in total.

In the blood rain of demon battle spirits, Gu Qinglong raised his head and took a look at the list in the sky. His eyes then twinkled once. Closely after that, he became firm and persistent once again...

...

Guo Hongyi had a ferocious battle strength. With the pair of golden hooks, the demon battle spirit only stood for half a minute before being torn apart. Guo Hongyi felt her efficiency was high. 'As there're 3 more battle spirits over there, if I moved faster, I might kill one more.'

'Hmm, battle spirit is the point. Of course, the talented one will get the point. This grandma will not care whom it belongs to!' Guo Hongyi made a cold harrumph inside before flying towards Zhang Tie.

However, she saw nothing but blood and shattered bones over the grasses. The 3 demon battle spirits had long disappeared.

"Ahh, who did that?"

Watching Gu Qinglong's furious and a bit shocked look, Guo Hongyi glimpsed at the list in the sky. Closely after that, she moved her eyes onto Zhang Tie when she found Zhang Tie's spear container lacked 3 spears.

"Is that you?" Guo Hongyi looked at Zhang Tie with an amazed

look. She immediately understood something. However, before Zhang Tie uttered, Guo Hongyi instantly turned her face. In a wink, she flew towards another direction. Before leaving, she even left a warning, "Whoever dares to rob this grandma's point, this grandma swears to beat him after this competition!"

There were 53 battle spirits in the first round. Each knight could share one fairly as a practice. Any knight could almost kill a battle spirit. However, knights appeared in different locations optionally; so were those battle spirits. After the first batch of battle spirits appeared, nimbler and more powerful knights might get two battle spirits while poorer ones could get nothing. Only in this way could there be a difference between points on the list.

Only after a short while, all the 53 demon battle spirits had turned into the points of each clan.

As was imagined, 7 of the 53 knights got no point, including Elder Gu Qinglong of Gu Clan. After killing 3 knights, Zhang Tie ranked first on the list.

Before the 2nd batch of battle spirits appeared, Elder Gu Qinglong roared and flew towards afar, closely followed by Zhang Tie in a leisure way.

Gu Qinglong was driven mad as he glared at Zhang Tie, "Why are you following me?"

Zhang Tie replied with a gentle look, "Now that Elder Gu has a misconception about me, of course, I will win you by virtue by showing my spear throwing skill in front of you. Meanwhile, I have to wash off the possible bad reputation that Huaiyuan Palace might suffer from. As long as Elder Gu apologizes to Huaiyuan Palace for your words and deed, I will leave you!"

"Junior, don't dream!" Elder Gu was so furious that he almost spat out blood. Every clan elder was arrogant. Even if elders spoke or did something wrong, none of them would apologize to juniors. Additionally, Zhang Clan and Gu Clan were competing for the

position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, if he admitted his mistake, it would indicate that Gu Clan admitted defeat to Zhang Clan. Therefore, Gu Qinglong would never do that at this critical moment.

"Now that Elder Gu is so persistent, it seems that I'm not excellent in your eyes. I could only continue to win you by virtue and help you to change your bias towards me and Zhang Clan through actual movements!" Zhang Tie said solemnly although being extremely thrilled inside.

Zhang Tie didn't know that in a cyber game before the Catastrophe, there was a behavior which made people disgustful — "Robbing Monster" 1 . However, it was a knight's commitment to kill demons. It was aboveboard for Zhang Tie to "win Elder Gu by virtue" instead of "robbing monster"...

As for the essence of this competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, long story short, defeat the knights of all the other clans. All the competitions in this secular world were like this such as battle between humans, parties, regimes, nations even races to the final analysis. As Zhang Tie had a chance to defeat an elder of Gu Clan, why not take that chance of winning him by virtue?

Soon, Zhang Tie's effect of "winning Elder Gu by virtue" started to manifest.

After the first batch of 53 battle spirits was exterminated, the second batch of 106 demon battle spirits appeared almost in a split second...

Another demon battle spirit entered the visions of Zhang Tie and Gu Qinglong. However, with a fiery line, before the battle spirit drew close to them, it had been blown up.

In the next few minutes, accompanied by Elder Gu's roar, Zhang Tie not only killed those battle spirits which belonged to him but also killed those which belonged to Elder Gu. Additionally, none of

those battle spirits on the way could escape away from Zhang Tie's thunder-in-palm. In a wink, Zhang Tie's points had surged to 9, which was really eye-catching on the list. By contrast, Elder Gu's point was still 0.

Chapter 833: The Lion in Youzhou Province (IV)

It grew increasingly fiercer in the Heavens Ball. After the 106 demon battle spirits in the second round were exterminated, the third batch of 159 demon battle spirits appeared in this ground covering 100,000 square miles in a wink.

100,000 square miles sounded being a large area; however, if it served as the battlefield between over 50 human knights and demon battle spirits, it would not be that large. On average, it would take each human knight about half an hour to fly from one end to the other end of this earth-elements realm. However, those faster ones only needed 20 minutes.

Elder Gu Qinglong was so furious that his eyes seemed about to pop out. When Zhang Tie shattered demon battle spirits one after another in front of him with his terrifying spear throwing skill, Gu Qinglong could do nothing but widely open his eyes because his moving speed could never match that of Zhang Tie's spear.

Elder Gu Qinglong finally realized that he had become the bait of a guy whom he called junior. Even if he stayed still, those demon battle spirits would also come for him within a certain range according to the rule of Heavens Ball. He attempted to stay still in one place; however, the result was that Zhang Tie flew around him and killed demon battle spirits one after another as usual.

If they were outside the Heavens Ball, Elder Gu Qinglong would have long fought Zhang Tie ferociously; however, at this moment, Zhang Tie's deeds were allowed. If Gu Qinglong launched an attack towards Zhang Tie, he would be driven out of the Heavens Ball right away, causing a major loss to Gu Clan.

Actually, Zhang Tie and Elder Gu Qinglong had long realized that the pair of eyes in the sky belonged to Commander Cheng, who was watching them to fight demons and knew everything in the

Heavens Ball clearly. Nobody could play any trick in front of Commander Cheng.

Watching Zhang Tie's surging points and his 0 points, Elder Gu Qinglong felt especially regretful. 'If I have known about this result, I would not ask for any spear from this pervert of Zhang Clan. Perhaps, I could show my tolerance and beg for his forgiveness, which would be better than being troubled by this Zhang b*stard.' However, as he had made the wrong decision, even if he wanted to beg for Zhang Tie's forgiveness at this moment, it would be meaningless.

Because Zhang Tie had almost used up all of his spears, winning 18 points for himself. By contrast, Gu Qinglong's point was still 0, which was very eye-catching.

"Junior, you're so despicable!" Elder Gu Qinglong swore Zhang Tie while gritting his teeth.

"I'm winning you by virtue!" Zhang Tie said solemnly while throwing away the last spear. Closely after that, he rushed forward and threw that metal spear container towards that demon battle spirit. When the demon battle spirit dodged away, Zhang Tie sped up abruptly and punched that demon battle spirit. After breaking its protective battle qi with the first punch, Zhang Tie smashed it into pieces by the second punch, setting his points in the first three rounds at 19.

Elder Gu Qinglong was shocked by Zhang Tie's strength.

That demon battle spirit might be the last one of the 159 demon battle spirits in the 3rd round. Because after that battle spirit was killed by Zhang Tie for less than 1 second, black lights had flashed in the earth-elements realm. The demon knights finally appeared.

Watching those black lights and the powerful qis of demon knights that filled this earth-elements realm, all the human knights in the Heavens Ball realized that the true test had arrived.

As none of the human knights had been killed in the first 3 rounds, 63 demon knights appeared in the 4th round.

Although the number of opponents decreased compared to that in the 3rd round, the demon knights were much trickier than LV 15 battle spirits. Additionally, in such a simulated duel, the 10 more demon knights caused a great stress to all the human knights.

Zhang Tie and Elder Gu Qinglong were surrounded by 3 black lights, closely after which, three iron-armored demon knights showed their terrifying figures while releasing their powerful black battle qis into the sky.

The 3 demon knights darted towards the 2 people from 3 directions.

Zhang Tie retreated at a higher speed than that of Elder Gu Qinglong.

Neither of them hoped to be surrounded by over 2 demon knights at this moment.

Pitifully, Elder Gu Qinglong was a bit slower than Zhang Tie. Finally, one demon knight chased after Zhang Tie while Elder Gu Qinglong was surrounded by 2 demon knights. Gu Qinglong revealed a bitter smile.

'Why? Why an old fellow like me didn't even kill one demon battle spirit just now but got surrounded by 2 demon knights at this moment? Why didn't these 2 demon knights go after that b*stard of Zhang Clan? Why?'

Elder Gu Qinglong felt very indignant at this moment.

The 3 demon knights might be attracted by Zhang Tie.

After flying away from the battle cloud between Elder Gu Qinglong and the other two demon knights for dozens of miles, Zhang Tie instantly turned around and collided with that demon knight.

The moment the collision started, Zhang Tie had realized that these demon knights could match those demon knights whom he had fought in Waii Sub-continent. All of these demon knights were above average.

'This will be a fierce battle!'

However, Zhang Tie was not afraid of such a fierce battle; instead, he was extremely thrilled. At this moment, he sensed that he was not in the Heavens Ball but in his trouble-reappearance situation, which could provide him with demon knights for his practice.

Among all the human knights, Zhang Tie might be the most excited and relaxed one. As a result, he could exert his battle strength to the utmost.

From the beginning, Zhang Tie had chosen the fiercest and riskiest close combat.

...

Almost the moment the demon knights appeared, Zhang Taixuan and Lu Dingzhi who were going to promote to earth knights as the most powerful ones among the 53 human knights had been surrounded by 4 demon knights respectively. 3 of each group of 4 demon knights formed a 3-in-1 matrix as the main attacking force while the remaining demon knight would serve as the aiding strength. A much fiercer battle came to a start in a split second. The space of the earth-elements realm was filled with roars everywhere. As a result, the land covering 100,000 square miles turned into a battlefield of over 100 knights at once.

Compared to Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan, Gu Dashou, the head of Gu Clan whose battle strength was a bit weaker was surrounded by 2 demon knights.

As a result, the remaining 50 human knights would only have a probability of about 1/17 to be attacked by 2 demon knights at the

same time.

Given this point, Elder Gu Qinglong was really hapless.

...

The appearance of demon knights made the entire Youzhou City boil once again.

Although Zhang Tie's performance was best among all the human knights just now, Commander Cheng would not just keep his eyes on him. After demon knights appeared, the fierce battle between knights broke out. All the human knights started to show off their talents. Therefore, Commander Cheng was attracted by the fiercest battles.

...

Being surrounded by 4 demon knights at the same time, Lu Dingzhi released golden flames, which kept circling around him rapidly. With the appearance of these flames, the temperature of his surrounding air started to go straight up while being twisted. As a result, the 4 demon knights felt like being roasted above the furnace fire with splitting skins and broken flesh. With smoke, the demon knights started to howl miserably...

Watching Lu Dingzhi's burning body, the onlookers across Youzhou City boiled once again. While being circled by 6 golden flames, Lu Dingzhi was fighting 4 demon knights at the same time, making him look like a commanding fire God.

Many people on the side of Commander Cheng in White Deer Complex drew in a cold breath at the same time.

"Lu's ancestor took the position of Zhu Rong, the Hua fire god in the regime of Emperor Yao, who managed the immortal flames across the world. The most powerful ancestral bloodlines of Lu Clan are all related to fire. However, I've not imagined that Lu Dingzhi has awakened the 6-yang Immortal Flame. It seems that he was not only building coins for the Ministry of Finance but also

cultivating during the years when he served as the Coin Building Officer in Golden Rock Sub-continent, not bad, not bad!" Commander Cheng opened his mouth with full admiration.

As the 6 golden flames circled around Lu Dingzhi, the 4 demon knights' matrix was broken by Lu Dingzhi at once. Closely after that, the 6 golden flames circled around one demon knight and burned it into ashes immediately...

It was the first demon knight being killed in the 4th round.

Watching this scene, all the people of Lu Clan cheered up in Youzhou City.

'Compared to killing demon battle spirits, killing demon knights is the real talent.'

However, before Lu Clan's people finished their exclamations, the focus in the mirage was shifted to Zhang Taixuan the Count Long Wind...

Compared to Lu Dingzhi, Zhang Taixuan's performance made the entire Youzhou City silent.

It seemed that each cell of Zhang Taixuan the Count Long Wind was giving vent to his domineering temperament.

With the roars of the surrounding 4 demon knights, Zhang Taixuan darted forward like a bolt. Closely after that, he punched a demon knight's head and penetrated through another demon knight's chest. The demon knight whose head had been blown up by Zhang Taixuan turned into Zhang Taixuan's crossbow while the demon knight whose chest was penetrated through turned into Zhang Taixuan's bolt. Zhang Taixuan triggered his bolt and blew up the 3rd demon knight...

"Use everything in the universe as crossbow and bolt. What a Heavens Crossbow Bloodline of Zhang Clan!" Commander Cheng praised loudly, "Besides a picturesque landscape, Youzhou City contains so many heroes!"

The focus was then shifted to another place, as a light rose up, Gu Qingyun of Gu Clan activated his aiding strength...

Chapter 834: The Lion in Youzhou Province (V)

After fighting the demon knight for over 20 minutes through close combat, Zhang Tie finally broke its protective battle qi. With a roar "go die", he punched his two fists onto the demon battle knight's chest and smashed it into pieces with vigorous battle qi.

It was the first demon knight that Zhang Tie killed in the Heavens Ball.

After killing it, Zhang Tie raised his head and took a look at the list. The most powerful battle strength among the 53 human knights had been manifested on the list. Undoubtedly, Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan were the most powerful ones.

Lu Dingzhi——26 points.

Zhang Taixuan——29 points.

Zhang Tie remembered that Lu Dingzhi's points were 11 while Zhang Taixuan's points were only 9 after the 3rd round. Given their current points, Zhang Tie knew that Lu Dingzhi had killed 3 demon knights and Zhang Taixuan had killed 4 demon knights in the past 20 minutes.

Zhang Tie was really shocked by the battle strength of the heads of Lu Clan and Zhang Clan.

After killing one demon knight, Zhang Tie's points also rose to 24 points. As a result, Zhang Tie ranked 3rd on the list, making him eye-catching too.

As Gu Dashou had just killed two demon knights, his points were 21. Therefore, he ranked below Zhang Tie.

Just now, Zhang Tie had sensed that someone activated his aiding strength; however, he didn't know who did it. It reminded Zhang Tie that he should converge with the other elders of

Huaiyuan Palace and activate his aiding strength as soon as possible.

In a couple of seconds, Zhang Tie saw another black light a few meters away. Closely after that, another demon knight appeared and darted towards Zhang Tie with red eyes.

From the 4th round, all the human knights had to fight demon knights ceaselessly. As long as they killed one demon knight, they would face a new one at once.

After swearing it inside, Zhang Tie escaped right away.

At this moment, Zhang Tie caught sight of two familiar battle qis gathering with each other over 70 miles away. Zhang Tie knew that Elder Muray and Elder Muyuan had met each other.

Right then, a loud boom and roar drifted from afar while a knight's battle qi suddenly rose up and scattered in all directions. Closely after that, the name Gu Qinglong disappeared from the list, leaving 10 points on the list.

Zhang Tie was a bit stunned as he had not imagined that Elder Gu Qinglong could be the first human knight killed in the Heavens Ball. 'He died together with the two demon knights. Elder Gu Qinglong is not weak in battle strength. Pitifully, he's too hapless today. As he annoyed me, he failed to gain even one point in the first 3 rounds; I "won him by virtue". At the beginning of the 4th round, he was wrestled by 2 demon knights. He encountered the most ferocious battle at the beginning; therefore, he had to leave pitifully in the end.'

By then, although Elder Gu Qinglong didn't feel pitiful, he gained 10 points more or less. Therefore, he was not too disgraced.

Zhang Tie knew that it was just a beginning. After Elder Gu Qinglong exited, demon knights' numerical superiority would be more evident. As a result, more and more human knights would be eliminated.

With the gradual decrease of human knights, demon knights would have greater advantage in number. 63:53 was totally different than 23:13 even 11: 1 in the end.

...

Closely after Elder Gu Qinglong, who was sitting on the Heavenly Altar beside the Heavens Ball, opened his eyes had he been invited by a young man on Commander Cheng's side to the high platform beside Commander Cheng. This was a courteous reception for him. After leaving the Heavenly Altar, Elder Gu Qinglong was extremely furious. Before getting off the Heavenly Altar, he even threw a glare at Zhang Tie in the team of Huaiyuan Palace. He must have sworn Zhang Tie numerous times. If not Zhang Tie, Elder Gu Qinglong felt that he could at least gain 20 points in the Heavens Ball. However, due to Zhang Tie, he could only exit in advance. However, what made him reassured was that Gu Qingyun, the future star of Gu Clan, had manifested his powerful aiding strength and killed a demon in the mirage.

'Alas, what if I was on Gu Qingyun's side just now? If I gained the aiding strength, I would not have used such an extreme means to sacrifice myself together with the two demon knights.' As Elder Gu Qinglong thought about this, he reached below the high platform where Commander Cheng was sitting in. After bowing towards Commander Cheng, he took a seat on one side of Commander Cheng and watched the combat patiently.

'I will see how many tricks could that b*stard junior of Zhang Clan play. I will show that junior that he's nothing in front of the excellent disciples of Gu Clan.' Elder Gu Qinglong gritted his teeth.

As he lost the battle, Elder Gu Qinglong found that it was meaningless to haggle over what happened in the Heavens Ball. Additionally, Zhang Tie didn't violate any rule since the beginning. If he really exposed what happened just now to the public, he would be the laughingstock instead of Zhang Tie. It was Gu Qinglong himself who intended to rob Zhang Tie's spear container,

therefore, he should not blame Zhang Tie for what happened after that.

At this moment, Elder Gu Qinglong was like an angry commoner. Although he despised Zhang Tie, he still pinned his hope on Gu Qingyun, the most brilliant junior of Gu Clan and hoped Gu Qingyun to revenge for him.

Many people in White Tiger Complex were discussing Gu Qingyun's aiding strength in low voice and exclamation. Hearing their talks, Elder Qingyun gradually felt spirited, relieved and mentally balanced.

Human knight's aiding strength was always most eye-catching wherever it was. It was Gu Qingyun's first time to manifest his aiding strength in the public. Therefore, his performance won him numerous exclamations. Due to his excellent performance, Gu Qingyun's halos as the "No. 1 youth in Youzhou" which had just faded away due to Zhang Tie's excellent performance became bright once again.

'No matter how sharp was the thunder-in-palm of that shameless junior of Zhang Clan, it was greatly dwarfed by knight's aiding strength. They are not on the same level at all.'

With the aiding strength of Gu Qingyun, the battle strength of Gu Qingyun himself and the other 4 elders of Gu Clan besides Gu Qinglong were greatly improved. Gu knights felt like wearing advanced rune equipment with rapid recovery effects which were really admirable. As a result, Gu knights gained an advantage in the Heavens Ball at once.

After a short while, an elder of Lu Clan also manifested his aiding strength. As a time-honored major clan in Youzhou Province, Lu Clan also started to manifest their muscles and background. With the aiding strength of that Lu elder, the battle qis of Lu knight's near him started to burn like flames. The fire element in the battle qis of Lu knights was activated at once, granting them with greater

battle strength.

The third knight who manifested her aiding strength was Guo Hongyi, the woman who scared all the other knights in Youzhou Province.

When Guo Hongyi appeared in the mirage, numerous women across Youzhou City felt arrogant. The exclamations of female filled the whole city.

All the female across Youzhou Province took Guo Hongyi, the head of Guo Clan, Sanquan Prefecture as their model. She really had a great prestige among the women in Youzhou Province.

Guo Hongyi's aiding strength was more special, which didn't act on the knights of her party but on those demon knights who fought her. With the effect of Guo Hongyi's aiding strength, a black rune appeared above the heads of the 3 demon knights who were fighting her and the other Guo elders. As a result, the three demon knights' movements turned slower evidently...

"I've not imagined that I could see the trickiest dark aiding strength in Youzhou Province. No wonder someone said that Youzhou abounded with heroes since ancient times. There're so many female heroes in Youzhou Province!"

Hearing the talks on his side, Elder Gu Qinglong felt a bit uncomfortable; however, he had to admit Guo Hongyi's ability.

Guo Hongyi was the biggest trouble-maker in Youzhou Province. Her battle strength was above average, not to mention her background; especially her dark aiding strength, which made many knights across Youzhou Province embarrassed. Therefore, Guo Hongyi's influence among male knights across Youzhou Province also increased.

Aiding strength was the supreme strength that a knight could master. Only less than 1/20 of knights across Taixia Country could master aiding strength. Aiding strength was not roadside cabbage.

If not the competition, many commoners might not be able to see the effect of aiding strength in their whole lives, not to mention 3 times today. However, when Elder Gu Qinglong thought that there would not be the 4th aiding strength in the Heavens Ball today, he abruptly heard a surprised sound of Commander Cheng, "Yi?"...

With that sound, the most disgusting guy appeared in the mirage.

An extremely brilliant, golden light beam appeared on Zhang Tie's body like a huge golden string of a musical instrument. Closely after that, the golden light beam turned into a brilliant, rotating aura with complex geometrical patterns on it like a mysterious huge wheel which represented knight's aiding strength. After that, the huge aura spread over the battlefield, causing the same brilliant golden aura to appear on the other two Zhang elders who were fighting demon knights. The other two Zhang elders became more thrilled and intrepid at once.

The lighting effect of the aiding strength alone was many times more powerful than that of Gu Qingshan; especially its golden light beam and aura which were extremely dignified. Among all the colorful aiding strengths, golden was the purest and most dignified color as it represented that the owner of this special strength had soul and spirit as pure and dignified as gold. Those who were sordid inside could never resonate with such an aiding strength.

In Taixia Country, golden aiding strength's aura represented not only the greatest aiding strength but also the pure and dignified soul and perfect personality of the owner of this golden aiding strength.

Those who had such a noble name-card was called gentleman in Taixia Country!

Among Hua people before the Catastrophe, the appellation "gentleman" had been abused for a long time. Any famous one who had read some books, fished for fame, had a higher morality than average ones and did something good would call themselves or be

called gentlemen. In this age, the appellation "gentleman" recovered its original meaning.

In Taixia Country, a gentleman was not definitely a knight; however, the so-called gentleman was definitely more respectable than knights even officers.

Gentleman in this age referred to those who tried their best to be sages from both their words and deeds.

Sages referred to those who were free from universal rules and emancipated humans.

Each Hua people had the potential to be a gentleman and a sage. It was also why a part of Hua people called themselves an immortal clan. Among the billions of humans, which other human races pursue the freedom of universal rules and the emancipation of humans? From ancient times to the present, only Hua people had such a supreme pursuit. After hundreds of millions of years, the supreme pursuit had been branded in the genes and bloodlines of each Hua offspring forever.

Elder Gu Qinglong was shocked...

Together with many other people in the White Tiger Complex...

It took a few seconds for the uproar across Youzhou City to turn into silence.

Nobody had imagined that there was a "gentleman" among the 53 human knights in the Heavens Ball.

Elder Gu Qinglong felt like his chest was being stomped by dozens of buffaloes constantly for a few days as he almost wanted to spurt out blood. He could accept that others manifested their aiding strengths, including that shameless junior of Zhang Clan; however, he could never accept that the "shameless junior of Zhang Clan" was manifesting a gentle strength which could only be manifested by a gentleman. The dazzling golden brilliance of this gentle strength almost made his eyes turn red out of jealousy.

Meanwhile, he felt being smacked on his face.

'If that "shameless junior of Zhang Clan" was a gentleman, who was that guy who prevented me from touching even one battle spirit in the first 3 rounds with the excuse of "winning you by virtue"?'

'Was that shameless junior really thinking about "winning me by virtue" at that moment? Did I measure the stature of a gentleman by the yardstick of a villain?'

When Elder Gu Qingyun thought about this, his face twitched.

"Fabulous!" Commander Cheng growled as he punched onto the table in front of him, turning it into dust in a split second. Commander Cheng was so happy that he burst out into laughter which could be heard across the White Tiger Complex. Swarthy face turned bright as he uttered, "Hahahaha, from today on, those b*stards would dare not mock my subordinates as bandits. I have another gentleman with me, f*ck..."

Among those people at present, another one was shocked most.

The young elite of Heavens Fortune Sect watched Zhang Tie's golden aura in the mirage, which seemingly turned to the shimmering ripples on the river under the sunglow—a junior was squatting down on the riverside and washing his tablewares while watching him with a curious look...

'How fabulous it is! If the gentleman was not fabulous, who else would be fabulous in the world?'

Realizing that the image of the junior who washed tablewares on the riverside was greatly different than that in his imagination, the young elite of Heavens Fortune Sect felt that his head was going to blow up.

The elder of Heavens Fortune Sect had been watching Zhang Tie silently with his intelligent and profound eyes since Zhang Tie manifested his gentle strength.

After a short while, the young elite of Heavens Fortune Sect raised his head with a faintly pale face while his eyes were sparkling a bizarre light. He then asked his elder in a decisive, secret way, "Master, I want to go inside!"

He received one word, "Wait!"

...

The battle between human knights and demon knights continued in the Heavens Ball; however, as 4 human knights had manifested their aiding strengths, the battle became fiercer.

Demon knights were like endless demonized puppets. Whenever you killed one, new demon knights would arrive. Even 53 earth knights could not stand that, not to mention black iron knights.

Zhang Tie didn't know that his gentle strength had brought a great shock to the outside. Nobody described his aiding strength to him before. Besides that insight in Ewentra Archipelago, he had not manifested it in another place before. Even though elders of Huaiyuan Palace knew that he had aiding strength, they had not seen it.

After Elder Gu Qingyun exited the Heavens Ball for a few minutes, other clans' knights constantly exited it.

After one hour, all the 4 knights of Liu Clan in Changshan Prefecture exited the Heavens Ball...

Chapter 835: The Lion in Youzhou Province

(VI)

In the Heavens Ball, Zhang Tie didn't know that his aiding strength——Supreme Protection had aroused a great shock on the outside as he had no time to care about that.

The other 5 elders of Huaiyuan Palace had long gathered on Zhang Tie's side. With the effect of Zhang Tie's Supreme Protection, they were fighting demon knights ferociously.

More and more human knights were killed in the Heavens Ball; as a result, they had to exit and became the onlookers of this competition. As more and more human knights exited the Heavens Ball, demon knights' advantage turned more and more evident. The remaining human knights felt an increasingly greater stress. In the simulated earth-elements realm covering 100,000 square miles, with the great stress, the selection of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province turned into a cruel elimination match, the weaker clans with fewer clan knights would be kicked out of the Heavens Ball earlier, causing a greater stress to the other clans at the same time and making demon knights more advantageous. All the human knights in the Heavens Ball was sent in a vicious circle where they would collapse and become powerless to resist.

Only the clan which could stick to the end in such a dangerous dilemma with the biggest achievement would be able to take the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province.

Zhang Tie glimpsed Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan twice in the 8 hours of fierce battle, each time, he found that the most powerful ones among the 53 human knights were besieged by a pile of demon knights in the 3-in-1 matrix.

Although those demon knights who besieged Lu Dingzhi were burned into ashes by Lu Dingzhi's rotating flames, new ones

appeared and kept rushing towards Lu Dingzhi ceaselessly.

Demon knights who besieged Zhang Taixuan constantly became Zhang Taixuan's crossbows and bolts. Meanwhile, the head of Zhang Clan was surrounded with shattered flesh and blood of demon knights. Whereas, black light constantly sparkled.

If it were others, they had long been killed over 100 times in such a dilemma. However, Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan were still fighting.

Facing such a 3-in-1 wheel war, even earth knights would collapse, let alone black iron knights.

Therefore, with the first glimpse, Zhang Tie found that the two people had turned a bit fatigued; with the second glimpse, Zhang Tie found that the two people had been wounded all over.

Aiding strength could arouse resonance, which could only be passed from top to bottom. Aiding strength was like a huge bell. When you rang it, it could resonate with the other huge bells which were of the same size; however, you could not have it resonate with another bell which was many times greater than it. Therefore, Lu's aiding strength and Zhang Tie's aiding strength could not work on Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan, because the latter ones were even closer to earth knights than the demon general.

Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan were very powerful. One's points were always closely followed by that of the other. The number of demon knights they killed was always close. Sometimes, in a very short period, the number of demon knights they killed would have a gap of 2; however, the other one would soon catch up with it, even surpass it. Therefore, the two people were like marathon runners, who were always close to each other.

As the fierce competition between Lu Clan and Zhang Clan proceeded, Gu Clan disappeared.

Actually, Gu Clan didn't disappear. They were just forgotten by onlookers. It seemed to be a law. In those sharply competitive industries and sites, the collisions and wrestles between the most powerful two forces would have the third powerful force fade away from the public. It was called Iceberg Crowding-out Effect——When some floating icebergs collided with each other, those being shattered firstly were those smaller icebergs between the two biggest ones.

As Gu Clan outnumbered Zhang Clan, they should not be over so fast; however, they met Zhang Tie.

From the beginning, Zhang Tie had overwhelmed Gu Clan.

At the White Tiger Complex, Zhang Tie overwhelmed Gu Qingyun with his young age and handsome look.

After entering the Heavens Ball, Zhang Tie's thunder-in-palm shocked the onlookers and made him a superstar. He even attracted the attention of Commander Cheng. With his trump card——thunder-in-palm, Zhang Tie gained 19 points, the highest points in the first 3 rounds, which were even higher than that of Lu Dongzhi and Zhang Taixuan.

After that, Elder Gu Qinglong was eliminated due to the conflict between him and Zhang Tie, causing Gu Clan to lose its numerical advantage over Zhang Clan.

Then, Gu Qingyun manifested his aiding strength and saved some face for Gu Clan. If Zhang Tie didn't manifest his aiding strength, with the effect of Gu Qingyun's aiding strength, even though Zhang Taixuan's battle strength was above all the Gu elders, Gu Clan could also match Zhang Clan for the time being; however, with Zhang Tie's manifestation of his aiding strength, Gu Clan lost its biggest advantage over Zhang Clan. Additionally, simply given the effect of aiding strength, Zhang Tie's Supreme Protection had fully overwhelmed that of Gu Qingyun, not to mention the meaning of gentle strength and its shock to the public.

From then on, Gu Clan had deteriorated into a certain minor role from a possible protagonist in this competition. As Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan killed more and more demon knights, Gu Clan gradually faded away from the vision of the public.

Men of letters were all modest; however, fighters had to compete for the 1st place. When the two moons turned full, all the stars would be cast into the shade. Even powerful knights or talents who were well known across the province would deteriorate into minor roles at this moment.

After Liu Clan in Changshan Prefecture exited, Simon Clan in Xingbei Prefecture, Sun Clan in Guide Prefecture, Guo Clan in Sanquan Prefecture, Li Clan in Miyun Prefecture, Yan Clan in Chaoyang Prefecture also exited one after another and became onlookers.

Besides, Zhang Clan, Lu Clan and Gu Clan also suffered from the loss of their knights.

After all, Zhang Tie's aiding strength could not avoid humans from being wounded by sabers and spears. Even Zhang Tie's Supreme Protection also had a limited effect. Facing the attack of endless demon knights, Zhang Tie's aiding strength would also lose its effect.

Starting with Elder Muen, Zhang Tie had seen clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace being constantly killed in front of him. Elder Muyuan, Elder Muan, Elder Muyu, finally Elder Muray...

A few minutes after Elder Muray died, the name of Gu Qingyun, the last alive knight of Gu Clan was erased from the list.

Before being killed by a demon knight, Gu Qingyun even threw a glance at Zhang Tie. After watching Zhang Tie's brilliant, golden aura, Gu Qingyun couldn't help letting out a sigh inside.

As for others who had entered the Heavens Ball for the first time, they might be a bit agitated even lamented when they saw their

clan elders die as it was such a genuine scene. However, Zhang Tie's brain remained as cold as ice. He didn't even have any mood swings. Of course, it was not because Zhang Tie was cold-blooded; but because he had experienced similar life or death situations for thousands of times in the trouble-reappearance situations over these years. Everything here was just like a real dreamland for him. Even though he saw elders of Huaiyuan Palace die in front of him, he knew that they would never suffer any loss actually. Therefore, he was not agitated at all.

Instead, as more and more elders of Huaiyuan Palace were killed, Zhang Tie turned calmer. He knew that the key battle that would determine the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province was yet to arrive.

Only 5 knights were left alive on the battlefield of the simulated earth-elements realm, Zhang Tie, Zhang Taixuan, Lu Dingzhi and the other two elders of Lu Clan.

Zhang Tie recognized that one of the 3 Lu elders was the one who mastered the aiding strength.

Lu Clan had a deep root in Youzhou Province. Such a major clan would definitely have great knights. In the final moment, all the other clans' elders had died except for Zhang Clan, however, Lu Clan still had 3 living knights left, which indicated the background and the deep root of Lu Clan very well.

When there were 5 human knights left, the number of demon knights was adjusted to 15 while the surplus one disappeared in a black sparkling light.

Compared to Lu Clan, Zhang Clan, which had 3 knights fewer than Lu Clan, still had 2 elders left, making Zhang Clan more eye-catching. It could be said that Zhang Clan was glorious even if they lost this battle.

However, Zhang Tie and Zhang Taixuan were not here to lose the battle, so were the alive Lu elders.

3 demon knights rushed towards Zhang Tie. After throwing a glance at Count Long Wind and the points of Lu Clan and Zhang Clan, Zhang Tie concealed his battle qi and landed on the ground. Instead of flying, he started to run on foot. He moved hundreds of meters ahead with one stride as he had fully activated his Kuafu Bloodline...

In running, Zhang Tie adjusted his breathing rhythm as he tried to recover his physical strength as soon as possible...

After activating his Kuafu Bloodline, Zhang Tie's moving speed could not be matched by that in the Upton Theater of Operations.

It had come to the final stage of both Zhang Taixuan and Lu Dingzhi...

Chapter 836: The Lion in Youzhou Province (VII)

Generally, in a duel between two knights, the one on the ground was in the disadvantageous position compared to that in the sky. Therefore, knights would always choose to fight in the sky. None of them would like to stay on the ground in a duel. Like two boxers in the ring, the one being backed into a corner would always be in the disadvantageous position.

Knights' attacks depended on free movements in the sky.

Therefore, at the sight of Zhang Tie landing on the ground, all the other clans' knights, who had exited the Heavens Ball and were watching the battle in White Tiger Complex, were in an uproar at once.

When there were only 8 human knights in the Heavens Ball, the mirage had long been divided into 8 squares so that onlookers could see how the 8 human knights fought demon knights ferociously. Similarly, when the 8 human knights reduced to 5, the mirage was divided into 5 squares so that everybody else could watch their fights clearly.

Zhang Tie had long become the focus of the people across White Tiger Complex and those in and out Youzhou City. Even if Zhang Tie didn't kill demon knights anymore and just exited the Heavens Ball, his name Zhang Mushen had long shocked Youzhou Province.

However, Zhang Tie kept fighting inside. His persistence was really praiseworthy and unpredictable.

It could be said that onlookers in the White Tiger Complex and across Youzhou City had long paid more attention to Zhang Tie the gentleman than Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan.

Like a dark horse which would win most attention in any racing competition, Zhang Tie was the very dark horse in this selection

for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province.

The amazement aroused by this dark horse could be judged by the facial expressions of the elders of Huaiyuan Palace, who had not imagined that Zhang Tie could have such an excellent performance.

Elders of Huaiyuan Palace knew that Zhang Tie excelled at spear throwing skill; however, they had not imagined that Zhang Tie could reach the degree "Thunder-in-Palm".

Although Zhang Tie had not manifested his aiding strength in front of the elders of Huaiyuan Palace, elders of Huaiyuan Palace knew that Zhang Tie possessed aiding strength. Because when Zhang Tie manifested his aiding strength in Ewentra Archipelago, it aroused an extreme uproar; although he did that as Peter, it was not a secret for elders of Huaiyuan Palace at all. There were only two points that elders of Huaiyuan Palace had not imagined: first, they've not imagined that Zhang Tie's aiding strength—Supreme Protection was that powerful. With the effect of his Supreme Protection, the 5 elders of Huaiyuan Palace had outdone themselves, which was really a surprise for them. What shocked them much more was that dignified "gentleman" name-card manifested by the aura of the aiding strength.

Although Huaiyuan Palace had nobles and knights, it didn't have a gentleman yet, who was destined to be sage.

In Taixia Country, nobles' titles of nobility were divided into duke, marquis, count, viscount and baron, which were generally called Human Knights, namely, knights being awarded by humans.

However, "gentleman" was also called Heavenly Knight, namely, knight being awarded by the God.

In Taixia Country, there was a classic maxim which almost everybody agreed upon.

—Heavenly knights would definitely be followed by human

knights.

This was the so-called extreme nobility of gentleman!

In the future, Huaiyuan Palace would definitely have an eminent noble who was awarded both human knight and heavenly knight. Such a hereditary major clan would definitely be influential and respectable in Taixia Country. The nobility of double knights indicated the remarkable military exploits of ancestors and the inheritance of the bloodline and culture of this clan while the latter was most frequently valued by others as the manifestation of the real deep background of a clan.

At this moment, looking at the amazed eyes of the other major clans' elders, the elders of Huaiyuan Palace felt proud of themselves.

The elders of Huaiyuan Palace also knew that Zhang Tie had cultivated in a tower of time and killed a chief priest of Sacred Light Empire; however, they had not imagined that Zhang Tie could stand so long in the Heavens Ball. They all thought that the one who could stand so long should be Elder Muray.

As Zhang Tie could stand so long, it indicated his battle strength very well.

Nobody could imagine that Zhang Tie would suddenly land on the ground. In the opinion of those elders of clans across Youzhou Province, he was seeking for death.

Being excited, at the sight of Zhang Tie's movement, the elders of Huaiyuan Palace who had exited the Heavens Ball immediately exchanged a glance with each other as they didn't know why Zhang Tie suddenly made such a foolish decision.

Almost the moment Zhang Tie landed on and started to run, the White Tiger Complex was in a din.

"Ahh? Why did Zhang Mushen land on the ground? Is he seeking for death?" Perhaps those people in the White Tiger Complex

didn't know about Zhang Mushen a few hours ago; however, they had already known his name now.

"Was it because he could not continue flying?"

"That's possible. It's already out of our imaginations that Zhang Mushen could stand so long. Even if he could not continue flying, it's nothing strange. As for a young knight, it's already very uneasy!" Someone waved his head and sighed with emotion.

"Alas, pitifully, Lu Clan has 3 knights. On the ground, Zhang Mushen will be killed by demon knights soon. It seems that Lu Clan will finally take the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province!"

Even Commander Cheng faintly frowned when he saw Zhang Tie landing on the ground. 'By landing on the ground at this time, it's nothing different than giving up the resistance. Even though he could dodge from the chase of demon knights for a short while, he would hardly make any points.'

Commander Cheng felt a bit disappointed...

In the mirage, Lu Dingzhi's and Zhang Taixuan's battlefields suddenly became fiercer, which immediately attracted the attention of most of the people in the White Tiger Complex.

"Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan could not stand it any longer!" The elder of Heavens Fortune Sect murmured.

...

In the Heavens Ball, undoubtedly, the most powerful knights must kill the most demon knights; however, the most powerful knights might not stick to the end as they bore the greatest stress in the Heavens Ball too.

Through endless collisions between Lu Dingzhi, Zhang Taixuan and 3-in-1 demon knights matrix, although more and more demon knights were killed, Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan were also suffering more and more wounds. As for the two human knights,

this was a bloody and desperate fight. They should not have any fluke mind.

Their sides were piled with broken corpses of demon knights. However, since the beginning, they had been attacked by more and more demon knights.

Now, 10 demon knights were attacking Zhang Taixuan and Lu Dingzhi.

If they could stick to the end, they would face two 3-in-1 demon knights matrices, namely 6 demon knights respectively. This explained why demon knights would always be 10 more than that of human knights. Everybody had guessed that 12 demon knights could form four 3-in-1 matrices.

After a few minutes, Zhang Taixuan took his body as the crossbow and his qi, blood and spirit as the bolt...

By contrast, the 6 golden fireballs flying around Lu Dingzhi had turned increasingly smaller. Finally, those fireballs entered Lu Dingzhi's body and turned Lu Dingzhi and his battle qi into a burning torch.

In the final moment, Lu Dingzhi uttered a roar which could be heard over 100 miles away while his flames turned fiercer instantly, wrapping 3 demon knights into his flames. He then burned into ashes with 3 demon knights at the same time...

Almost at the same time, Zhang Taixuan triggered his last bolt in the Heavens Ball with his body as the crossbow and the bolt. After drawing a fiery line in the cloud and wind, Count Long Wind and the 5 demon knights turned into blood foam and disappeared at the same time...

Watching Zhang Taixuan applying his Heavenly Crossbow Bloodline in such a heroic and decisive way, the entire Youzhou City, including White Tiger Complex became silent immediately.

...

On two sides of the Heavens Ball, Lu Dingzhi and Zhang Taixuan opened their eyes and stood up at the same time.

"It was really a cool fight, shoulder to shoulder with Brother Lu today. I hope to give a cool blow to the demons on the real battlefields in the future!"

"Brother Taixuan's Heavenly Crossbow Bloodline was indeed extremely destructive. I candidly admit defeat!" In the end, Zhang Taixuan killed two more demon knights than Lu Dingzhi. Therefore, his points were a bit higher than that of Lu Dingzhi.

After throwing a glance at each other, they burst out into laughter at the same time.

Zhang Taixuan killed 29 demon knights; plus 9 battle spirits, he got 154 points on the list.

Lu Dingzhi killed 27 demon knights; plus 11 battle spirits, he got 146 points on the list.

Lu Dingzhi was 8 points lower than that of Zhang Taixuan.

However, Lu Clan gained 16 points more than that of Zhang Clan due to an advantage in population.

Lu Clan gained 339 points while Zhang Clan gained 323 points in total. However, Gu Clan, which was thought highly of before the competition only gained 277 points on the list.

Lu Clan had 2 more knights in the Heavens Ball while Zhang Clan only had Zhang Tie inside...

Everybody thought that Lu Clan would win the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province...

Chapter 837: The Lion in Youzhou Province (VIII)

After Zhang Taixuan and Lu Dingzhi exited the Heavens Ball, the situation in Heavens Ball changed greatly.

In the last 5 human knights, Zhang Taixuan and Lu Dingzhi had borne the most stress. However, the moment the two human knights exited, there were only three human knights in the Heavens Ball. The three human knights had to face thirteen demon knights; on average, each of them had to face the attack from 4 demon knights. What a great stress!

The Lu elder who mastered the aiding strength was killed by demon knights in 2 minutes, leaving the last Lu elder and Zhang Tie in the Heavens Ball.

The last elder of Lu Clan was emaciated and silent. Even in the fight, his eyes were half-closed like having not woken up. He was almost the least attractive one among all the elders of Lu Clan. Like Zhang Tie, this elder's long vitality was out of the expectation of too many people. However, just like in the real battlefields, those who could survive at the end were always not those who were most attractive at the beginning of the battle; instead, those who had both great battle strength and good luck.

Only Zhang Tie's and that Lu elder's battle situation was manifested in the mirage.

Zhang Tie was running fast and jumping like a flexible ball on the ground while being chased by 6 demon knights.

The other 6 demon knights were chasing after that Lu elder.

Nobody had imagined that the two common knights could make any achievement in such a situation.

Almost everyone thought that Lu Clan's and Zhang Clan's points would remain unchanged. Even though the elders of Huaiyuan

Palace were letting out a sigh inside. Unless Zhang Tie killed over 4 demon knights, Zhang Clan could barely turn the table. However, being besieged by 6 demon knights, it was almost impossible for Zhang Tie to kill over 4 demon knights. Any other knights in White Tiger Complex could barely do that while being chased by 6 demon knights, even Zhang Taixuan the would-be earth knight could only bear 5 demon knights' siege at the same time, not to mention Zhang Tie.

However, the fact was always out of everyone's expectation.

The last moment of the remaining Lu elder was pretty tragic. After his protective battle qi was broken through, his legs were shattered into pieces by a demon knight while his chest and lower abdomen were penetrated through by two demon knights' 4 sharp claws; his head was kicked forcefully by another demon knight and almost transformed while his skull was broken...

The time seemed to stand still...

Everyone thought that that Lu elder was destined to die with such a heavy wound.

However, in the next second, a terrifying qi appeared on the body of that Lu elder. Closely after that, his battle qi expanded many times in a split second while an extremely giant figure's shadow with extremely ferocious killing qi appeared behind him. Although his head had been chopped off, he was still patting his beating his chest by two huge axes in hands, causing a thunder each time. Everything in the world was like an ant in front of such a headless giant.

Being scared by the huge giant's shadow, the 6 demon knights besieging the Lu elder became still like frogs being gazed by a ferocious boa in a split second.

When the giant's shadow appeared in the distance, Zhang Tie, who was running, became stunned immediately as he sensed an extremely bold and powerful qi with endless fighting will and

killing qi descending in the space of the simulated earth-element realm like a sea of magma...

"Xing Tian waves axes with full ambitions, good..." Commander Cheng patted the desk and sprung up with raised eyebrows.

'It's Xing Tian Bloodline, it's Xing Tian Bloodline...'

At this moment, all the onlookers in the White Tiger Complex felt blood boiling while many of them became dumbfounded by what they saw.

Like how nobody had imagined that Zhang Tie could be a gentleman, perhaps, nobody had imagined that that emaciated and silent Lu elder could be so dauntless except for the other elders of Lu Clan. Those who could awaken Xing Tian bloodline were the real dauntless men. Fewer than one of 100 million Hua people could awaken Xing Tian bloodline. These dauntless men were always extremely resolute, indomitable. Although their bones were ground into ashes, they would have undying, strong will. These dauntless men were the backbone of Hua people and the spiritual pillar of Taixia Country. They were the most respectable in Taixia Country.

Xing Tian was the battle god of Hua people. Under the influence of a heavy wound, Xing Tian Bloodline would be activated. The heavier the wound was, the more powerful and terrifying would the bloodline be.

With broken legs, transformed head and 4 sharp claws into his chest and lower abdomen, in the next second, the 4 arms were broken. Closely after that, with the broken 4 arms of the 2 demon knights, the Lu elder tore all the 6 demon knights into pieces like tearing roasted chickens by inserting his hands into their chests.

After killing the 6 demon knights, that emaciated body swayed in the air for a second before bursting out an extremely masculine bloody battle qi, which covered the space for a long time...

...

At this moment, the Lu elder opened his eyes on one side of the Heavens Ball in the Heavenly Altar.

Lu Dingzhi bowed deeply towards that elder, who did the same to Lu Dingzhi. After that, he returned to the team of Lu Clan as silently as before without any pleasant look just like withered wood.

Everybody knew why Lu Dingzhi deeply bowed towards that elder, because that elder increased another 30 points for Lu Clan, making it 369 points, which fixed the winner of this competition.

'It turns out that this elder is the trump card of Lu Clan. Lu Clan in Spiritualmaple Prefecture is really unfathomable!' Many people in the White Tiger Complex thought inside.

'If Zhang Clan wants to turn the tide in this case, Zhang Tie had to kill over 10 demon knights. However, it's too unrealistic. Unless I could enter it once again, Zhang Tie could barely kill over 10 demon knights alone.'

Zhang Taixuan let out a sigh inside too...

This competition was really full of splendid climaxes while each Clan had their own brilliant means.

Through this competition, people witnessed a gentleman and a dauntless fighter. Even if it was many years later, this competition would also be a much-told tale in the history of Youzhou Province.

'Although Gu Clan failed to make enough impact in the competition, it seems that we're not wronged!' After throwing a glance at the teams of Zhang Clan and Lu Clan, Gu Dashou sighed inside, 'Zhang Clan and Lu Clan have their own means, which could never be matched by common hereditary major clans. Although Gu Clan had tried our best, we still lagged behind others.'

However, when he realized that Lu Clan or Zhang Clan would also lose the battle like Gu Clan in the end, Gu Dashou recovered

his composure, but...

Gu Dashou moved his eyes onto Gu Qingyun.

Gu Qingyun looked a bit pale, his lips pressed together. At the same time, with burning flames in his eyes, he kept his eyes close on that guy who was jumping in the mirage.

Gu Dashou lightly patted Gu Qingyun's hand and didn't say anything. Gu Qingyun's look made Gu Dashou a bit sad. 'Growing up with the halos of talent, he suddenly trod under the foot of another guy. I hope Qingyun could tide over this pass. It's better for him to suffer a frustration at this moment than suffering a frustration in front of real demons in the future.'

Gu Dashou sighed inside with emotions.

Along Gu Qingyun's eyes, Gu Dashou moved his eyes back on the mirage. After watching Zhang Tie for a few seconds, he had started to frown faintly, 'How could Zhang Mushen constantly run so fast? Has he drunk dragon blood or what?'

The same question occurred to the minds of many people in the White Tiger Complex.

Zhang Tie was chased by 11 demon knights. All the other onlookers thought that Zhang Mushen could stand at most 2-3 minutes in the Heavens Ball; however, they had not imagined that Zhang Mushen became increasingly spirited. Although being chased by more demon knights, he ran faster and faster...

'What the hell?'

Watching Zhang Tie running on the ground, the elders of Huaiyuan Palace who had been hopeless suddenly had a little hope in their hearts. Even Zhang Taixuan's heart started to pound as he moved his eyes onto Zhang Tie once again...

Watching Zhang Tie running on the ground, the deacons and disciples in Huaiyuan Mansion didn't even dare breathe smoothly.

Everyone in and out of Youzhou City finally moved their eyes onto that guy who was still persistent in the Heavens Ball...

Watching Zhang Tie running on the ground, Commander Cheng gradually deepened his frown. All of a sudden, he relieved his frown and turned round to ask the elder of Heavens Fortune Sect, "With which ancestral bloodline could people run faster and faster?"

After throwing a glassy-eyed look at Commander Cheng, the elder of Heavens Fortune Sect replied, "Kuaifu Pursues the Sun..."

The moment he revealed the bloodline, the four words had spread over the White Tiger Complex like an invisible shock wave...

...

Chapter 838: The Lion in Youzhou Province (IX)

Zhang Tie was running as fast as the wind on the land covering 100,000 square miles while the 11 demon knights were chasing after him like falcons that chased after a fierce beast.

In the Heavens Ball, Zhang Tie could clearly see the total points of Lu Clan and Zhang Clan, the difference between points of the two clans stimulated Zhang Tie greatly.

The bloody battle qi left by the last Lu elder had not faded away. Watching that battle qi, Zhang Tie only forced a bitter smile inside. Although he didn't see what happened over there, the sudden increase of 30 points of Lu Clan reminded Zhang Tie that the last Lu elder had just killed 6 demon knights in a split second.

It was not important how did he kill them. What was important was that 5 more black lights had joined in the chase for Zhang Tie in a split second. Wherever Zhang Tie passed by, he would be attacked intensively from the sky, causing huge pits here and there on the ground. How shocking it was! However, Zhang Tie was just like a sea swallow who could escape from the storm and furious billows safe and sound, causing those demons to be in vain.

Zhang Tie knew that Lu Clan indeed made a trouble for him. Previously, Zhang Tie considered that whether he might be a bit special if he continued to kill 4 demon knights; however, after he made his determination to kill 4 more demon knights, that Lu elder made an even bigger trouble for him by turning the number of demon knights that he should kill from 4 to 10. As a result, Zhang Tie felt like failing a tongue twister.

'If I want to make Zhang's total points surpass that of Lu Clan to win the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province for Zhang Taixuan, I have to kill at least 10 demon knights.'

However, this seemed to be an impossible task and test for any black iron knight.

As for Zhang Tie, he was not thinking about whether he could kill the 10 demon knights; but how many trump cards he had to expose.

'For the benefit of Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Clan, I have to pay a price; however, I should not expose too many trump cards. I've just been to Taixia Country and am already very eye-catching; if I exposed too many trump cards, I would become too attractive in Taixia Country. It's not what I want. Many times, it's definitely necessary for me to be low-key and keep some secrets. There was an old Hua saying, common fame is seldom to blame.'

As for the 5 more demon knights, Zhang Tie just spared 5 more parts of his knight's consciousness to focus on them.

Nobody could imagine Zhang Tie's current state. If those onlookers in White Tiger Complex realized Zhang Tie's current state, they would definitely be dumbfounded.

Zhang Tie split his knight's consciousness into 12 parts, 11 parts of which for the 11 demon knights respectively. Each demon knight's movements were locked by Zhang Tie; each demon knight's speed, height, location and attack were in Zhang Tie's close concern.

To be honest, although this feeling was very shocking to the public and even nobody would believe that, it was very simple for Zhang Tie. Because Zhang Tie felt that he only needed to treat the 11 demon knights as 11 element crystals which were flying rapidly in the elements realm. It was actually not difficult for him to get the movements of those demon knights.

Besides the 11 parts of his knight's consciousness for the 11 knights, Zhang Tie spared one more part for paying close attention to the surrounding terrain.

In such a state, the information of all the 11 demon knights, the

topographical information and other factors such as wind speed converged in Zhang Tie's mind constantly at a high speed. After combining this information, Zhang Tie made an analysis about them with his powerful knight's consciousness before outputting the optimal solution——adjust his speed, step, direction, location and height to the "one move, one scenery" state at any second. No matter how his enemy chased after him flurriedly, he was just running leisurely.

This time, Zhang Tie combined his Kuafu Bloodline, "one move, one scenery state", distraction ability, great physical strength and knight's consciousness and showed his terrifying, great ability on the ground once again, which shocked all the onlookers.

...

In the White Tiger Complex...

Many onlookers just watched the mirage without a wink.

Normally, all the onlookers would feel bored about such a pure chase if it lasted too long, except for this time.

At the beginning, when Zhang Tie was chased by 6 demon knights, many people didn't sense Zhang Tie's specialty; however, when the number of demon knights chasing after Zhang Tie reached 11, Zhang Tie gradually revealed his specialty to the public, facing the sudden two times greater attacking density.

The 11 demon knights' powerful battle qis struck the ground near Zhang Tie like lightning bolts, causing a lot of huge dense smoke and destroying all the objects on the ground near Zhang Tie's whereabouts. In the tyrannical and destructive scene, whenever everybody else thought Zhang Tie had been killed, Zhang Tie would stride out of the dense battle qi attacks like a phoenix of nirvana in the legends, which never disappointed onlookers.

Zhang Tie's every step was full of an indescribable meaning and artistic conception. He would always land on the most delicate and

beautiful point in the most suitable time. The moment he landed on one point, the surrounding scene would be brilliant at once like lotus flowers breaking out of the water, making onlookers delighted.

He was not running; instead, he was dancing like the wind and lightning bolt.

Although Zhang Tie was moving like the wind, he would cause thunders like huge hammers knocking at the ground the moment he landed on the ground.

Although Zhang Tie was moving like a lightning bolt, he moved as slowly as fog and as fast as a shadow.

In the mirage, Zhang Tie's every step forward would germinate a lotus flower and bring onlookers into the "one move, one scenery state". Although passing by numerous lotus flowers, he didn't touch any leaves.

Compared to the boring chase which would make everyone weary, such a dance made everybody crazy.

...

"What the hell? No way! How could he land over there? How could he appear over there?" An elder of Yang Clan in Chaoyang Prefecture murmured with a thrilled look as he kept his eyes close on Zhang Tie's shadow.

'Does he have eyes on his back? No way! Even if he had a pair of eyes on his back, he could not do it either. It was not enough at all. Even if he had an extremely powerful knight's consciousness, he could not do that either. Why do I feel that the 11 demon knights are passive in front of him? What the hell?' An elder of Simon Clan in Xingbei Prefecture scratched his hair with a sad look.

"No way, no way, I've seen Kuafu Bloodline before. Even Kuafu Bloodline is not that exaggerated. His movements carry a special artistic conception. It must contain something else..." The head of

Li Clan in Miyun Prefecture shouted.

"Do you really think that he's just running? Hmm..." Guo Hongyi kept her eyes close on Zhang Tie with a disdainful cold harrumph, "Although he doesn't seem to launch an attack, he's fighting in each stride; he's fighting by running; he's taking the initiative by running!"

'Fighting? Fighting by running?'

Some people else seemed to understand something but some were still confused...

"Ahh? No way..."

In the uproar, the elder of Heavens Fortune Sect suddenly turned around and posed a question to his disciple, "You've learned the book of changes? How to apply no-change, simple-change and great-change on the battlefield at the same time? Turn passive into active with the law of great-change; simplify difficult steps through simple-change; the law of no-change is like how the universe runs constantly. Am I clear?"

The elder of Heavens Fortune Sect didn't mean to lower his voice. Therefore, after hearing his words, all the others at present became silent.

"As for the great-change, in the duel of knights, the one on the ground is in the disadvantageous position; however, it's not absolute. Sometimes, the disadvantageous position could also convert into an advantageous position. Like how two boxers fight, the one being forced back in a wall corner would be very passive and lose his moving space. However, if one faced a flock of wolves or was besieged, he could move back to the wall corner purposefully in case of being harmed from the back. The wall and the ground remain unchanged, which would show different functions facing different enemies and situations. However, wall and ground don't exist forever, the one who's good at defense could hide wherever he wants. Although he's defending; actually, he's

attacking. The demon knights could offend him from high positions; however, they could also succumb to him due to his great-change. That's the law of great-change!" A disciple of Heavens Fortune Sect replied fluently after thinking for a short while.

The elder of Heavens Fortune Sect nodded, "Not bad, what about simple-change?"

"Just defend his enemies by running. Through running, he could gradually turn stronger and recover his physical strength just like how fierce tigers deepen into the mountain. By contrast, his enemies would turn increasingly weaker while gradually using up their battle qi and physical strength like how fish and shrimps come to the land. Only by running on the ground, he would be able to kill his enemies and convert the battle situation between defense and attack!"

"What about no-change?"

"Those who could use no-change are sages. They could follow the universal laws; retrospect themselves; watching samsara of everything and keep making unremitting efforts to improve themselves!"

Everyone felt enlightened immediately. Watching that person in the mirage, they all sighed inside, 'What a talent! What a talent! I've not imagined that there's such a talent in Youzhou Province.'

...

After 2 hours, when Zhang Tie passed by a small arsenal on the ground, he quickly picked up a shield and a longsword. The moment he left it, the arsenal had been exploded into pieces by the attacks from the sky, causing a huge pit after a great earthquake...

The number of the 11 demon knights remained unchanged. However, they were not as energetic as that 2 hours ago.

In order to catch up with Zhang Tie, those demon knights' battle

qi and physical strengths had gradually come to the critical points due to constant flight and attacks at high speed. These demon knights constantly fought Zhang Tie for 2 hours.

Although the demon knights' battle strengths were similar to that of real demon knights, they were not real. Their intelligence and ability could not match that of real demon knights. Now that he was not forbidden to make use of such a trivial difference, Zhang Tie just made use of it...

At this moment, the elder of Heavens Fortune Sect stealthily passed a jade plate to his disciple.

Receiving that jade plate, that disciple directly disappeared in front of the public.

Nobody noticed that, except for Commander Cheng who turned around. At this moment, the elder of Heavens Fortune Sect moved his lips, after hearing something, Commander Cheng became silent...

...

After a few minutes, a powerful sword qi rushed into the sky from Zhang Tie's body. At the same time, the golden aura of aiding strength reappeared as Zhang Tie activated his aiding strength once again...

With a roar, Zhang Tie rushed towards the 11 demon knights like a fierce tiger entering a flock of sheep...

Only after a few minutes, a demon knight's body had been shattered into pieces by Zhang Tie's sword lights...

Zhang Clan's points rose to 328 while the hearts of all the onlookers across Youzhou City started to pound. Elder Muray of Huaiyuan Palace almost sprung up from the ground. The elders of Lu Clan felt their hearts stop beating at once.

At the same time, numerous attacks fell onto Zhang Tie; however, they were all blocked by Zhang Tie's shield like a

miracle.

Zhang Tie used his shield and sword at the same time. He hid the sword behind his shield. The shield in his hand was like a spiritual living being. The onlookers felt that the shield could block all the attacks automatically. What a marvel!

Another demon knight's head flew away...

The points of Zhang Clan rose to 333...

'8 left.' Zhang Tie muttered.

In the bloody battle, another black light flashed while a new demon knight as same as other demon knights appeared in the simulated space of earth-elements realm...

Chapter 839: The Lion in Youzhou Province

(X)

Zhang Tie forcefully smashed a demon knight as fast as a light. Meanwhile, his shield weirdly moved to his rear flank. After a few times of rapid movements, he had blocked the attacks of two demon knights who were drawing closer to him.

While blocking attacks using the shield, Zhang Tie's another hand penetrated through a demon knight's physical defense fiercely as fast as a lightning bolt. In only a few seconds, his longsword collided with the demon knight's weapon for over 100 times.

Chasing after Zhang Tie consecutively for a few hours, those demon knights had consumed their battle qis and spirits so much. Therefore, after being shocked by Zhang Tie's sword qi, the demon knight's protective battle qi had started to rock like ripples. Watching that, the demon knight changed its face greatly as it instantly moved backward while changing its movements rapidly. However, Zhang Tie kept chasing after it like a worm gnawing its bone at the same speed.

When that demon knight was retreating rapidly, it was moving upwards, downwards, leftwards or rightwards, frontwards or backwards. However, he was relatively still to Zhang Tie as the distance between it and Zhang Tie remained unchanged.

After colliding it over 100 times, Zhang Tie's longsword finally broke the demon knight's double-hand defense and fell on its protective battle qi.

In the next second, the longsword which was filled with the metal-attribute battle qi representing sharpness in the 5-elements battle qi radiated a white luster while being slashed onto the same part of the demon knight for over 100 times in ear-deafening explosions.

The protective battle qi of the demon knight turned into surge billows, waves, cracked glasses and was finally broken into pieces...

The longsword was then stabbed into the mouth of the demon knight and penetrated through its hindbrain. Zhang Tie then smashed its head into pieces like shattering a watermelon with an air hammer.

With the death of this demon knight, Huaiyuan Palace's points rose to 358...

This was the 7th demon knight that Zhang Tie had killed...

At the same time, 9 battle qis struck onto Zhang Tie's body.

After blocking 3 of the 9 battle qis, the shield with Class III consolidating rune effect finally broke apart...

If such a shield could end its "life" in this way on the battlefield, it definitely deserved it.

Zhang Tie then drew a light curtain with his longsword and blocked another 2 of the 9 battle qis. 4 more battle qis struck on the protective battle qi on Zhang Tie's back directly, causing Zhang Tie to spit out a mouth of blood...

...

Before those onlookers in White Tiger Complex and in and out of Youzhou City who were overwhelmed by the fierce battle between Zhang Tie and the demon knights sighed, Zhang Tie had flown away at a faster speed with the great inertia of that severe strike.

At the same time, Zhang Tie threw out his longsword like throwing a javelin.

A fiery line appeared in the air and shot towards a demon knight.

With a roar, the demon knight expanded its scales all over its body with its bulgy protective battle qi. At the final critical moment, it nipped the longsword by its bare hands, which

indicated its great battle strength as a demon knight obviously.

In the split second, Zhang Tie had arrived in front of it and stretched out his hands...

...

When Zhang Tie threw out that longsword and darted towards that demon knight in front of him while bumping into the chest of that demon knight, all the onlookers exclaimed in unison, 'Zhang Tie got the strike purposefully in order to gain a greater accelerated speed. Zhang Tie threw out that longsword so as to offset that demon knight's simultaneous counter-attack. This created a condition for his next movement.'

Zhang Tie instantly tightened that demon knight's body and pushed it back as fast as a rocket.

Due to a super high speed, all the other demon knights lagged behind.

Zhang Tie's physical strength was so terrifying that he could even transform an iron man. As a result, that demon knight's protective battle qi uttered a "cracking" sound like a fresh bamboo being roasted above the fire.

Within his tight clasp, the demon knight couldn't move at all, neither could it launch a counter-attack; instead, it could only try its best to resist Zhang Tie's powerful hands.

The two knights swept over the ground in the simulated earth-element realm like a shell being fired from a cannon. They broke numerous huge cone-shaped stony pillars as high as dozens of meters even over 100 m.

Wherever they passed by, those huge stony pillars would break and utter a sound as loud as those falling skyscrapers, causing dust all over the earth-elements realm and constant earthquakes. As a result, the complete landform was severely destroyed in a short period.

The demon knight being tightly held by Zhang Tie interpreted a word "scapegoat".

Zhang Tie's moving speed was over 700 miles per hour. However, 90% of the impact on those cone-shaped huge stony pillars were resisted by the body and the protective battle qi of the demon knight. Each collision was no different than a fierce blow from a knight at the same level as the demon knight.

Watching such a splendid battle scene in the mirage, all the commoners in and out of Youzhou City exclaimed out of excitement, sending the entire Youzhou City in an uproar.

"The inexperienced ones are going to see the appearance while the experienced ones appreciate the contents!" As for those commoners, of course, the louder and the more destructive the fight between knights was and the stronger the audio-visual effect was, the cooler would be the fight.

Watching Zhang Tie tightly clutching that demon knight and knocking down so many huge stony pillars one after another, all the onlookers felt it was pretty stimulative. Such a battle situation could definitely match that between Lu Dingzhi, Zhang Taixuan and demon knights just now.

...

Even Zhang Tie didn't remember how many stony pillars had that demon knight broken. After flying over 10 minutes with that demon knight, Zhang Tie suddenly felt no resistance against his hands...

——Bang

That demon knight was blown up while its plasma sprayed over Zhang Tie's body, making Zhang Tie extremely grim.

That demon knight became the first demon knight to be tightened to death by someone in the simulated earth-elements realm.

363 points, Huaiyuan Palace's points rose again.

Like the bloody demon god, Zhang Tie raised his head and roared with full killing intent. Before those knights followed up, he had rushed back towards them...

...

Chapter 840: The Lion in Youzhou Province (XI)

Gradually, those demon knights on Zhang Tie's side disappeared one after another...

In the sky of the simulated earth-elements realm, the total points of Zhang Clan reached 373, which had surpassed 369, the total points of Lu Clan.

With his own efforts, on the premise that Zhang Clan's points lagged behind that of Lu Clan, Zhang Tie constantly killed 10 demon knights in the earth-elements realm and increased the points of Zhang Clan to 373 from 323 and finally fixed the winner of this competition.

Nobody could have imagined such a reversal.

If this competition was a black casework, nobody would be convinced by this result. However, this competition happened under the gaze of all the major clans across Youzhou Province. They were participants and witnesses. The whole process was transparent. Especially in the end, when the last human knight fought demon knights in the Heavens Ball, his movements became the focus of onlookers in White Tiger Complex and across Youzhou Province.

It was really the very moment to witness marvels.

Since the guy landed on the ground and started to run, he had been creating marvels.

Being chased by 11 powerful demon knights, that man ran for over 2 hours. In running, he gradually reversed the course of action and took the initiative of the entire battlefield.

It was not a pure fight, but had sublimed to a wholly new realm.

The dialogue between the elder of Heavens Fortune Sect and his

disciple brought an insight to a lot of people in the White Tiger Complex.

However, it had not come to an end yet. When that man had the initiative, his longsword and shield shocked onlookers once again.

That man was a sword sage. However, after being shocked so many times, the status sword sage could not shock people too much.

What shocked people more than his status as a sword sage was his shield. Before watching Zhang Tie's performance, none of the knights across Youzhou Province had imagined that a knight could use a shield so brilliantly. The shield seemed like it possessed its own consciousness and was alive. When in a fight, that shield could automatically block all the attacks as if it was not under Zhang Tie's control.

At the same time, Zhang Tie kept fighting at his will. Watching such a splendid fight, all the onlookers had an illusion. It seemed that Zhang Tie separated into two people in the fight. One was attacking demon knights in a dedicated way while the other was defending demon knights in a single-minded way.

Attack and defense worked independently and combined with each other perfectly, greatly widening onlookers' horizon.

With a shield in hand, Zhang Tie's battle strength increased by at least 50% at once.

Such a skill combining shield and longsword was really a marvel. It was all the onlookers' first time to watch it, including Commander Cheng.

There were shield powerhouses; however, nobody else could turn a shield into a living being across Youzhou Province, even the entire Northeast Military Region.

When Zhang Tie's shield was broken due to excessive defense, those in the White Tiger Complex felt like watching a beautiful

flower withering as they were sighing for not being able to enjoy such a unique skill anymore.

Closely after that, everyone witnessed how a powerful demon knight was strangled by a man...

Being strangled? Such a death method was humiliating even for a common fighter, not to mention a demon knight. Because only the emaciated ones might be strangled.

In front of Zhang Mushen, the youngest elder of Zhang Clan, even a powerful demon knight would be strangled like a woman being strangled by a robust thug.

The onlookers were really stimulated at that moment.

"F*ck! Is he even a human?" Many people exclaimed inside when they watched Zhang Tie standing still in the air while being covered with blood, broken innards and intestines, even the demon general's eyes were stuck to his shoulder.

After losing his weapon, Zhang Tie manifested his bolder and fiercer side. When he released his iron-blood fist with full killing intent which had been quenched by numerous deaths and countless blood, Zhang Tie turned more terrifying like a mad lion.

The next two demon knights were torn apart by Zhang Tie alive...

When he tore apart the second demon knight, he bore other demon knights' attack and broke through the protective battle qi of the demon knight. At the same time, he inserted his hands into its chest. Closely after that, he tore it apart like tearing a roasted chicken. With a crash, blood rain sprayed everywhere...

Zhang Clan's points rose once again, calming down the entire world, including the White Tiger Complex.

Even being older, the elders of Zhang Clan couldn't help but quiver due to extreme excitement. They were even in tears...

This was the tear of pleasure and excitement, which witnessed that Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace created a marvel out of impossibility—From today on, Zhang Clan would be the first clan in Youzhou Province, Taixia Country to root in Taxia Country completely and proudly...

By contrast, Lu elders became silent, Lu Dingzhi let out a sigh inside, 'Lu Clan didn't fail due to our poor battle skills, but because of such a weirdo in Zhang Clan, who turned the tide at the final moment. With such a great figure in Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Clan in Yanghe Prefecture is destined to flourish!'

'What a figure! What a figure...'

"Brother Taixuan, congratulations!" After recovering his composure, Lu Dingzhi cupped his hands towards Zhang Taixuan with a generous smile.

Zhang Taixuan took a deep breath as he cupped towards Lu Dingzhi with a glassy-eyed look.

When Zhang Tie tore apart the 10th demon knight, Gu Qingyun's face turned pale once again. Like being punched forcefully by someone, Gu Qingyun felt that his pride and reputation was destroyed together with that demon knight...

Gu Dashou threw a worried look at Gu Qingyun.

...

In the Heavens Ball, after the final result came out, all the remaining demon knights had disappeared, except for one, who was standing on the opposite of Zhang Tie in the distance. Outsiders seemingly felt that something special at the end of the battle was normal. Therefore, they just waited for the coming battle.

...

Zhang Tie was also very amazed at this moment. When all the demon knights disappeared, he thought that he could also leave.

However, after waiting for a short while, when he wondered whether he could not leave until committing suicide, he felt a hot flow inside his body. Like having drunk a vial of advanced recovery medicament, he felt that his physical strength and spirit had rapidly recovered to the highest level when he entered the Heavens Ball.

'What happened?' Zhang Tie was shocked as he felt being locked by one eye light. Zhang Tie looked along the eye light and found the last demon knight was gazing at him while its battle intention was gradually rising up...

Zhang Tie realized that the last battle was waiting for him here...

'F*ck!' At such a critical moment, Zhang Tie would never waste time on this demon knight; therefore, he instantly darted towards it...

The moment Zhang Tie moved, that demon knight also moved.

Their fierce battle qis collided from over 200 m away, causing a big earthquake over hundreds of square meters.

The moment he collided with that demon knight, Zhang Tie had felt that this one was different than the former demon knights, 'This one is definitely not common...'

In a split second, the demon knight flashed through their collision region and came to Zhang Tie's side. He ferociously punched Zhang Tie's protective battle qi and sent Zhang Tie flying backward...

"Ho..." The demon knight roared as it rubbed its hands. Closely after that, a strong light beam appeared in its hands and fell onto Zhang Tie's body directly, sending Zhang Tie flying backward like a shell once again...

Closely after that, the demon knight moved like a ghost and appeared on Zhang Tie's side once again. It then directly kicked Zhang Tie's chest in an overwhelming way from above Zhang Tie,

smashing Zhang Tie onto the ground like a meteor, causing a huge pit with a diameter of dozens of meters...

Being shocked by this, the air above the ground was covered with dust while those huge, white dandelion fine hair within hundreds of meters was floating...

...

Those people in and out of Youzhou City who thought that the battle would soon come to an end in the Heavens Ball became stunned. The last fight had made everyone spirited once again. They had not imagined that the last fight in the Heavens Ball could be more splendid at the last critical moment.

Zhang Taixuan slightly frowned as he threw a glance at Commander Cheng. He then found the disciple of Heavens Fortune Sect had disappeared...

The elder of Heavens Fortune Sect revealed a sudden smile at Zhang Taixuan. Zhang Taixuan then understood something; he became silent and continued to watch the fight in the Heavens Ball.

Since the last fight broke out, the onlookers in the White Tiger Complex who had just become relaxed turned solemn gradually...

Although there was only one demon knight left, the fight became 10 times fiercer than that just now...

'Did Zhang Mushen meet a powerful opponent in the Heavens Ball?'

...

That demon knight just stood still in the sky and waited for the dust to fade away.

Zhang Tie spat out dust as he picked himself up from the ground. After that, the moment he raised his head and saw that demon knight, Zhang Tie's eyes had turned red, "D*mn, you want a real

fight, right..."

"Boom", Zhang Tie stomped onto the ground, making a crack on the ground. At the same time, he shot himself into the sky and collided with the demon knight.

...

After fighting the demon general, Zhang Tie had not experienced such a miserable battle for a long time. 'This demon knight is just a bit weaker than the demon general. Among black iron knights, this one is definitely a powerhouse. It might soon promote to an earth knight.'

Not only that, Zhang Tie found that this demon knight had rich battle experiences, which could even match his battle skills which he had formed due to rich experiences in the trouble-reappearance situations.

'This is a powerful enemy, a real enemy!' Zhang Tie exerted his utmost efforts since they collided with each other.

...

1 hour later, the two knight's protective battle qis were both collapsed. Zhang Tie and that demon knight then rolled, wrestled and fell onto the ground forcefully, causing another huge pit...

Zhang Tie broke its right arm while Zhang Tie's left arm was smashed into pieces.

The moment they fell onto the ground, the demon knight hit Zhang Tie's lower abdomen with its left knee, causing a severe damage to Zhang Tie's body; closely after that, he swept his leg towards Zhang Tie's leg, breaking Zhang Tie's left leg at once.

With bloody eyes, Zhang Tie hit onto its lower abdomen with his right knee ferociously. Closely after that, he butted onto the demon knight's face with his head, causing its head to raise up.

They then spat out blood at the same time...

The demon knight's one hand got rid of Zhang Tie's wrestle and gave a severe blow to Zhang Tie's heart, although having not penetrated the latter's body.

Watching that demon knight's raised face, Zhang Tie roared and ferociously bit its throat.

Being benefited from so many seven-strength fruits and fruit of source, Zhang Tie's teeth, which represented the strength of marrow, was as firm as blades made up of polished diamonds.

The moment he put forth his strength, Zhang Tie had penetrated through the fine scales over the demon knight's neck and cut through its windpipe...

Zhang Tie ferociously tore it with his teeth, causing its blood to spray over Zhang Tie's face. Some blood even entered Zhang Tie's mouth...

This time, Zhang Tie sensed the "quiver" of this demon knight due to fear...

"Ahh..." In crazy cries, that demon knight started to attack Zhang Tie more ferociously. Spitting out a mouth of blood, Zhang Tie tightly seized this demon knight. Closely after that, like a fierce animal, he bit its main blood vessel on the side of its windpipe and cut through it with his sharp teeth. He then tore off a large piece of bloody flesh and broke its main blood vessel on its neck. Meanwhile, he swallowed its flesh...

3 minutes later, only half of the demon knight's neck was stuck to its head. Before death, the demon knight still looked scared.

"Pah..." Zhang Tie spat out the blood and dogmeat of the demon knight and roared as he stood up in the huge pit in a groggy way with blood stains all over his face, "Who else?"

378, Zhang Clan's points rose once again and fixed there.

In the next second, Zhang Tie felt that he exited the Heavens Ball and returned to his own body...

Chapter 841: The Lion in Youzhou Province (XII)

It felt the same as leaving trouble-reappearance situations when he left the Heavens Ball. After returning to his body spiritually, Zhang Tie felt pretty quiet in the surroundings except for the sounds of breath.

After opening his eyes, Zhang Tie saw people watching him with various expressions.

The elders of Huaiyuan Palace, including Zhang Taixuan, were bowing deeply towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie hurriedly bowed deeply towards them too. After that, he returned to the team of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace while being treated as a pre-historical animal.

After quite a while, Commander Cheng finally let out a deep sigh.

"I've been fighting in real earth-elements realm for about 60 years and have seen numerous human and demon powerhouses; but I have only seen demons eat humans as hundreds of millions of humans would become the food of demons in each holy war; today, I found such a special knight who could be as fierce as a lion while fighting demons. At the critical moment, even though his limbs were broken, he still ate demon alive and drank demon's blood, how heroic he was!" Commander Cheng's swarthy face turned bright out of pride. He looked very excited. He then clapped his hands, which was as loud as a thunder, "If all the Hua people behaved like him, demons would be exterminated. Come on, bring me my dragon-marrow liquor!"

The moment Commander Cheng finished his words, his attendants had brought in two jars of liquor, one to Commander Cheng, the other to Zhang Tie.

All the people at present, officers or heads and elders of all the

clans could only watch Zhang Tie with extremely "admiring" looks.

The biggest winner of this competition was Zhang Taixuan, Count Long Wind of Zhang clan in Yanghe Prefecture; however, the most brilliant one was this Zhang elder who looked just 16-17 years old. Being praised by Commander Cheng and gifted with dragon-marrow liquor, Zhang Mushen would definitely have a bright future in Taixia Country.

"This liquor was gifted by His Majesty when I went to Xuanyuan Hill many years ago. It could relocate your tendons and clean your marrow; maintain and improve your physical health and spirit; consolidate your chakra. Besides, it has many other benefits. One drop of this liquor would be worth 10 kgs of bright pearls. With one drop of this liquor, commoners would feel burning sensations all over their body with relocated tendons and broken bones. They would feel too painful and might even commit suicide. Therefore, only knights could drink such a liquor. Even though knights could barely become drunk after drinking 3 glasses constantly. I've preserved these two jars of liquor for so many years. As I feel pretty happy today, I want to share it with you. Dare you compete with me?"

The jar was purple with dragon patterns on it. It was as large as a ripe common pumpkin. It looked like being made of purple crystal; however, it felt very heavy. After weighing it by one hand, Zhang Tie felt it was about 50-60 kgs with a line of lower sealed small square characters on it——轩辕之丘少府太官秘制呈贡! Zhang Tie was stealthily glancing at this jar of liquor just now; after listening to the explanation of Commander Cheng and watching the thirsty eyes in the surroundings, Zhang Tie was sure that this dragon-marrow liquor was definitely a top drink. 'Evidently, Emperor Xuanyuan usually drank it. Even though Commander Cheng only has two jars. A drop of such liquor would be worth 10 kgs of bright pearl, who will miss such a precious chance?'

'Elder Muyuan was right. The moment I became famous, the

benefits would arrive. Given the dragon-marrow liquor, I'm afraid that I could not buy it even if I had money.'

"Please, Commander Cheng!" Zhang Tie raised his jar and put it straight.

"Hahahaha..." Commander Cheng burst into laughter while he released his battle qi and opened the sealed cover of one purple jar, followed by Zhang Tie.

The moment they opened the sealed cover, an extremely rich fragrance of liquor had spilled out of the jars and filled the Heavenly Altar and entered people's brains. Besides the exotic fragrance, the dragon-marrow liquor was enshrouding while a dragon-shaped light floated out of each jar. Given such an image, they could imagine how precious was such liquor.

Among the elders of each major clan, especially those, who loved drinks so much, were forcefully sniffing the exotic fragrance while gazing at the two jars of dragon-marrow liquor like how hungry wolves watched fat sheep. At the same time, they forcefully swallowed their saliva.

Zhang Tie found that Elder Gu Qinglong, whom he met in the Heavens Ball couldn't move his eyes away from the jar in his hand. Gu Qinglong had swallowed his saliva for hundreds of times. He seemed longing to drink it on behalf of Zhang Tie.

Whereas, everyone knew that it was gifted by Commander Cheng. Even if they were drooling about that, they could only watch him drink.

Watching Commander Cheng raising his head and pouring the amber liquor into his mouth straightly, Zhang Tie imitated him and also controlled the dragon-marrow liquor to flow into his mouth by battle qi like drinking water under a water faucet.

After having it, Zhang Tie felt that he was not drinking a liquor, but a fire with exotic fragrance. The moment the liquor entered his

mouth, Zhang Tie's qi, blood, bone, marrow, tendons and meridians all over had started to thunder. Closely after that, Zhang Tie's chakra started to rock while each pore across Zhang Tie's body started to release a flame-like heat like chimneys...

After drinking up that jar of liquor, Zhang Tie felt the flames all over while his face turned red. Feeling a bit dazzled, he slightly rocked for a short while and almost fell down.

"Thanks for your liquor, Commander Cheng!" Zhang Tie appreciated.

"Fine!" After drinking up a jar of liquor, Commander Cheng's swarthy face just turned red. He became more excited and liked Zhang Tie even more. 'He's good at fight and drink; he could defeat that brat of Heavens Fortune Sect, and be a gentleman. What a talent!' Commander Cheng sighed inside. He then asked in a genial tone, "I know you got Mushen as your characters after the rotating chakra ceremony, what's your former name?"

After hearing that Commander Cheng asked Zhang Tie's private name, the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace exchanged a glance with each other as they all felt that Commander Cheng spoke highly of him. The others' looks turned even more "admiring".

"My parents named me Zhang Tie!"

'Zhang Tie?' Everyone became stunned. This name was too common. Like the character Tie, the name Zhang Tie existed everywhere.

However, at this time, this common name became unusual.

"Fine, I will call you Zhang Tie from then on, I could bear it in mind easily!" After being silent for less than 1 second, Commander Cheng had expressed his opinion, "I lack a commissioned officer Duwei Sima, Class 5, General Eagle, would you like to take it?"

'Duwei Sima?' After thinking about it for a short while, Zhang Tie remembered its meaning—in Taixia Country, all the

commissioned officers with Sima were related to the military. Major Sima, one of the top three chancellors in Taixia Country was mainly in charge of the war expeditions and military forces across Taixia Country. Duwei Sima was responsible for the imperial guards of Commander Cheng. Imperial guards of Commander Cheng was the most elite force of Northeast Military Region Commander in Taixia Country.

Even though the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, a lower province in Taixia Country was just Class 5, the power of Class 5 Duwei Sima could be imagined. What was more, this position was on the side of Commander Cheng. It was closer to Commander Cheng than a common provincial governor of a province. If he could do a good job, he would definitely have an inestimable, bright future. To put it straight, even if Zhang Tie resigned later on, as long as he had made some military exploits and had some experiences in this position, he could easily promote to a provincial governor or become a general cheji at the same class.

Soon after hearing Commander Cheng's words, the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace and the elders of the other 9 major clans took a deep breath at the same time.

Without having to turn round, Zhang Tie had already felt the scorching eyes of the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace on his back. He knew what they were thinking about. If being not afraid of Commander Cheng's power and majesty, they might have long told him to accept it in a secret voice-transmit way. After taking this position, it would be no worse than winning the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province for Huaiyuan Palace. Additionally, with one person on the side of Commander Cheng, Zhang Clan would never be matched by the other clans across Youzhou Province.

If Zhang Tie was a real piece of iron, he might have been melted under the surrounding scorching eyes.

"I really appreciate your favor, Commander Cheng, but I'm afraid that I cannot accept this position!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, the entire White Tiger Complex became quiet.

Commander Cheng faintly frowned while a dignified qi started to suffuse which brought a great stress to everyone at present.

"Why?" After Commander Cheng asked the reason calmly, everyone else felt that the White Tiger Complex turned cold.

Zhang Tie looked straight in the majestic eyes of Commander Cheng frankly as he replied in a depressed way, "I left home to join the army at 16, after fighting almost 10 years in Waii Sub-continent, during which period, I rarely united with my family members. After coming to Youzhou Province, I realize that my mother was concerned about my safety almost every day during the past decade and had turned sick due to that. When I returned home a few days ago, my mother became delighted and suddenly became ill. As the old Hua saying went, when the son travels 1,000 miles away, his mother will always worry about him. I really cannot stand my mother worrying about me day by day and growing increasingly elder. Therefore, please forgive me for that! I don't care about my bright future and honors. I only expect to stay in Youzhou Province and accompany my mother every day; I only hope that my mother doesn't worry about me and have a good dream every night.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the surrounding looks became strange. Guo Hongyi's look was strangest.

Watching Zhang Tie's face and listening to Zhang Tie's explanation, Commander Cheng finally lowered his head and let out a deep sigh after quite a while, "Mother is kind, son is obedient, gentleman's virtue could never be taken away!"

"Thank you, Commander Cheng!" Zhang Tie bowed deeply towards Cheng Honglie.

In the next second, Commander Cheng narrowed his eyes while a qi shot into the sky. He opened his mouth, which reverberated around Youzhou City. Everyone could hear that.

"As Youzhou has promoted to an established lower province, Zhang Clan wins the competition by force and gains the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, I appoint Zhang Tiaxuan the Count Long Wind as the first provincial governor of Youzhou Province!"

Without the assistance of any alchemist equipment and rune equipment, Commander Cheng's voice sounded in White Tiger Complex like a muffled thunder. Closely after that, it reached the clouds and was reflected onto the ground. Then, it spread across Youzhou Province in an extremely majestic way.

"Zhang Taixuan!"

"Here!" Count Long Wind strode out of the team of Huaiyuan Palace under the gaze of all the people at present.

"Get my seal!"

The seal of provincial governor of Youzhou Province which symbolized the supreme majesty of Youzhou Province flew off Commander Cheng's hand and landed on Zhang Taixuan's hands steadily which had been raised high above his head.

After receiving the seal, Zhang Taixuan instantly broke the tip of his tongue by his teeth and sprayed a mouth of blood over the seal. The seal then immediately radiated a strong light, which covered the entire White Tiger Complex.

'I've not imagined that this seal of a provincial governor is also a secret silver item!' A thought occurred to Zhang Tie's mind after Zhang Tie caught sight of this scene. Almost at the same time, Zhang Tie felt that a warm sense had flown across his body. The extremely overbearing feeling of getting drunk started to radiate. Feeling dazzled, Zhang Tie lost his consciousness at once.

...

"Congratulations, provincial governor!" The other commissioned officer of Youzhou City in the White Tiger Complex bowed deeply towards Zhang Taixuan.

After that, Zhang elders called Zhang Tie's name and received no response. They then found that Zhang Tie had already fallen asleep.

"The effect of dragon-marrow liquor is too strong. As Zhang Tie has just formed one chakra, after drinking up this jar of liquor, it will take him a few days to wake up!" Commander Cheng's genial voice sounded, making the other elders of Zhang Clan reassured. They felt circling around a treasure.

After throwing a few more glances at Zhang Tie, Commander Cheng appreciated Zhang Tie more. Finally, he let out a sigh, "Well, with this lion in Youzhou Province, citizens here would be safe..."

...

On the same day, Commander Cheng left Youzhou City towards southwards by airboat.

The fierce competition for the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province finally came to an end.

...

In the evening, Commander Cheng watched Youzhou City which was becoming farther and farther away from him, he felt a bit regretful.

At this moment, a strong wave of earth elements drifted from Youzhou City, an aurora appeared in the distant sky being marked with especially splendid changing light belts...

The elder of Heavens Fortune Sect had moved to Commander Cheng's side silently. Watching in the distance, he let out a sigh,

"Zhang Taixuan is promoting to earth knight!"

"For the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, he purposefully chose to not promote to earth knight. Zhang Taixuan is really single-minded. After promoting to earth knight, he will hold steadily his position in Youzhou Province. Lu Dingzhi is only a bit weaker than Zhang Taixuan!" Commander Cheng said with a wise look, "There's one point that I've not imagined. Lord Huaiyuan is so bad-tempered and straight-forward; however, his offspring is so shrewd. What a shock!"

"If Lord Huaiyuan was as half tolerant as Zhang Taixuan, he would not force to go to Waii Sub-continent and lay the foundation of Huaiyuan Palace in that uncivilized area. Offsprings of Lord Huaiyuan must have learned from their ancestor's deeds. However, when Huaiyuan Palace roots in Youzhou Province this time, they have to be involved in the former swirl!" The elder of Heavens Fortune Sect replied with a sorrowful look while his words contained endless meanings.

"F*ck, the northeast military region is this father's territory, Zhang Taixuan is this father's provincial governor, a class 5 imperial officer of Taixia Country. Anyone who dares find trouble in this father's territory, this father will beat out his sh*t for sure!" Commander Cheng turned his face with full killing intent, "Although this father didn't come from the God's Will Army of Emperor Xuanyuan, this father served Black Armor Army, which cooperated with God's Will Army to crack down demons at the cost of countless blood and demon lives. This father still has numerous comrades-in-arms in Black Armor Army now. I also have people to favor me in Xuanyuan Hill. If anyone dares find me trouble, this father will beat him at once!"

"I know. But, now that Zhang Taixuan has taken the position, you should not control everything for him. Everyone knows that you are black both inside and outside. Even if you want to lose your temper, nobody would like to spare a chance for you!"

"Zhang Taixuan's face is not that thin. As long as he could hold the position steadily and maintain Zhang's foundation in Youzhou Province, even if he was teased by someone, it's nothing serious!" Commander Cheng concealed his killing intent as he instantly changed a topic, "How's your disciple?"

"It's a mental obstacle. However, It's also a test for him. If not the break through it, he might be dangerous in the future!"

"You geezers would speculate everything, including your own people. I wonder whether you would speculate before going to bed with your women. If you treat everything so seriously, how do you feel any pleasure?"

"You would never know the pleasure. It's nothing different than playing the flute to a cow and telling about ice to summer insects. Don't speak dirty words to pollute my hearing!" The elder of Heavens Fortune Sect threw a despised look at Commander Cheng...

Chapter 842: The First Clan in Youzhou Province

In dizziness, Zhang Tie felt like waking up from a comfortable, indolent, long sleep in a spring morning.

He was woken up by the twitters outside the bedroom.

When the twitters turned clear, Zhang Tie finally woke up.

After opening his eyes, Zhang Tie found he was lying on the bed of a traditional and brilliant bedroom with full Hua characteristics. There seemed to be a courtyard just outside the bedroom, from where the twitters drifted into the bedroom.

Zhang Tie got up and found that he had put on a suit of soft and comfortable white night robe. He didn't know how long he had slept.

Sitting on the bedside, Zhang Tie felt like having a wholly new body. Each cell across his body was surging while his spine felt warm and comfortable. After sensing it carefully, he made some movements in the room and found that his physical strength, speed, resilience and the seven strengths of qi, blood, tendon, meridian, bone, marrow and spirit had increased in different degrees. His physical strength increased the most. What was more, his first chakra was running in a thicker and more steadier way, which felt like a huge steam flywheel being applied with lubricating oil.

'Dragon-marrow liquor is really a good thing. With a jar of dragon-marrow liquor, my battle strength has reached a new high.' Zhang Tie licked his lips as a question occurred to his mind, 'I have benefited so much from one jar of dragon-marrow liquor, I wonder how strong is Emperor Xuanhuan who drinks dragon-marrow liquor every day.'

Zhang Tie just asked himself about that. He knew that he was far

from the realm of Emperor Xuanyuan, where there might be better things than dragon-marrow liquor. 'This question is like how a rustic wonders how many meat pies would an urban landlord eat after eating a tasty meat pie.'

With a self-deprecating smile, Zhang Tie pushed open the door of the bedroom and left.

There was indeed a courtyard outside the door. It was already about 10 am as the sun was hanging high. There were some spiritual banyan trees with green crowns and a pond. Some birds were singing on the trees while a shoal of golden fish was playing water cheerily below the lotus leaves.

This courtyard was very tranquil with great ambiance. However, it was not in Huaiyuan Mansion. Due to the tree shades and tall walls, Zhang Tie couldn't figure out his whereabouts. But he knew that he was in Youzhou City.

Elder Muen was in meditation with closed eyes in the pavilion under one spiritual banyan tree.

At the sight of Elder Muen, Zhang Tie realized that Elder Muen was especially working as a bodyguard for him here.

'Thankfully, I had an elder of Huaiyuan Palace to protect me after I got drunk. If I got drunk in another place, I'm afraid that any commoner could kill me.'

When Zhang Tie came out of the bedroom, Elder Muen opened his eyes.

"Erm, I'm really sorry. I've not imagined that the dragon-marrow liquor has such a strong after-effect. Sorry to trouble Elder Muen..." Zhang Tie scratched his head bashfully.

Elder Muen stood up. Watching Zhang Tie's bashful look, he burst out into laughter at once, "No trouble, no trouble, I could also enter meditation here, one stone for two birds!"

"Thank you, Elder Muen, how many days have I slept in here.

Where are we?"

"You've slept 7 days. It's October 12 today. We're in White Tiger Complex, Youzhou City. Ohh, White Tiger Complex serves as the official mansion of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province now!" Elder Muen told Zhang Tie with a smile.

Compared to the majestic look of Elder Muen when Zhang Tie met him for the first time, Elder Muen looked much more genial now.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could sleep straight for 7 days. The competition had ended a week ago, the White Tiger Complex had been branded with the Mansion of Provincial Governor of Youzhou Province. It indicated that the result of the competition had fixed.

"How's everything going?"

"Everything is smooth. Youzhou City has been under the control of Zhang Clan, Huaiyuan Palace!" Elder Muen replied cheerily with a bit pride, "How do you feel now? I was told that the dragon-marrow liquor has a special effect!"

Elder Muen asked out of concern and curiosity.

"I feel very good now. My chakra runs more steadily. Besides, I feel that my physical strength has increased by almost 500 kg; even my battle strength has further increased!" Zhang Tie warmed up his limbs.

Elder Muen nodded with a bit solemn look, "That's great. As Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace have just taken charge of Youzhou Province and our clan head has just ascended to the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. We clan elders have to favor many affairs in Youzhou Province for Huaiyuan Palace so that Huaiyuan Palace could deeply root in Youzhou Province. As you've become well-known in Youzhou Province, each of your movements would be observed by many people. You should be

incumbent upon duties! We elders of Huaiyuan Palace are outnumbered by Lu Clan and Gu Clan; additionally, our root in Youzhou Province could not match that of theirs, if you shirked your responsibilities, Huaiyuan Palace would be a laughing stock in others' eyes."

Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile, 'When I refused the invitation of Commander Cheng 7 days ago, the elders and head of Huaiyuan Palace had thought that we missed an extremely good chance. After I woke up, it looked that Huaiyuan Palace would never allow me to loiter outside anymore. I'm afraid that Elder Muen's words have been agreed by the other elders and Zhang Taixuan in advance. He told me about that so that I would not find any excuse to shirk my responsibilities.'

'Alright, it will indeed be improper if I just stay at home. I'm afraid that my parents would sustain a great stress about that. I'd better do something for the clan.'

"Where's the head of Zhang Clan? May you take me there, Elder Muen?"

After checking Zhang Tie's facial expression carefully, Elder Muen finally let out a sigh inside.

In the next minute, a group of female servants poured into the courtyard and started to help Zhang Tie cleanse up. After that, Zhang Tie ate and drunk some porridge. He then changed a new suit of black boa-silk robe before leaving the courtyard with Elder Muen for Zhang Taixuan.

...

The White Tiger Complex could match the imperial palaces of those countries in Waii Sub-continent. Zhang Tie's residence was just in a small corner of the residential area of the White Tiger Complex.

Walking in the White Tiger Complex which was branded with

the Mansion of Provincial Governor of Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie felt that it had been utterly different than that 7 days ago.

7 days ago, those in the White Tiger Complex were all strangers for Zhang Tie. Now, a lot of people of Zhang Clan were walking in the White Tiger Complex with pleasant and spirited looks. In wholly-new official suits, they were walking hastily. At the sight of Zhang Tie and Elder Muen, they would hurriedly give way to them from a long distance away. Standing on both sides of the corridor and the aisle, they would bow to them respectfully.

Feeling their genuine respectful and admiring looks, Zhang Tie knew that his position in Huaiyuan Palace had been stabilized.

"How many people of Huaiyuan Palace are going to be officers this time?" Zhang Tie asked Elder Muen when he watched their official suits.

"Youzhou Province is too large!" Elder Muen let out a deep sigh, "Actually, Huaiyuan Palace's people are not enough. However, after managing in Waii Sub-continent for so many years, we've cultivated a lot of clan elites and disciples in all walks of life. Since Huaiyuan Palace rules Youzhou Province, our junior disciples could also work. We have selected over 1,000 clan disciples to be officers from class 1 to class 9 and over 20,000 people to be civil servants from exiled class 1 to exiled class 9."

The two numbers really shocked Zhang Tie. He finally realized how this competition greatly influenced Zhang Clan. After Count Long Wind ascended to the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, Huaiyuan Palace had over 1,000 officials and over 20,000 civil servants in Taixia Country. These people would enter from all walks of life in Youzhou Province. Therefore, the competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province was competing for the first clan of Youzhou Province. However, without a deep clan root and background, Zhang Taixuan might not hold his position steadily.

...

The provincial governor was handling public affairs in the Bright Palace of White Tiger Complex. Zhang Tie saw various people in the courtyards, side halls and corridors outside the Bright Palace who were waiting to present themselves before the new provincial governor.

Almost all those who could come here to present themselves before the new provincial governor were commoners.

Some were dressed like gentlemen; some were officers in official uniforms; some were businessmen in luxurious costumes, some were military officers in a suit of armor; some were heads and elders of minor clans in Youzhou Province. As Youzhou was so large, of course, its local major clans were more than the 9 major clans which had joined the competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. Those weaker ones who knew that they had no abilities to compete for such a high position were scared off by the high-price ticket of the Heavens Ball. Of course, they dared not join the competition.

Among those people, Zhang Tie felt that some strangers were even knights.

'Taixia Country really has a lot of talents. Those who could at least be a No.1 knight in Waii Sub-continent could only wait outside the Provincial Governor Mansion to be received by the provincial governor.'

The arrival of Zhang Tie and Elder Muen attracted the others' eyes, causing a little change in their looks at once.

"Ahh, that excessively young guy is Zhang Mushen the lion in Youzhou Province who ate a demon knight alive!" Zhang Tie heard someone exclaiming in a low voice behind him. As that man was not a knight, he didn't know that Zhang Tie, as a knight, could hear his whisper as loud as hearing a voice from a loudspeaker although they were dozens of meters away from each other.

"Yes, he's the lion in Youzhou Province..."

"That junior is the lion in Youzhou Province..."

"That junior is Zhang Mushen, the lion in Youzhou Province who could sec-kill all the people below knights with his thunder-in-palm javelin throwing skill, the most powerful black iron knight..."

"I was told that Zhang Mushen was also a gentleman, he's too young!"

Zhang Tie heard all sorts of whispers on the way...

'Lion in Youzhou Province? Is that my nickname?'

'What a coincidence, my byname in the Mountain of Brightness was Chakra's Lion. And, I became the lion in Youzhou Province here...'

...

Chapter 843: The Dean of Supreme Court in Youzhou Province

White Tiger Complex had been hierarchical as the Provincial Governor's Mansion of Youzhou Province. Right outside the Bright Palace where the provincial governor worked, Zhang Tie and Elder Muen saw two rows of 72 guards of honor, who were tall in golden armors.

All the guards of honor were clan disciples of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace. Besides being tall and handsome, they were at least LV 9.

In golden armors and helmets, they were standing outside the Bright Palace in uniformed javelins, spears, ji, yue and shields with solemn looks, which was very deterrent.

With a tidy sound of "Hua", the guards of honor raised their arms and leveled their weapons at their chests at the same time at the sight of Zhang Tie and Elder Muen. Most of them stealthily glanced at Zhang Tie through the gaps of their helmets.

As guards of honor beside the provincial governor, of course, these people knew who was the biggest contributor in the competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, who turned the tide in the dilemma and finally won the position for Huaiyuan Palace.

Elder Muen nodded towards them. Without sending someone to report to Zhang Taixuan, Elder Muen and Zhang Tie stepped onto the jade stages outside the Bright Palace and entered the Bright Palace.

The moment he was close to the Bright Palace, Zhang Tie had sensed a weird qi in Bright Palace. He found that the sound inside the Bright Palace would not leak out. After sensing it carefully, Zhang Tie found a faint, special feeling beneath the jade bricks.

Being totally different than the function of alchemist's loudspeaker, the item beneath these jade bricks could constrain sound in this fixed space. Zhang Tie immediately understood something, 'F*ck, that's too luxurious. A super large alchemist's equipment is buried in the Lord provincial governor's office so as to keep the dialogue inside the Bright Palace confidential. Zhang Tie could never imagine that before.

This was the uniformed equipment in the Provincial Governor's Mansion of Taixia Country.

This Bright Palace was very large. After crossing the threshold and passing by the wall in front of the gate, they entered the palace, which was higher than 50 m. On both sides of the palace were two rows of Hua chimes.

After the chimes were rows of huge weapon stands.

Until he drew close to the rows of huge weapon stands did Zhang Tie hear a sound from afar in the Bright Palace.

"...Cangshan Prefecture is abundant in mining deposits. Among the mining deposits which have been ascertained, Cangshan Prefecture gathers $\frac{1}{3}$ of iron ores, $\frac{1}{4}$ of coal ores and $\frac{1}{2}$ of copper ores, almost 70% of crystal ores and 40% of gold ores across Youzhou Province. Besides, it contains over 100 kinds of more mining deposits. Lu Clan in Spirituallmaple Prefecture, Gu Clan in Easternriver Prefecture, Sun Clan in Guide Prefecture and Guo Clan in Sanquan Prefecture share interests in Cangshan Prefecture. Ouyang Clan is a local major clan in Cangshan Prefecture. As Ouyang Clan only has one knight, its battle strength could not match that of the others; however, Ouyang Clan controls many mineral reservoirs. Over these years, under the stress caused by Lu Clan, Gu Clan, Sun Clan and Guo Clan, Ouyang Clan always behaved very meticulously and lived hard. This time, Ouyang Clan's head and elders came here for the position of the provincial housing minister of Youzhou Province. Perhaps, they even cast greedy eyes on the prefectural head of Cangshan Prefecture..."

After passing by the rows of weapon stands, Zhang Tie saw Zhang Taixuan sitting behind a table while some clan deacons in uniformed costumes were reporting something to Zhang Taixuan on his side.

All the positions in the Provincial Governor's Mansion such as librarian, utterance record officer, clerk, harem affairs officer, classics officer, music officer, guest reception officer, ritual officer, seal officer, costume officer, decoration officer, guards of honor officer, food and drink officer, drink brewing officer, medicine officer, wedding ceremony officer, furnishings officer, atlas officer, park officer, lantern officer, rules making officer, gems collection officer and property management officer were assumed by reliable deacons. The moment they arrived, they had gradually mastered the daily operations of the entire White Tiger Complex, the Provincial Governor's Mansion.

After throwing a glance at that clan deacon who was reporting, Zhang Tie felt he was a bit familiar with a shred look. Zhang Tie seemed to have seen him in the rotating chakra ceremony. After looking at his uniformed costume, Zhang Tie knew he was the utterance librarian in the Provincial Governor's Mansion. Although he could not match clan elders, he was definitely a necessary strength in the clan. Additionally, some people like them could always undertake tasks alone.

After noticing Elder Muen and Zhang Tie, Zhang Taixuan raised his hand to stop that librarian. At the sight of Elder Muen and Zhang Tie, the deacons hurriedly bowed deeply towards them. Before Zhang Taixuan told them to leave out of here, they had left silently.

Zhang Taixuan stood up with a smile...

"Clan head!" Zhang Tie uttered. Closely after that, he bowed towards Zhang Taixuan according to the seniority in the clan without any arrogance. After that, Zhang Tie raised his head and threw a glance at Zhang Taixuan carefully.

In a uniformed costume with mountains, rivers and a unicorn on it, a purple-jade upturned crown with a mysterious rune of the seal of provincial governor of Youzhou Province between his eyebrows, Zhang Taixuan looked perfectly dignified.

Besides his costume which was utterly different than that 7 days ago, Zhang Tie found that Zhang Taixuan's knight qi had also changed. He remembered that Zhang Taixuan was just a black iron knight 7 days ago when he was just a bit more powerful than the demon general; however, he felt Zhang Taixuan's qi was repressive now, which was utterly different than that 7 days ago. 'Has he...'

Noticing Zhang Tie's dubious look, Elder Muen explained, "According to the rules of Taixia Country, earth knight could not join in the competition for the position of provincial governor of a new province. Clan head has already been able to promote to an earth knight 2 years ago; however, due to this position, he had been constraining himself. After winning this position, he officially promoted to an earth knight. Even Lu Dingzhi had promoted to an earth knight after that competition!"

Zhang Tie's heart faintly pounded as he understood it right away, "Congratulations, clan head, you will have no obstacles in ruling Youzhou Province!"

"I have to appreciate Elder Mushen. Without Elder Mushen's assistance at the critical moment, I would not be able to take this position!" Zhang Taixuan smiled as he invited Zhang Tie and Elder Muen to take a seat with a genial and natural look. He looked kinder than before, "It seems that Elder Mushen has fully absorbed the effect of dragon-marrow liquor and made further improvement in the battle strength. This is beneficial for Huaiyuan Palace!"

Regardless of Zhang Taixuan's current position, Zhang Tie felt his words were very comfortable. While being modest orally, Zhang Tie warned himself that this provincial governor of Youzhou Province and the clan head of Huaiyuan Palace was really

great. Otherwise, he would not have an excellent daughter like Lan Yunxi.

As there's no outsider at present, Elder Muen put Zhang Tie's intention straight.

After hearing Elder Muen's explanation, Zhang Taixuan replied before Zhang Tie opened his mouth, "There's a crucial position in Youzhou Province which could barely be handled by outsiders. I feel that it fits Elder Mushen pretty well. You will work in Youzhou Province instead of fighting outside in for the sake of your filial obedience. Meanwhile, you could be a deterrent to the other major clans and knights across Youzhou Province. I really could not find another person except for Elder Mushen. Would you like to take it?"

Hearing Zhang Taixuan's words, Zhang Tie knew that this position must have been fixed by all the clan elders and Zhang Taixuan when he fell asleep these days. 'Elder Muen and Zhang Taixuan are definitely putting on a play in front of me. I have no reason to refuse it. What else can I say?'

"What's that position?" Zhang Tie asked helplessly.

"Dean of Supreme Court in Youzhou Province!"

'Tingwei of Youzhou Province?' Zhang Tie was shocked as he had not imagined that Zhang Taixuan and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace could grant such a position to him, 'Tingwei of Youzhou Province takes charge of the penalty, judgment and administration of justice in Youzhou Province. It's definitely a high position.'

"I feel Elder Muray fits this position better!" Zhang Tie hurriedly declined it.

"As Youzhou has just promoted to a province; additionally it's in the holy war, military affairs are most important; I've already appointed Elder Muray as the commander of Youzhou Province. He's responsible for the establishment of a new army in Youzhou

Province. Elder Muray already has a heavy burden and could not accept this position anymore!" Zhang Taixuan sighed.

"Why not Elder Muyu or Elder Muen?"

"Elder Muyu is going to stay in Youzhou City. As the pivot of Youzhou Province, Youzhou City has to be protected by at least one clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace. Besides, Elder Muyu has to handle the position of chief procurator of the supreme procuratorate and aid me to rule Youzhou Province. Elder Muen is the new prefectural governor of Yanghe Prefecture. He has to stay in the foundation of Huaiyuan Palace, which is a very important position. Therefore, he could not accept it either anymore. Elder Muiyuan is in charge of the rites and music of Youzhou Province; Elder Muan is in charge of agriculture of Youzhou Province. All these are critical positions which could not be handled by outsiders!"

Zhang Tie wanted to continue declining it; however, he suddenly remembered his weirdo Master Zhaoyuan. Therefore, he nodded slowly...

'Whether the God is kidding me or not? How could a disciple of a person, who ranks first on the wanted list in the Supreme Court, become the dean of the supreme court of a province in Taixia Country.?'

'Whether I'm colluding with the bandit on behalf of the government or not?' Zhang Tie asked himself inside...

Chapter 844: Leaving Youzhou City

Zhang Tie woke up on October 12th. After staying in Youzhou City for less than 2 days, he had returned to Golden Light City by an airship of Huaiyuan Palace.

During the 2 days, as the new dean of the supreme court in Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie visited the supreme court and learned about his responsibilities and the obligations of his subordinate agencies although he took a passive attitude towards his work.

The position Tingwei was difficult to understand for those who came to Taixa Country from other sub-continents; however, as long as they knew the meaning of the two Hua characters respectively, they would easily understand the responsibilities of this position.

The character "廷" means fairness. Those being broad-minded fit the character "廷". Guards in armors were "尉". Literally, "廷尉" referred to those who safeguarded fairness. According to the explanation of Siberians, "廷尉" could also be translated into a fashioned term——messenger of justice. Zhang Tie thought that if a country could name the most solemn official position as the messenger of justice, this country definitely carried a deep-rooted romantic gene.

The supreme "廷尉" agency in Taixa Country was the supreme court; those on state-level were called court temple; those on prefecture-level were called court yamun; those on city-level were called court administration; those on county-level were called court branch; villages and towns didn't have "廷尉" agency. As the dean of the supreme court of Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie ruled all the court temples across Youzhou Province.

Court temple contained three subordinates: first, prison temple, which literally was in charge of the prison system across Youzhou

Province; second, judgement temple, which was responsible for the judgment and litigation across Youzhou Province; third, penalty temple, which was responsible for arresting criminals, deterring evil forces and maintaining local security. Due to the three subordinate agencies, court organ was also named Three-Temple Yamun in Taixia folklore. The main officers of courts at different levels were called heads of three temples.

The dean of the supreme court in Youzhou Province was Class 5, who would be paid by 75000 kgs' grains a year and be awarded the silver seal and cyan ribbon.

The supreme court in Youzhou Province was located on an avenue 1.5 miles away in the west of White Tiger Complex. Although being smaller than that of White Tiger Complex, it still occupied about 200,000 square meters. Being solemn, it manifested the majesty of the supreme court everywhere.

When Zhang Tie asked about his compensation in the supreme court, he was shocked by the answer "1,000 shi 1 per year".

"Is Youzhou's fiscal income so poor? How could they just deliver grains to the dean of the supreme court?"

Zhang Tie knew that ancient Hua officers' compensations were not in terms of gold or silver coins; instead, they were measured in terms of shi of grains. Zhang Tie had not imagined that he would have such a day either. Zhang Tie became confused, 'Although Youzhou Province is the lower province of Taixia Country, its officers should not be that embarrassed. Does Taixia Country really treat officers as its civil servants? Referring to the historical facts, the so-called civil servants were nothing but the biggest humor in the human history before the Catastrophe.

After Zhang Tie asked that, he found that all those beside him in the supreme court looked weird while their faces turned red.

"Ahem...ahem..." An officer in the court coughed twice after a short while before replying Zhang Tie, "Lord, you might not know

it's different here than many countries in other continents, although your compensation was about 1,000 shi a year, it's not grains, but golds! In this lower province, even the lowest Class 9 officer could enjoy 120 kg of golds a year."

'Golds? Is my compensation about 1,000 shi golds a year? 2,400,000 gold coins a year? It would take my father over 200,000 years to work in Blackhot City. How rich is Taixia Country? Officers' compensations could be measured by shi of golds? Perhaps, only Taixia Country could make it in the human world...'

When Zhang Tie occasionally heard the word "shi receiver", he was confused about its meaning. When he heard the explanation, he understood it right away, 'shi receiver is a graceful appellation to officers from Taixia folklore. Even the lowest Class 9 county magistrate could have 120 kg, namely 2,400 gold coins a year. It seems that Taixia officers live pretty well.'

However, although Taixia officers' compensations were high, all of them had to register their family properties from the chief procurator general, the prime minister and the premier of the state council to the village constable in their regimes. Taixia Country would punish those corrupt officers severely by letting them swallow the golds that they had accepted as bribes. If they were not dead, they would be set free; if they were dead, their family properties would be confiscated. Those who reported the corrupt officers could gain all the family properties of the corrupt officers. Therefore, very few officers in Taixia Country dared take bribes of over 10 gold coins.

Finding that Zhang Tie became silent, they thought that Zhang Tie was complaining that the compensation was too low.

"As Youzhou has just promoted to a province, the lord's compensation is indeed a bit low. But as the lord is still young, you will have an infinitely bright future. With the lord in Youzhou Province, the evil forces in Youzhou Province would be deterred. If Youzhou Province has a good social security, the lord will get a

good comment. After that, the supreme court even the imperial court would present your annual bonus, which was usually several times more than that of your compensation, including priceless treasures. Even our subordinates could be benefited from it!"

...

After staying in the supreme court in Youzhou City for a short while, Zhang Tie had left Youzhou City on the second day.

Court agencies had existed in Taixia Country for over 800 years, during which period, all the regulations in these agencies had been established. All of their daily operations were referred to concrete regulations. Even if Zhang Tie was not there, the supreme court of Youzhou Province could also run normally.

As the dean of the supreme court in Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie had the right to appoint many officers in the courts across this province; however, Zhang Tie was not interested in it. Additionally, Zhang Tie didn't need any helper on his side; therefore, Zhang Tie just handed it over to the head and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace. Zhang Tie didn't care whether the officers on different levels in the court temples were from disciples of Zhang Clan, through exchanges with other major clans in Youzhou Province or selected from local people. He knew that Huaiyuan Palace would consider it well for himself.

Those who loved power might rack their minds to consider about it; however, Zhang Tie didn't love power. He knew that the biggest power for a knight didn't come from outside but from long-term accumulation of his own power. Peaches and plums didn't speak, however, there were always paths under them which were caused by travelers who were attracted by their fragrance and beautiful scenery.

As the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province had just been fixed, everything was back on the right track. Zhang Tie estimated that he didn't need to concern about anything in the

supreme court for the time being. After making some rules for the supreme court, Zhang Tie left for Golden Light City by airship.

...

On the noon of October 14th, soon after Zhang Tie left Youzhou City by airship...

"Clan head, Elder Mushen has already left Youzhou City by airship!" An officer bowed and reported to Zhang Taixuan in the Bright Palace of the Provincial Governor's Mansion.

"Hmm, I know!" Zhang Taixuan replied with a glassy-eyed look. After that, he put down a document and asked calmly, "Has Elder Mushen left any words in the supreme court yesterday?"

"Elder Mushen just requested the supreme court to make a brief report to him monthly. Elder Mushen said that he once encountered Zhu Liang the Fierce Wolf who was wanted by the supreme court in the open waters of Qiongzou Province before he came to Youzhou Province. Zhu Liang was being chased by two bounty hunters. However, he still didn't change his cruel and fierce personality. Therefore, Zhu Liang left a deep impression in Elder Mushen's mind. Elder Mushen requested the supreme court to pay special attention to those figures on the wanted list and the messages about them. He told us to prevent any figure on the wanted list from entering Youzhou Province to make troubles here. He would like to know every message about those figures on the wanted list the moment we received it."

After hearing this, Zhang Taixuan slowly waved his hands towards that officer. That officer then lowered his body and slowly left the Bright Palace by moving backward...

When that officer left the Bright Palace, Zhang Taixuan faintly rubbed that odd-looking, colorful finger ring once again. After thinking about it for half a minute, he picked up his document once again...

...

After boarding the airship, Zhang Tie didn't feel like enjoying the scenery below; instead, he directly entered his cabin and took out his earth crystals to cultivate.

Zhang Tie was greatly shocked by this competition for the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province. He also felt a bit sense of crisis; especially in the wrestle with the last demon knight in the Heavens Ball. That demon knight was so powerful that Zhang Tie almost showed his trump card. Therefore, as long as he was free, Zhang Tie would enter cultivation.

Previously, in order to reduce the consumption of his earth-element crystals, Zhang Tie spent half of his spiritual energy in consuming earth-element crystals while the other half of his spiritual energy in capturing those swimming multi-faceted crystals in the elements realm at the same time. After this competition, Zhang Tie had changed his cultivation method and realized the fault of his "frugality". He spent all of his spiritual energy in forming 18 hands so as to carry the earth elements from the earth-elements crystals at the same time. In this way, he would consume earth-elements crystals quickly at an efficiency which was almost two times higher than that before.

'As Taixia Country has numerous powerhouses, I might meet dangers in the future. I should absorb my present earth-elements crystals as fast as possible so as to reinforce my battle strength in the shortest period. As for the earth-elements crystals...I will consider about it after consuming all of my reserves...' Zhang Tie thought.

In such a high efficiency, it only took Zhang Tie 2 hours to use up one earth-elements crystal...

By contrast, it would take other knights 1.5 days to use up one earth-elements crystal. Zhang Tie's high efficiency was really shocking.

Chapter 845: A Solemn Reception

After hearing the gentle knocks of the door, Zhang Tie moved his consciousness out of the elements realm.

After throwing a glance at the half-consumed earth-elements crystal in his hand, Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and teleported it into Castle of Black Iron immediately.

"What's the matter?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Elder Mushen, there's a greeting team dispatched by Huaiyuan Palace in the sky ahead of us, would you like to take a look outside?" The captain's respectful and careful voice drifted from outside the door.

'A greeting team?' Zhang Tie became stunned for a second. When he took out that earth-elements crystal 1 hour ago, he remembered that the airship was at least 500 miles away from Yanghe Prefecture, how could they meet the greeting team of Huaiyuan Palace here in the sky?

"Yes, I will take a look outside!" Zhang Tie replied as he stood up and opened the hatch door. Under the guidance of the captain respectfully, he came to the command module.

Watching the scene outside from the command module, Zhang Tie was too shocked that he became speechless for quite a while.

Right in the air ahead of them, numerous fury-level airships were suspending in the air in two rows tidily like fighters who stood there in awed silence, leaving a tunnel in the sky and greeting Zhang Tie.

Colorful greeting flags had been exhibited on the huge fury-level airships. The front two airships even put down two broad banners with huge red words on them. Each word on them was dozens of meters in size, which looked extremely brilliant in the air.

The left slogan was——Elder Mushen, the Lion in Youzhou

Province!

The right slogan was——Elder Mushen, the Pillar of Zhang Clan!

"After knowing that Elder Mushen is coming back, Huaiyuan Palace dispatched 2,000 fury-level airships to greet Elder Mushen after flying 400 miles away from Yanghe Prefecture!" The captain of Zhang Tie's airship explained to Zhang Tie.

Honestly, Zhang Tie was really moved by such a solemn welcome ceremony. Even though he was always indifferent about such things, Zhang Tie's heart still pounded when he faced their sincerity.

"Send a signal by flags to them——Huaiyuan Palace is Majestic, Our Wills Unite Like a Fortress!" Zhang Tie told the captain after recovering his composure. Zhang Tie knew that he should never be cocky at this moment; otherwise, he might be reproached and cause an enmity between him and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace. After all, he was not the only contributor to this competition. Unless he exposed his trump card in the competition, Zhang Taixuan would never gain such a position without the help of any other elders of Huaiyuan Palace, not to mention that Zhang Taixuan gained most points in the Heavens Ball on the side of Huaiyuan Palace. Of course, Zhang Tie dared not take credits.

Seeing Zhang Tie's response, all those in the greeting team became especially spirited. Many of them even cheered.

...

After 4 hours, Zhang Tie's airship landed in the airship base outside Golden Light City. The moment he got off the airship and stepped onto the red carpet, Zhang Tie had caught sight of his parents, elder brother, his elder sisters-in-law, his wives and Zhang's juniors. All of them were wearing formal suites. Standing in front of his mother, Zhang Tie found that his mother was looking at him with a thrilled expression. Besides these family members, Zhang Tie saw his elder uncles, cousins. Even Zhang Su

was among them.

Additionally, he saw the major of Golden Light City, the heads of many clans in the branch of Golden Sea City and those celebrities in Yanghe Prefecture.

Zhang Tie had seen such a scene for so many times; however, at the sight of the brilliance on the faces of his family members, Zhang Tie felt like coming home with full of honors.

"Elder Mushen, after knowing that you're coming back today, all the people across Golden Light City are waiting for you here!" The major of Golden Light City moved one step forward and bowed towards Zhang Tie respectfully.

The major of Golden Light City was called Zhang Haicheng, the grandson of Elder Muyuan. He was on the same seniority with Zhang Tie's grandpa. After throwing a glance at the major of Golden Light City, Zhang Tie found that his face was indeed somewhat similar to that of Elder Muyuan.

'If I were not the clan elder, I'm afraid that he would not respond to me even if I called him grandpa. However, now that the social status between him and I are reversed, I don't have to be too modest.' He just nodded genially, "Thanks for your work!"

"It's my pleasure; it's my pleasure. After hearing that Elder Mushen overwhelmed all the elites of other clans across Youzhou Province and helped the clan head gain the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, I made a decision myself to prepare such a welcome ceremony for Elder Mushen in Golden Light City. I hope Elder Mushen doesn't get offended with that!"

Being outstanding in the branch of Elder Muyuan and selected as the major of Golden Light City by Elder Muyuan, Zhang Haicheng must be a very meticulous figure. Watching Zhang Tie getting off the airship, he hurriedly moved out and greeted Zhang Tie, Closely after that, he left the rest time to Zhang Tie's family members.

"Papa!"

"Papa!"

"Papa!"

Linda, Beverly and Fiona lost their grips while Zhang Chenglei, Zhang Chengting and Zhang Chengpei rushed towards Zhang Tie like three little lions.

They were all wearing decent black formal suites like three little adults. With pink skins, they looked pretty cute. Watching them swarming up, hugging his legs and calling him papa, Zhang Tie felt much better at once with a big smile on his face.

Holding his three sons' hands, Zhang Tie walked towards his parents, "Dad, mom! Why are you here?"

"After being told that you will come back today, we couldn't stand to welcome you here!" Zhang Tie's dad replied.

Zhang Tie watched Zhang Ping and found his dad's eye corners were a bit wet. In such a scene, parents might be a bit thrilled. His parents missed his rotating chakra ceremony. This time, they were all at present and felt happy, proud and excited about Zhang Tie.

As it was not the right moment to chat with his family members, after simply nodding towards and exchanging glances with his elder brother, elder sister-in-law and his wives, Zhang Tie greeted his grandpa and Zhang Su briefly. After that, he held his sons' hands and exchanged a few words with those elders and celebrities in Golden Light City.

After waiting for Zhang Tie in the airship base for quite a while, they felt pretty honored to talk with Zhang Tie; especially after finding that Zhang Tie was so genial. The major of Golden Light City was introducing these celebrities to Zhang Tie, the greater part of whom were Zhang Tie's relatives of the same branch precisely.

Watching Zhang Tie holding Zhang Chenglei's tiny hand and

exchanging words with these celebrities in Golden Light City, Linda instantly dropped off tears as she covered his mouth by her hand.

"Elder sister, what's wrong?" Fiona whispered.

"Nothing, I'm alright. I'm just too happy!" Linda recovered her composure as she hurriedly wiped off her tears.

After throwing a glance at Linda, Beverly stealthily passed a piece of facial tissue to Linda. Beverly could understand why Linda dropped tears more or less. Perhaps, only Linda, who had lost her father when she was young and experienced so many difficulties and frustrations in life could have a special feeling facing such a scene.

Watching Zhang Tie, Beverly suddenly realized that it was the most right thing that she had ever done by meeting Zhang Tie in the Wildwolf Valley in her life.

Who else could imagine that the civilian's daughter in Blackhot City could become a wife of the dean of the supreme court of a province in Taixia Country? Given her social status, those rich ladies of the major clans in Blackhot City were not even qualified to lick her shoes.

Beverly faintly raised her head and proudly showed her beauty...

...

"Elder Mushen, we've prepared a reception banquet for you in the Major's Mansion, erm..." The major of Golden Light City whispered to Zhang Tie after introducing the major figures.

"Now that you've prepared that, let's have a dinner then!"

Even though he had become a clan elder and the dean of the supreme court of Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie still had to establish human relationships although he disliked that.

After hearing Zhang Tie's response, the major of Golden Light

City looked brilliant at once. He definitely felt pretty honored to have Zhang Tie join the banquet in the Major's Mansion.

Closely after that, they left the airship base for the Major's Mansion. Being surrounded by hundreds of people, Zhang Tie and his family members had a meal with the major of Golden Light City.

Before the banquet, the major of Golden Light City flattered Zhang Tie for quite a while in the banquet hall. He even invited Zhang Tie to give a brief speech. Zhang Tie stood up as he gave a brief speech.

Zhang Tie's first sentence was, "In this competition, the clan head gained most points and overwhelmed Lu Dingzhi, the head of Lu Clan. Thanks to the dauntless fights of the other elders of Zhang Clan in the Heavens Ball, Huaiyuan Palace made concerted efforts to win the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province and to lay a solid foundation in Youzhou Province for Huaiyuan Palace!"

Zhang Tie's second sentence was, "I'm hungry. Don't just sit there, pick your chopsticks!"

After Zhang Tie finished his brief speech, the banquet hall became silent for a couple of seconds. After that, a fervent applaud sounded in the banquet hall. Everyone praised that Elder Mushen was very modest and humorous.

...

After eating the supper in the Major's Mansion, Zhang Tie's family members, his grandpa Zhang Haitian and his elder uncles and cousins left the Major's Mansion and returned to Zhang's mansion in Golden Light City.

Everyone was okay except for Zhang Tie's grandpa, who was hyper today that he even got drunk in the banquet, which was really out of the imagination of his family members...

Chapter 846: Rapid Development

After returning to Golden Light City, Zhang Tie became relaxed completely...

Since he joined Iron-Blood Camp and went to Selnes Theater of Operations, this was the only time when Zhang Tie felt reassured and relaxed after returning to Taixia Country and staying with his family members.

Zhang Tie had been running like an engine for so many years. After almost one month since he returned to Golden Light City on October 15th, this engine finally stopped running.

Zhang Tie even felt like having a winter holiday.

During the past one month, Zhang Tie didn't even enter Castle of Black Iron. He just stayed at home with his wives and his mother or played with his three sons in and out Golden Light City.

When Zhang Tie was at home, his mother looked more and more brilliant. Her mental disease was healed too. Through the nourishment of Zhang Tie, Linda, Beverly and Fiona looked more and more beautiful. Compared to the estrangement between his sons and him when they met each other for the first time, the three kids just wondered where they were going to play with their dad the moment they got up. Sometimes, as they were too excited about Zhang Tie in the daytime, they could not even sleep well. Therefore, Zhang Tie was always blamed by his parents and wives.

Over the past one month, Zhang Tie almost forgot that humans and demons were still in the holy war.

Not only that, over the past one month, since Count Long Wind promoted to the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, the entire Huaiyuan Palace, even the entire Yanghe Prefecture had been vigorous. Even though the winter had arrived, the sudden, cold current in the air could still not resist the great passion across

Yanghe Prefecture.

Certainly, he was just reassured mentally and physically; it didn't mean that he had fewer affairs to handle. Actually, since Zhang Tie returned to Golden Light City, Zhang Clan had started to be busier as they started to welcome a great change.

Zhang Tie's grandpa's foundation was in the shipbuilding industry in Embracing Tiger City.

Over the past years, from Waii Sub-continent to Youzhou Province in Taixia Country, Zhang Clan's Milkway Shipyard finally entered its heyday due to the holy war. After moving to Youzhou Province, the Milkway Shipyard had been expanded by at least one times compared to that a few years ago.

Through negotiating with Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang, Jinwu Business Group injected 5 million gold coins into Milkway Shipyard and became a shareholder of Milkway Shipyard, which occupied 20% of the total shares of Milkway Shipyard. After Jinwu Business Group's investment, the Milkway Shipyard was renamed as Jinwu Shipyard directly.

Zhang Tie's elder uncle still occupied the greater part of shares of Jinwu Shipyard along with the control power of this shipyard. However, actually, Jinwu Shipyard had been affiliated to Zhang Tie.

Everyone across Yanghe Prefecture and Huaiyuan Palace knew that "Jinwu" was the brand of Elder Mushen. The meaning of renaming Milkway Shipyard into Jinwu Shipyard became evident—the other branches of Zhang Haitian, the old man of Zhang family were approaching Zhang Tie. It indicated that Zhang Tie officially became the pillar of Zhang Clan.

There was an old Hua saying, when the tree fell, the monkey would scatter. Zhang's Clan was facing the opposite situation.

Zhang Tie was like a huge tree, which was growing faster than

that Zhang Clan could ever imagine. With luxuriant foliage and spreading branches, this huge tree had manifested its exuberant vitality. Its look would be inestimable in the future. It was already able to serve as a shelter for all the members of Zhang Clan.

Actually, when Zhang Tie held his rotating chakra ceremony and became a clan elder in Yiyang City, those relatives on the side of Zhang Haitian, the old man of Zhang family had intended to approach Zhang Tie. However, due to the reason of the holy war, plus Zhang Tie stayed in Waii Sub-continent for garrison, they didn't do that timely. After Huaiyuan Palace rooted in Youzhou Province, with the stabilization of Milkway Shipyard and Jinwu Business Group in Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie's eldest uncle's family gradually increased their exchanges with Zhang Tie. After Zhang Tie came to Taixia Country for a few days, he had already become famous across Youzhou Province as the dean of the supreme court of Youzhou Province. He even won the favor of Commander Cheng. Therefore, Zhang Tie's elder uncle's family accelerated their steps to approach Zhang Tie.

As for a big clan, such a thing was definitely indisputable. No matter whether a clan was rich or poor, it had to stick to one principle, namely, to be harmonious. The more cohesive the clan was, the greater achievements and brighter future it would have. No only Hua people, even many local major clans across Waii Sub-continent and Western Continent had traditions and domestic disciplines to maintain cohesiveness and influence. In some pervert, huge clans, in order to prevent their family wealth from being separated by outsiders, they even insisted on endogamy.

After Milkway Shipyard was renamed as Jinwu Shipyard, the happiest ones were not Zhang Haitian the grandpa of Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie's elder uncles, cousins, Zhang Tie or his elder brother but Zhang Tie's dad Zhang Ping.

Zhang Tie's dad had never been so proud even when Zhang Tie became a clan elder.

The disputes between Zhang Tie's dad and his family and between the last generation had been entangled in Zhang Ping's heart for dozens of years. This time, the burden in the heart of Zhang Ping was completely unloaded by Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang in this way.

The moment he unloaded his burden mentally, Zhang Tie's dad had been reassured. Benefited from this, he even lit the 8th surging point on his spine and promoted to LV 6 fighter at 60, which made Zhang family boisterous for a few days.

Zhang Tie's relatives on the side of his grandpa were busy approaching Zhang Tie's family while Zhang Yang was busy doing another thing.

After returning to Golden Light City, Zhang Tie realized that Zhang family needed to build a city independently...

'Although it's too early to describe the current situation in the proverb "Two tigers cannot live on the same mountain", Elder Muyuan's sense of existence has reduced a lot under my halos. Although it will not be a problem for a short time; but, after some time, Elder Muyuan's branch and my branch would definitely have conflicts in Golden Light City. I prefer to give way to Elder Muyuan at present than to wait for big trouble. By doing this, I could show my respect to Elder Muyuan's branch and leave a greater space for the development of Jinwu Business Group and my branch...'

Chapter 847: Purchasing Land

On November 27th, heavy snow, in the wilderness over 250 miles away in the southwest of Golden Light City...

This region was not affiliated to Yanghe Prefecture; however, it bordered with Yanghe Prefecture. As a wasteland in the territory of Youzhou Province, it's closer to Youzhou City than Yanghe Prefecture.

Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang and a group of people of Zhang family were watching this land in the command module of a fury-level airship in the sky.

Compared to Yanghe Prefecture, this land was undulating and untraversed. Such a land existed everywhere in lower provinces like Youzhou Province.

Due to heavy snow, the woods in the mountains were rimy while some rivers and brooks had been frozen. Zhang Chengze, Zhang Chenglei and the other little guys were lowering their bodies in front of an optical imaging device in the command module and adjusting the focal distance and display area in the optical imaging device. At the same time, they exclaimed due to the excitement.

Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang and Zhang Ping were standing on the other end of the command module and watched the land through the lower view porthole.

"Dad, how do you feel about this land?" Zhang Yang asked Zhang Ping.

Zhang Tie felt that his dad's crow's foot had disappeared greatly while his face had turned florid perhaps because he had promoted to LV 6 and felt cheerful lately.

"I just followed you here to take a look. As for the details, you brothers could make decisions by yourselves; I will agree with you!" Zhang Ping said cheerily.

"Dad, there's a herd of deer below us..."

Before Zhang Yang replied, those little guys had shouted and applauded as they found a herd of deer galloping in the wilderness.

"Follow the herd for a while for these little guys!" Zhang Tie issued an order to the captain of the airship.

"These little guys have already turned crazier after following you for only a few days. Other fathers are strict, look at you, you've spoiled our sons!" After hearing Zhang Tie's order, Linda, who was chatting with Zhang Tie's elder sisters-in-law started to blame Zhang Tie, causing the other women to giggle.

As it turned colder, the women of Zhang's family wore thicker clothes. With scarfs made of hides of sables and silver foxes over their necks, plus those expensive and delicate runes or alchemist's jewelry on their hands, these women looked more like rich ladies.

"After all, the airship has to travel in the sky, however, we need to please these little guys!" Zhang Tie explained with a smile. After that, he turned around and asked Zhang Yang, "What's the price of the land below?"

Although being the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie still didn't know too much about commerce. He rarely cared about money. It seemed to be the "Sequela of Gorath". Speaking of money, the first thought that occurred to Zhang Tie's mind was to rob Three-eye Association clans, which was the fastest way to make the most money.

"Youzhou Province is a lower province. All the lands below are wastelands being 140 miles away from cities. 2/3 of them was a mountainous area, while 1/3 of them was plain. According to the regulations, the land here is just Class C level II. Such a land is priced as 600 gold coins per square mile by the Land Resources Bureau in Youzhou City.

"So cheap!" Zhang Tie replied after being stunned for a few

seconds.

"It's not cheap if you compare it to the wild provinces in the north. All the lands over there were ownerless. According to the laws of Taixia Country, as long as you build a city over there, you will have 3 square miles of land surrounding the city for free as the affiliated land. If mining ores were discovered in those wild provinces, the major clans would always build a city in the nearby so as to occupy the mining ores. Besides levying taxes, the imperial court would not interfere with them at all. Therefore, wild province reclamation is a big business in Taixia Country." Zhang Yang made a further explanation to Zhang Tie as his eyes glittered. It seemed that Zhang Yang was interested in land reclamation in Taixia Country.

After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie realized that what Zhang Yang said was true. The wild provinces in Taixia were truly in an anarchic state. Even though there were still people in these wild provinces. As long as there were people, there would be conflicts such as disputes about the right of attribution of mining ores being discovered in the wild provinces which different pioneering clans were involved in. As wild provinces could not hear litigation cases, according to the regulation of the judiciary jurisdiction in Taixia Country, the litigation cases in Liaozhou Province, which was near Youzhou Province in the north would be heard and tried by the judgment court under the court temple in Youzhou Province. Namely, Zhang Tie would take charge in such cases. Actually, the dean of the supreme court in Youzhou Province was also responsible for the litigation cases in Liaozhou Province before Liaozhou Province was established.

However, wild provinces also had their own rules of survival. Generally, conflicts in wild provinces would be handled inside the provinces. Bounty hunters and major clans in Taixia Country would manifest their power in wild provinces.

"How about this land? After a few days, we can fetch someone

here to fix the border. Let's buy about 100,000 square miles of land first." Zhang Tie suggested calmly as if he was talking about buying 5-10 kg of white cabbages.

After saying that, Zhang Tie found that the command module became silent immediately. Zhang Ping and Zhang Yang were watching him with dumbfounded looks; even those women stopped their talks as they turned around to see him.

"What's wrong?" Zhang Tie touched his face with a confused look. His dad almost popped out his eyes while Zhang Yang looked bashful.

"Ahem...ahem..." Zhang Yang coughed, "Although Jinwu Business Group has developed really fast these couple of years, Jinwu Business Group only has over 60 million gold coins as floating capital. It might not be enough for such a big investment. We might need bank loans. If the loan amount was too large, Jinwu Business Group would have a greater financial stress."

"Wuh, I see!" Zhang Tie moved his hand onto his jaw. He almost forgot about the financial stress facing Jinwu Business Group and his family if they wanted to buy such a wide area of land.

"I've calculated it. I feel that we can buy about 150,000 square miles of land first. We can build a small Class D city with distinctive features. When these kids grow up in the future, we can further expand it if there's any demand!"

Stroking his jaw, Zhang Tie was thinking about those women and the babies in their wombs in Ice and Snow Wilderness. As he felt sorry about his mom, Linda, Beverly and Fiona, he didn't tell them about that. Zhang Tie was considering whether Zhang Chenglei, Zhang Chengting and Zhang Tingpei would feel that he didn't love them the most if they knew that their brothers who shared the same father yet different moms with them were left in Ice and Snow Wilderness which covered tens of millions of square miles.

Zhang Yang was right. However, when he considered about the

future, Zhang Tie felt that they should buy as more lands as possible. It was just a matter of money. Besides those he deposited in Golden Roc Bank, he could afford the territory which was 5-10 times that of Yanghe Prefecture with the money that he had robbed from Three-eye Association clans and stored in Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, money was not a problem for him at all.

"I agree with you on building a small city, elder brother. As it's our family's first time to build a city, given the situation facing Jinwu Business Group and Youzhou Province, the city doesn't need to be too large. Just fix it within 70 square miles based on the requirements of a Class D city. However, I don't think that we should buy the surplus land in the future!" Zhang Tie stopped for a second, "Nobody could tell what would happen in the future. After 1-2 decade, Youzhou Province might change greatly. It's hard to say whether will we have such a good chance by then. We can buy the surplus land first. In this way, we can expand the city whenever we want. As there're so many wastelands, mountains and resources in this region, which have not been exploited yet; plus it neighbors Yanghe Prefecture, why not take them as our hereditary land. If Jinwu Business Group meets any trouble and goes bankrupt in the future, the juniors could also live a wealthy life without any concern!"

The word "trouble" reminded Zhang Yang something. As his brother, Zhang Yang knew that Zhang Tie referred to some unpredictable dangers that he might encounter. After all, the holy war had just broken out for a few years, knights might go to the battlefield in the future in Taixia Country. In this family, all the movable wealth might be lost except for this land. As long as Taixia Country and Hua people were not defeated by demons, nobody could take away this real estate.

"You're right, but..."

"I joined a bet with humans in Waii Sub-continent a few years ago and made more than 200 million gold coins. I deposited the

money in Golden Roc Bank. I could have Golden Roc Bank transfer 100 million gold coins to the bank account of Jinwu Business Group. Elder brother, you can use the 100 million gold coins to buy the land!" Zhang Tie said.

Everybody in the command module was startled by Zhang Tie's words.

"How much have you made?" Zhang Tie's dad almost sprung up as he asked with an unbelievable look.

"Over two hundred million gold coins!" Zhang Tie said frankly.

Linda, Beverly, Fiona and Zhang Tie's elder sisters-in-law watched Zhang Tie with shocked looks at the same time.

No matter what, hundreds of millions of gold coins was definitely a terrifying figure. Although Zhang Tie's current annual compensation as the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province ranked top in Taixia Country, he should also work over 40 years to make 100 million gold coins. Try to imagine how difficult it was to make 100 million gold coins even in Taixia Country...

Chapter 848: Reunion of the Hit-Plane Brotherhood

Over these years, due to the holy war, the prices of commodities, especially grains had risen. In Golden Light City, a steam bun would cost 2 copper coins and 5 hao 1 . 1 kg's fine beef would cost about 1 silver coin and 20 copper coins; a 100 sq m house in Yanghe Prefecture would cost about 200 gold coins. If a common family of four could make 40-50 gold coins a year, they would live well in Golden Light City.

All of Zhang Tie's family members were once commoners. Although Zhang Tie's two elders sisters-in-law had better living conditions since they were young, they also knew the concept of "frugality". Therefore, when Zhang Tie mentioned that he had won over 200 million gold coins in a bet, he shocked everybody at present.

Although Zhang Tie's dad racked his mind, he could still not imagine how much was over 200 million gold coins. Zhang Yang remembered that Zhang Tie had mentioned that he made a pile by setting a trap in Ewentra Archipelago through remote-sensing crystals; however, he had not imagined that Zhang Tie made over 200 million gold coins.

When his family members became dumbfounded and didn't know what to say, Zhang Tie's mom pushed open the hatch door and entered the command module cheerily, followed by two female servants, who were pushing a dining trolley. The command module was filled with fragrance at once.

"Come on, I've just cooked the eight-treasures porridge 2 , it could nourish your body in winter!" Zhang Tie's mom said with a big smile.

Zhang Tie's mom treated cooking dinner for her family members as an enjoyment which could not be deprived by anyone else.

This airship was a private, luxurious one which was modified by a fury-level airship. It was also matched with a kitchen and a dining hall. Therefore, during these days, as long as the whole family went out by airship, Zhang Tie's mom would be the boss in the kitchen.

Seeing the porridge, they all put aside the previous topic and went to eat it. If anyone dared to violate Zhang Tie's mom's intention, it was nothing different than doing a crime. Even though Zhang family's kids had learned to flatter their grandma. However, when their grandma had the food prepared, they would instantly swarm up and cram the food into their mouth. The one who ate more would gain more favor from grandma.

"What were you talking about?"

Zhang Tie's mother asked them as he watched her grandsons eating eight-treasures porridge with a smile.

After exchanging a glance with each other, Zhang Yang told their mom what Zhang Tie said just now.

"Duang..." Zhang Tie's mother dropped her spoon when she heard "over 200 million gold coins".

"Grandma, grandma, you dropped your spoon. I will change one for you!" Zhang Shiyu wisely picked up that spoon; closely after that, she ran towards the dining trolley and brought back a new one.

"Guoguo, have you done anything bad in Waii Sub-continent?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's mother's words, Zhang Tie was almost choked by the porridge...

"Mom, you're thinking too much. How could I be that bad? Although I've won it through gambling, each gold coin is legal. Golden Roc Bank even has a record of that. The other elders of Huaiyuan Palace also know about that." Zhang Tie explained to his mom after patting his chest.

"No way, how could you make so much?" Zhang Tie's mom continued out of concern.

"Your son is a knight. Mom, you don't know everything in the world of knights. Some knights could make over 100 million gold coins only by writing an article. It's nothing strange for your son to make some money by betting with others!"

"Some knights could make over 100 million gold coins by writing an article? Are you kidding me?" Zhang Tie's dad asked as he thought Zhang Tie was bragging.

When he recalled that article "The Comparative Analysis on the Battle Strength of Knights between Seven Major Sects in Taixia Country" in the Mountain of Brightness, Zhang Tie let out a sigh, "I'm telling the truth. It takes one knight 10,000 gold coins to read the article for one time. If over 10,000 knights read it, won't the writer win 100 million gold coins? One word for 1,000 gold coins is not excessive at all!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Zhang Tie's parents finally realized that Zhang Tie was not bragging.

However, after knowing that Zhang Tie was going to buy over 100,000 square miles of land in Youzhou Province, the whole family was greatly shocked. Actually, they were more excited than being shocked. Even Linda, Beverly and Fiona blushed due to the excitement.

Zhang family's feeling was like how a common family felt when they bought a super mansion which covered tens of thousands of square meters without having to pay by installment.

"Why do we buy such a mountainous area? Why not choose the plain area instead?" Zhang Tie's mom asked.

Zhang Yang replied, "Mom, I've had people surveyed this region. Besides being mountainous, this region doesn't lack water resource. Additionally, this region is abundant in fruits and

medicines. Right in the land and mountain forest below us, there are over 70 fruits and over 1,000 medicines. I've negotiated with Zhang Tie. If we build a city here, Jinwu Business Group could pick raw materials from here so as to expand the production scale of all-purpose medicament rapidly. We will not have to worry about the supply of raw materials anymore."

"I mean, we can choose the mountainous area as the production base of Jinwu Business Group. We don't need to build the entire city on the plain. As a Class D city that covers 70 square miles is not large, half of it could be built on plain while the other half of it could be built on mountains. After the city is built, we can settle down with the best urban scenery and the best environment. Isn't it good?" Zhang Tie added, "When these kids grow up, they can also build their own cities on the surrounding land!"

The beautiful blueprint that Zhang Tie depicted for his family made all the women's eyes turn bright.

"How could you find such proper places so easily?" Zhang Tie's mom discouraged Zhang Tie although she was happy inside.

"Wow, deer are taking bath; deer are taking bath, and monkeys, monkeys are taking bath too..." Those kids had returned to the imaging device after swallowing up their eight-treasures porridge when the adults were chatting over there. Closely after Zhang Chengting, all the other kids exclaimed.

"It's winter, how could deer and monkeys take bath?" Zhang Yang smiled.

"Dad, it's real. You can take a look over here." Zhang Chengze told Zhang Yang.

The whole family then swarmed up and looked down by the imaging device...

It was a towering mountain peak below the airship, which was extremely magnificent. There was a deep and serene valley below

the mountain peak. The mountain peak had been covered with snow. However, the valley was still surrounded with red blossoms and green willows, which looked pretty exotic. How amazing it was!

There was mist rolling in the valley, below which was a large area of warm spring. A lot of monkeys were immersing themselves in the warm spring cheerily; some of them were even holding wild berries. They just lay there like rich men on vacation. The herd of over 20 deer also entered the warm spring one after another and started to take a bath.

This mountain range and valley stretched over 7 miles and covered about 30 square miles. It was pretty nice and magnificent. Being abundant in water and grasses, they were surrounded by plain. Looking down at it from the airship, they found that it looked like a shoe-shaped gold ingot, the very kind of gold ingot that Zhang Tie's eldest grandma delivered to Zhang juniors at her birthday.

"Where are we?" Zhang Yang asked.

The captain hurriedly took out a map and pointed at a pale grey region which had not been precisely surveyed and drawn before replying, "Our airship is here. This region has not been developed yet. Few people come here during normal times. Therefore, it's not drawn precisely on the map!"

The captain was pointing at a place over 350 miles away from Golden Light City. Even the nearest railway and highway were over 300 miles away. Therefore, very few people would visit here. Even if there was, they would barely come here by airship.

"It's the God's will!" Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh as he drew a circle around the pale grey region which covered over 150,000 square miles on the map before pointing at that region with his pen forcefully and saying, "I like this region!"

...

After a few hours, the family finally returned to their mansion in Golden Light City by airship before dusk. The airship just landed in the airship port in the backyard of the Zhang's mansion.

"I will have someone register it in the urban area of Youzhou Province tomorrow!"

"Hmm, good. I will have Golden Roc Bank..." Zhang Tie suddenly stopped as he saw some familiar guys on the path in front of him. Those guys also noticed him with tears in eyes.

Beside them was Runo whom Zhang Tie had dispatched to Youzhou Province.

Before Zhang Tie figured out how could Runo bring them back so quickly, those guys had rushed towards him while waving their arms.

"Bighead..."

The horny fat shouted...

After hearing such a strange yet familiar nickname, Zhang Tie felt as if two decades had passed...

Chapter 849: Current Situation Facing Hit-Plane Brotherhood

Only after more than 2 months, before Runo and his subordinates left the territory of Northeast Military Region, they had met Barley and the other members of Hit-Plane Brotherhood in Huizhou City, the capital city of Huizhou Province.

Huizhou City was the largest air hub in Northeast Military Region of Taixia Country. It took Runo and his subordinates over 1 month to arrive at Huizhou City by airship. When they were about to move to Guizhou Province, they met the group of Barley in the departure lounge of the airship base coincidentally.

According to Runo, the group of Barley was talking loudly about Huaiyuan Palace of Youzhou Province in the departure lounge. One of them even spoke of Jinwu Business Group and Zhang Yang. Out of curiosity, Runo inquired about their background and found that they were the very people whom he was looking for.

According to Zhang Tie's estimation, it would take Runo's team at least 3 months to come back with the group of Barley from Guizhou Province as it was a journey of 250,000 miles in total. He could not imagine that they would come back only in 2 months.

According to Barley, when they were in Guizhou Province, they heard about all-purpose medicament; through inquiry, they learned that Jinwu Business Group had been well-known across Youzhou Province; additionally, Huaiyuan Palace had already rooted in Yanghe Prefecture of Youzhou Province. Through negotiation, Barley, Doug, Sharwin, Hista, Leit and Bagad then determined to find Zhang Tie in Youzhou Province; at least they wanted to know Zhang Tie's whereabouts.

Since Zhang Tie sent them away from Blackhot City and disappeared from then on, he had always been the topic of the Hit-Plane Brotherhood. When they came to Taixia Country at the

beginning, they had contacted Zhang Yang; however, after a period, they failed to contact Zhang Yang anymore due to various reasons. Of course, they lost the information about Zhang Tie.

Actually, before they met Runo, they were not even sure whether Zhang Tie was still alive. After hearing that Zhang Yang and Jinwu Business Group had rooted in Youzhou Province, they hurriedly came to Youzhou Province to ask about Zhang Tie's whereabouts from Zhang Tie's family members.

No matter how long had passed, what happened during the period when they called each other brothers had long become the deepest brand in their lives and would never fade away.

Without Zhang Tie, they even couldn't imagine the current lives facing them and their family members. They might have long been stranded in other continents or become one of those corpses in Waii Sub-continent.

In a sense, Zhang Tie was not only their brother but also their savior. Even their parents usually asked Zhang Tie's whereabouts, not to mention them.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Sharwin, who used to be sentimental, turned his eyes red at first, closely followed by all the others of Hit-Plane Brotherhood including Zhang Tie. They called each other's name and tightly embraced each other and patted the other's shoulder forcefully without saying anything else.

...

Besides Zhang Tie, the other members of Hit-Plane Brotherhood had changed a lot physically. They were not that innocent juniors anymore; instead, they all grew tall and strong. After a couple of years, they would be 30 years old.

Bagad looked stronger than before; besides, he had dense whiskers...

Barley the Fatty's stomach was like that of a pregnant woman

with twins...

Sharwin had grown taller. Previously, Sharwin was average in height in the Hit-Plane Brotherhood; however, now he was even 2 cm taller than Bagdad.

Doug was bald with a grim knife-cut scar on his left face. He really looked like an experienced hatchet man when he closed his mouth.

Leit had turned more adultly. In a pair of wire-rimmed glasses, he looked more like a scholar.

Hista looked still like a major d*ck. His face turned a bit pale. He was wearing a play-boy shirt and a pair of eye-catching white western style pants. What was more attractive was that 2 cm wide gold necklace.

In the study, Zhang Tie and the other members of Hit-Plane Brotherhood glanced at each other for quite a while. Finally, Barley let out a sigh as he rubbed his fat face, "Doesn't Hua people get old? How could you be so excessive? Why can I not see any trace of time elapse on your face? You look no different than that time when you left Blackhot City."

Sharwin and the other guys nodded forcefully at the same time.

Those who were always on Zhang Tie's side couldn't find that Zhang Tie was a weirdo. Only those who were very familiar with him and had not seen him for many years could sense Zhang Tie's terror—Zhang Tie's look almost remained unchanged since the last time they saw him.

"I have no idea. Maybe it's the sequela of thunder strike!" Zhang Tie could only fabricate it as he didn't know how to explain it to them at all.

"You know what, the moment I imagined that you could sleep with young girls at your 50s, I preferred to be stricken by the thunder on behalf of you!" Hista let out a sigh.

"What happened in Blackhot City? Why didn't you come back after leaving the airship?" Doug asked anxiously after Hista's words.

They had been puzzled by this question for so many years. On the way here, besides telling them that Zhang Tie was still alive and had just come to Taixia Country, Zhang Yang exposed almost nothing else about Zhang Tie to them. Therefore, they didn't know anything about Zhang Tie's current situation until now.

"I left the airship to kill Abyan the b*stard! Later on, due to some accidents, I was almost killed by Abyan. It's hard to describe the process. It took me a few years to get rid of that event completely and gain freedom. After the holy war broke out, I returned to Huaiyuan Prefecture and was told that you've already arrived at Taixia Country; therefore, I became reassured. I then stayed in Waii Sub-continent to resist demons for Huaiyuan Palace for a few years!" Zhang Tie explained it to them as he came to the gradevin of the study and got a bottle of liquor. After that, he came back and made a glass of liquor for each of them.

"Have you...promoted LV 10? So fast?" Bagdad had been gazing at Zhang Tie since he caught sight of the latter. As Bagdad failed to figure out Zhang Tie's qi, he just made a "brave" guess.

In Bagdad's opinion, based on Zhang Tie's cultivation speed, he should have a probability to promote to LV 10 during the past few years.

No wonder Bagdad would mistake it because even very few people in Huaiyuan Palace could break through LV 9 at the 20s. Additionally, Bagdad could never imagine what Zhang Tie had experienced in the past years.

Compared to Zhang Tie the weirdo, although Bagdad had been very diligent over these years, he had just promoted to LV 6 and lit 10 surging points on his spine. He was still 3 surging points away from LV 7 fighter.

After throwing a glance at Bagdad, Zhang Tie had kept all the information about Bagdad in his mind. Given the fine grains between the thumb and the index finger of Bagdad, Zhang Tie knew that Bagdad was practicing an extremely common saber skill "10-step constant saber". Bagdad had just become familiar with this saber skill. Additionally, as Bagdad practiced "Iron-blood Fist" at the beginning, even though he failed to make it, he had indeed spent some time in the basic movements of Iron-blood Fist, especially the Lying-tiger Movement, which could increase his strength and anti-strike ability. With Lying-tiger Movement as his foundation, given the features on Bagdad's back and neck and the faint, special smell of medicine over his body, Zhang Tie knew that Bagdad was practicing another anti-strike kungfu of Hua people—"Iron-back Skill".

With the strong knight's consciousness, Bagdad's information was almost transparent to Zhang Tie.

Bagdad was persistent and diligent, who was the typical representative of most of "excellent youths" at his age. Through his persistent efforts, he would soon promote to LV 7 as the strongest one among the other members of Hit-Plane Brotherhood but Zhang Tie.

"I indeed have broken through LV 9!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile. As he didn't want to scare them too much, he just shifted the topic, "How do you live in Guizhou Province?"

After hearing that Zhang Tie admitted that he had broken through LV 9, the others threw a glance at Zhang Tie as they thought that Zhang Tie had promoted to LV 10.

Speaking of Guizhou Province, all the other members of Hit-Plane Brotherhood looked bright at once, including Barley.

"We live pretty well in Guizhou Province. It took us a few years to adapt to the environment in Guizhou Province. God's Will Brotherhood opened 3 chain deluxe hotels and 5 dining halls. We

have a good business here! We've already made over 600,000 gold coins using the 200,000 gold coins that you gave us at the beginning. You have 50% of the total shares of the 3 grand hotels and 5 dining halls!" Doug explained out of excitement as he patted onto Zhang Tie's shoulder forcefully and invited Zhang Tie passionately, "Bighead, if you're no longer able to carry on in Youzhou Province, work with us in Guizhou Province! As long as we stay with each other, we will have a bright future in Guizhou Province for sure."

...

Chapter 850: Laying a Foundation in Youzhou Province

In this world, only very few people could be legendarily featured by radical life. Most of the people lived very common lives. Each individual's fate trace had a strong inertia. After many years, this inertia was manifested in Zhang Tie's friends once again.

The members of God's Will Brotherhood neither lost their "ambition" that they used to carry in Blackhot city and succumbed to the common life nor be unrivaled in the region. Like many other commoners, they were still trying their best to climb up on the way that they could see.

'With my support, it took a group of foreign young people a few years to root in a strange place. Through concerted efforts, they even accumulated 600,000 gold coins using the 200,000 gold coins that I gave them at the beginning. It's already a great job for them. In this age, most of the young men could not make such a great achievement.' Zhang Tie praised them inside. However, compared to what Zhang Tie had experienced, such an achievement was nothing great at all.

Zhang Tie started to rethink profoundly.

The sharp contrast between Doug's passion and Zhang Tie's calm feeling inside reminded Zhang Tie, 'Barley, Doug and the other members of God's Will Brotherhood remain unchanged; the one who has changed is me. Therefore, I could not maintain the same passion as them facing the undertaking that drives them crazy.'

Over the past years, after experiencing so many things such as exterminating all the demons in Waii Sub-continent and establishing the Sacred Iceland Kingdom, what the God's Will Brotherhood was doing was not on the same level as Zhang Tie at all. The business of hundreds of thousands of gold coins could almost be ignored by Zhang Tie.

'Perhaps, the strong inertia could also be called fate. What if I did not have Castle of Black Iron?' Zhang Tie asked himself while sighing with emotion.

Such a sharp difference between him and his friends didn't cause any sh*t superiority complex to Zhang Tie; instead, he treasured this friendship more than ever.

Barley, Doug, Hista and the other members of God's Will Brotherhood watched Zhang Tie with scorching eyes and waited for his answer.

After being silent for a few seconds, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh and watched them with a sincere look, "I'm afraid that I cannot leave Youzhou Province for the time being. I've experienced too much these years and shoulder greater responsibilities than before. I cannot live as free as before anymore!"

"I get it. Is it because of your family? I've not expected that you already have 3 sons. You're the best one among us!" Bagdad praised in an unconstrained way.

"Not only that!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

"Are you still following the order of Huaiyuan Palace?" Sharwin asked.

"Not completely. But I cannot separate from Huaiyuan Palace so easily!"

"What's the reason then?" Leit opened his mouth.

"Promise me, you will not be surprised by that!" Zhang Tie watched them with a solemn look.

"No problem, go ahead!" The other guys also replied with a rare, solemn look.

"I already promoted to a knight when I was in Waii Sub-continent. My current title is the dean of the supreme court in Youzhou Province. After staying in Taixia Country for so long, you

must have known the responsibilities of the dean of the supreme court." Zhang Tie said with an extremely serious look.

After exchanging a glance with each other, the atmosphere in the room turned strange at once.

After being silent for a few seconds, "Hahahahaha..." those guys suddenly burst out into laughter as they staggered forward and back.

Doug even shot out his saliva. As they laughed, they patted their bellies and thighs forcefully.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that these guys would respond in such a way when he exposed the truth.

'F*ck, doesn't this father look like a knight? I've practiced a lot to promote to a knight. What are you guys laughing at?' Zhang Tie swore inside with a confused look.

"Bighead, you're really humorous!" Hista burst out into laughter as he forcefully patted Zhang Tie's shoulder and said with a wink, "If you were a knight, you must have been a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace. In Waii Sub-continent, a knight could be the head of a corps. Actually, there's not a single knight in the former Andaman Alliance at all!" After saying that, Hista revealed an obscene look as he lowered his voice, "Actually, I had also used this trick before to cheat women to sleep with me. Later on, I found this trick didn't work anymore as none of them believed that. One time, I finally encountered one. However, when I woke up the second morning, I found my purse and that woman had long gone. From then on, I stopped playing such a trick!"

"I'm indeed a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace. I also took the office of corps leader of Hurricane Corps over those years when I was in Huaiyuan Prefecture in Waii Sub-continent!" Zhang Tie explained with a helpless look.

"Hahahahaha..." The other guys smiled more excessively.

"This is our familiar "bighead". You're as humorous as the very, very special one before..." Barley laughed so heavily that his belly started to quiver like ripples.

"Hmm, it's good for you to have such an idea. At least you have a target!" Sharwin said implicitly.

"Just like how we used to dream that we were childes and young masters of the 4 major clans in Blackhot City and had the endless braised beef with potatoes!" Doug nodded with a serious look.

"Knight is also my lifetime target!" Bagdad chested out as he said this.

"If you were a knight, our brotherhood would have a reliance in Taixia Country. Our business would be..." Leit suddenly stopped as he and the other guys suddenly felt that Zhang Tie had changed greatly while releasing an extremely strange qi, which almost froze each cell of them in a split second.

All of them had sensed that their awareness had been separated from their body by that overwhelming force. They felt that their awareness and body might be imprisoned in a firm and hopeless cage. If Zhang Tie liked, he could blow up their heads only by throwing a glance at them. In this state, they would definitely be suffocated in the end.

In only a few seconds, after Zhang Tie concealed his overwhelming qi, the laughter in the room had stopped while the other guys had been wet all over even in the winter as they felt their clothes were sticking to their body tightly.

They looked like as if they had seen a ghost in the daytime with their mouths widely opened, which could almost hold an egg.

"Rea...real...kni...kni..kni...knight!" Dough became stammered, "I'm still alive after pa...pat...patting a knight's shoulder?"

"Our God's Will Brotherhood ha...have a kni..kni..knight!" Barley the Fatty was affected by Dough as he stared at Zhang Tie, causing

goosebumps all over Zhang Tie's body.

"Huaiyuan Palace have just won the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. The current provincial governor of Youzhou Province is Zhang Taixuan, the head of Zhang Clan. I was appointed as the dean of the provincial court in Youzhou Province. As you've been in Taixia Country for so long, you must have known the responsibilities of the dean of provincial court!" Zhang Tie watched them silently, "As it's a chaotic world, Taixia Country might be the last pure land of humans. I know you live pretty well given your looks. I know each of you has a bright future. I'm happy to see you living well which is also what I expected for when I founded the God's Will Brotherhood. I don't want to disrupt your living pattern; neither do I want to force you to make any choice or decision. If you like, you can come to Youzhou Province to give me a hand. However, although the knight's world is full of chances, it's also very dangerous. I cannot guarantee you anything. With this decision, you might be involved in a greater crisis in the future; even at the cost of your lives. Therefore, you should think about it carefully. If you agree to come here, I will welcome you. If you want to maintain your current living pattern, I will also be happy about you!"

"What...what can we do...here in Youzhou Province?" Barley asked in a hesitated and unconfident way after exchanging a glance with the others.

They all knew that they were nothing in front of a knight and the dean of the provincial court in Youzhou Province. If they had ruled a city, they might win the favor of the dean of the provincial court in Youzhou Province; however, their current achievement was totally like how kids playing sands in front of Zhang Tie.

"What are you adept at?" Zhang Tie asked.

"When we came to Youzhou Province, we had analyzed our strengths carefully. As we had just graduated from middle school, we didn't have skills, battle strength or human relationship. What

we could rely on was the capital that you had gifted us, our intelligence and diligence; therefore, we finally chose the service industry. We invested an inn and a mini bar at first. After accumulating enough experiences in this industry, we opened hotels, which is also what we are adept at!" Barley replied.

"If so, why not open hotels in Youzhou Province?" Zhang Tie smiled, "But you should not only open 3 hotels here; instead, you should open at least 300 hotels across Youzhou Province..."

Zhang Tie said while the other guys' eyes gradually turned bright...

"You've already been a dean of the provincial court in Youzhou Province, what do you open so many hotels for?" Doug asked like an idiot.

"Now that it's an investment, of course, our first goal is to make a lot of money. Even I want to make money; it's legitimate as money is a symbol of strength and power. The simplest method to accumulate strength and power is to make and save money!" Zhang Tie smiled, "In the future, our hotels could even spread across Taixia Country. We could contact people from all walks of life. Each hotel works as eyes and ears, which could help us ask about and collect information in the most convenient way. In most cases, a key message is even more important than a corps. Additionally, the hotel is a comprehensive service industry, which would be involved with clothes, food, accommodation and transportation; furthermore, it's a labor-intensive industry. The more hotels we open, the more places will we occupy, the more stakeholders will we have and the more people will rely on us, the greater influence will we have. We shall lay a solid foundation here by making our undertaking better, greater and stronger. Now that we've decided to scrape a living in Taixia Country, we have to root deeply in this place."

Zhang Tie had learned from Golden Roc Bank how to exert one's utmost efforts to do a good job or develop an industry. Over these

days, Zhang Tie had been considering how to root in Taixia Country. Besides building a city and expanding Jinwu Business Group, Zhang Tie felt that he could do something else. Besides hotel industry, Zhang Tie had also considered about mining ores, architecture and machinery manufacturing. Of course, Zhang Tie longed most for having a private bank like Golden Roc Bank. Whereas, given the strict requirements for opening a private bank in Taixia Country and the limited resources of him and Zhang Clan in Taixia Country, Zhang Tie gave it up for the time being.

In Taixia Country, a provincial bank would require at least 10 billion gold coins as an initial capital, this condition had disappointed most of the major clans.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that those guys of God's Will Brotherhood could arrive here suddenly and run their hotel industry well in Guizhou Province from a scratch. Zhang Tie then poured out his original thought.

Now that Zhang Tie had poured it out, he had almost made a determination. Even if they didn't agree, Zhang Tie would also have someone else do it. Even if dozens of hotels suffered a loss, Zhang Tie could still stand that. Therefore, Zhang Tie was confident to tell them that he wanted to open over 300 hotels across Youzhou Province, which number was too small for Youzhou Province, even being a lower province.

Chapter 851: Ceaseless Troubles

The group of Barley left after staying in Golden Light City for 4 days, during which period, they learned about Zhang Tie's recent developments; especially the message that Zhang Tie was going to buy a land and build a city in Youzhou Province. Through a short negotiation, they had determined to settle down in Youzhou Province and restarted their new life here.

Even though, they needed to handle a lot of problems.

The first problem was in the God's Will Brotherhood.

There were 28 members of God's Will Brotherhood totally, among whom only the 6-7 guys headed by Barley knew Zhang Tie's recent developments. All the others still knew nothing about Zhang Tie's current situation. As the achievement that they had made in Guizhou Province also benefited from all the other members of God's Will Brotherhood, they needed to notice the other members of God's Will Brotherhood about their choice so that the others could make their decisions.

As of now, besides the group of Barley which was still single, many members of God's Will Brotherhood had gotten married and established families in Guizhou Province. Therefore, it was actually uneasy to convince others to develop in Youzhou Province together with the group of Barley.

However, Zhang Tie didn't mean to move all of them to Youzhou Province, because he didn't want to destroy their recent lives by having them move to a strange place and restart a new life. He was not entitled to make such a selfish decision.

Zhang Tie asked Barley to only tell them that he had already returned to Taixia Country and was going to do something; instead of telling them about his recent developments. Those who wanted to come could come here to develop their new undertakings; those who didn't, just stay there to maintain their current lives.

After hearing Zhang Tie's suggestion, Barley and the other guys nodded. It would be much easier to handle it in this way. However, they all knew that the members of God's Will Brotherhood would divide into different ways after they made such a decision. The God's Will Brotherhood that they founded in Blackhot City would also come to an end soon after they made their choices.

Perhaps, nobody would declare about the dissolution of the God's Will Brotherhood; actually, after they made such a decision, they would divide into different ways completely. What linked them would be the friendship between them instead of interests and honors. As a result, God's Will Brotherhood would become a countrymen organization and club.

Anytime, only the binded interest was the firmest foundation.

He could not force all of them to follow his leadership because each person had his own lifestyle. Some liked to conquer the world; some felt that the greatest pleasure lay in mountainscapes and rivers. If the two kinds of people were bound with each other, besides being embarrassed, there would be a series of side effects. The final outcome might be that they could not even be friends.

Zhang Tie didn't dream about conquering the world. It was normal for him to have such a dream in other sub-continent; however, if he still thought about this in Taixia Country, he must have been insane. Nevertheless, given his current social status, what he should consider and face was still different than that of commoners. This also caused the greatest difference between him and the other members of God's Will Brotherhood.

"The original intention of God's Will Brotherhood was to survive our friends in Blackhot City in the holy war. It seems that we've already reached this target now. All the members who joined the God's Will Brotherhood are living pretty well. It indicates that our decision to establish the God's Will Brotherhood is right. Our brotherhood also played its role. I'm very happy about this point. From then on, I hope our friendship remains unchanged and God's

Will Brotherhood to be preserved. Those who come to Youzhou Province will have a wholly new start. I feel that Jinwu Hotel Group would be a nice name. I hope Jinwu Hotel Group would be the largest hotel group in Youzhou Province in one decade."

The bright future that Zhang Tie described just now made Barley and the other guys spirited; therefore, after confirming some details with Zhang Tie, they had hurriedly returned to Guizhou Province by the fury-level airship dispatched by Zhang Tie. After ending their business in Guizhou Province, they would soon return to Youzhou Province by that airship. By then, they would show their talents in Youzhou Province.

During the 4 days, Zhang Tie also got the news about those girls in Rose Association who had come to Taixia Country. Most of them had married others and delivered babies. Some moved to other places in Guizhou Province with their parents and had lost their contact with the God's Will Brotherhood.

Guizhou Province was larger and more prosperous than Waii Sub-continent. The total population in Guizhou Province was over 10 billion. A lot of foreigners were living there. With the financial management income of 580 gold coins from Golden Roc Bank annually, plus their nice looks, they could live like rich ladies even with their family members. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not worried about them.

This message also drew a full stop for the crazy deed between Zhang Tie and those girls of Rose Association in Blackhot City.

...

On December 1st, Zhang Tie stood in the open land in the backyard in the heavy snow and saw Barley and the other guys of God's Will Brotherhood slowly rising up and flying towards the south.

On the deck, Barley and the other guys were waving their hands towards Zhang Tie with full ambitions. Even Beverly, Fiona and

Linda had come out to bid a farewell towards them together with Zhang Tie.

Seeing off the airship, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh.

"Alas, I've not imagined that those beautiful girls of Rose Association have married others. Hubby, are you missing them? If those girls were here, we would have a lot of games to play!" Fiona looked around and watched Zhang Tie while pouting her petite mouth faintly.

"You know that." Zhang Tie watched Linda and Beverly with a sense of guilt.

"I've long known Barley and the other guys, do you think that I don't know what you enquired from them?" Beverly watched Zhang Tie with a faint smile.

"Ahem...ahem..." Zhang Tie coughed in an embarrassed look, "Erm, I just care about them, don't think too much!"

Fiona suddenly let out a sigh, "Actually, we know that you're a nostalgic person. Hubby, if you want to find those sisters of Rose Association or pick them to your side, as long as they like, Beverly and I will not oppose it, if some more people could serve you, we don't need to be that painstaking anymore!"

'Say yes and mean no; definitely say yes and mean no.' The moment he heard Fiona's tone, Zhang Tie had known what this ladykin was thinking about. Women were all jealous; especially those women who had married and delivered babies would have a strong territorial consciousness in the family; perhaps, Fiona and Beverly didn't feel anything special when Zhang Tie killed time with those girls in Rose Association previously; they would even join them; however, if any more women dared break in his life circle at this moment, Zhang Tie was sure that his harem would get a big fire.

"Don't worry. It's enough for me to have 3 of you!" Zhang Tie

patted Fiona's raised butt under her fox-fur robe and said seriously.

"Really? I don't think so!" Beverly watched Zhang Tie with her flickering eyes, "I remember that Sonia stayed in your study a bit longer than before a few days ago!"

"Alas!" Zhang Tie suddenly shouted as he heavily patted his head and said, "I forgot I promised Chenglei to teach the little guys rollerskating!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie had escaped away.

Fiona, Beverly and Linda became silent for a few seconds as they had not imagined that Zhang Tie could be so shameless. After exchanging a glance with each other, they burst out into laughter at the same time.

...

After the group of Barley left Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie recovered his "home-staying" mode.

Even in such a "home-staying" mode, besides accompanying his family members and negotiating with his elder brother about purchasing a land to build a city, Zhang Tie also kept an eye on the holy war, the situation facing Taixia Country and various messages. Additionally, he kept cultivating every day.

As the old Hua saying went, be prepared for danger even in times of peace. Even though Youzhou Province in Taixia Country could not sense the battle flames of the holy war, Zhang Tie, who had witnessed the cruelty of the holy war, dared never forget about the greatest threat from demons. Zhang Tie knew that there was no Shangrila across the human territory facing the holy war; even in Taixia Country, there were also a lot of surging hidden forces...

The notice "Long-term Garrison Knights Wanted in the Lion Fortress of Earth-element Realm" was still hanging on the top of the notice board in the Mountain of Brightness. Being different

from that a few years ago, the treatment for garrison knights in the Lion Fortress grew from 2 earth-element crystals per month to 6...

This was not a good signal as it revealed that the situation facing Lion Fortress in the Earth-element Realm was growing more and more dangerous.

Demon disasters started to break out in Golden Roc Sub-continent. The National Defense Department of Taixia Country had dispatched knights over there to crack down the demons...

Plague broke out in the dozens of cities of Chaosang Sub-continent at the same time. The Northeast Military Region Headquarter had issued the order to the navies in each province within its territory to prevent ships from stealing into Taixia Country from Chaosang Sub-continent and strictly control population and commodities smuggling...

These were the major events that happened in the border of Taixia Country during the past a couple of months. As to the inland of Taixia Country, the heresy Heavens Reaching Church aroused a riot in Ganzhou Province in Taixia Country at the bottom of November, which was pacified in Mid-December. However, the court temples in Youzhou Province also received the documents about catching the dregs of the Heavens Reaching Church from the Supreme Court in Taixia Country...

In Mid-December, a LV 13 important criminal on the 8369th place of the wanted list in the Supreme Court of Taixia Country sneaked in Youzhou Province and fought ferociously with 4 bounty hunters in the wild of Threespring Prefecture. Finally, the important criminal was killed at the cost of the lives of 2 bounty hunters.

In such ceaseless troubles, they welcomed the first spring festival of the 900th year of Black Iron Calendar...

Chapter 852: On the Way

After leaving Youzhou City 2 months ago, Zhang Tie returned to Youzhou City by airship once again on December 30th, the 899th year of Black Iron Calendar.

Zhang Tie was a bit depressed on the journey as he had to stay in the airship for a whole day. By contrast, if he could fly there himself, it would only take him 4-5 hours from Yanghe Prefecture to Youzhou City. For the sake of convenience, he could directly fly over there; however, as a black iron knight, it would be too shocking if he just flew there himself. As he had already been very famous in Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie didn't want to be any hotter anymore; therefore, he just chose to go there by airship.

Thankfully, he could spend almost 20 hours to absorb about 10 earth-element crystals in the flight.

Over these days, although Zhang Tie looked free, he didn't slow down his cultivation speed. Even at home, he would also spend at least 10 hours a day in cultivation. He constantly formed his earth chakra at the speed of using up 1 earth-element crystal per 2 hours.

Zhang Tie absorbed earth-element crystals at a very shocking speed. He would consume at least 5 earth-element crystals a day. Therefore, he had consumed over 300 earth-element crystals over the past 2 months.

...

In the berth cabin of the airship, after absorbing one earth-element crystal in his hand, Zhang Tie felt that a complex geometric pattern composed of triangles and rounds on the rim of a part of the earth chakra of the King Roc Sutra finally turned bright. It was like assembling a huge machine. After it was assembled, Zhang Tie felt that one dragon scale on his knight's crystal plate turned golden at once. Zhang Tie knew that he had already lit 11 dragon scales.

It was the 8th earth-element crystal that Zhang Tie had used up since he boarded the airship. It indicated that Zhang Tie had already cultivated in his berth cabin for 16 hours silently. Such a period was not long for a person who had stayed in the tower of time for 15 years. However, he needed to relax too. After lighting the 11 dragon scale, he had improved his battle strength a bit more. Therefore, Zhang Tie stopped today's cultivation.

After opening his eyes, Zhang Tie threw the useless earth-element crystal into Castle of Black Iron. After that, he picked himself up; warmed up his limbs and sensed his physical and spiritual changes before opening the hatch door and walking out of his berth cabin.

"Elder Mushen!" Two bodyguards on the airship hurriedly gave a salute to him when they saw Zhang Tie coming out of his berth cabin.

According to the schedule, this airship should arrive at Youzhou City at about 9 am. It was about 5 am when the day had just broken. It was still far away from the estimated arrival time. Given the distance, this airship should still be about 500 miles away from Youzhou City.

"Tell the captain, I will arrive there ahead of you. You can just arrive at Youzhou City on time!" After leaving a message to the two guards, Zhang Tie came to the open deck. After breathing the chill air, he directly flew off the deck towards Youzhou City.

Even if someone saw him flying towards Youzhou City from here, it would not arouse any doubts.

After flying in the air once again, Zhang Tie felt as free and pleasant as fish in the sea and bird in the sky.

With the protection of his protective battle qi, Zhang Tie could almost not sense the chill wind in the high altitude.

In heavy wind and snow, Zhang Tie gradually elevated and

deepened into the thick, grey clouds in the troposphere.

Snowflakes were coming into being in the thick, grey clouds. With the strong knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie was meticulously tasting how the virtual vapor gradually became glittering snowflakes. 'What a nice process!'

In each second, hundreds of millions of beautiful snowflakes would fall off the thick, grey cloud with the chilly wind...

Penetrating through the thick, grey cloud where snowflakes were gradually coming into being, Zhang Tie felt like flying in a brilliant park. He could see and sense numerous glittering nice snowflakes silently blossoming in the air in each split second. Watching those "water spirits" blossoming, floating in the air and landing on the land, Zhang Tie felt vacant inside...

In Zhang Tie's consciousness of knight, such a scene was super splendid.

Who else could enjoy such a realm of super greatness in the universe except for knights?

It required sun's temperature, namely the strength of fire, to evaporate water from the surface of the ground. Due to evaporation and desublimation, water manifested its different forms in different spatial locations. After that, snowflakes would return to the land by wind. The whole life of a small piece of snowflakes was affected by the four elements such as earth, water, wind and fire in the universe.

In the vacant state, Zhang Tie had a new insight from these snowflakes, which reminded him of the forming and disappearing bubbles in water.

On the vast white land, the undulating mountain ranges were like silver snakes while the plains were like running white elephants. In such a vacant state, Zhang Tie gradually saw the contour of Youzhou City when he was already 70 miles away from

Youzhou City.

At the sight of Youzhou City, Zhang Tie almost forgot something.

In the thick, grey cloud, Zhang Tie directly called 6 thunder hawks out of Castle of Black Iron.

The two bigger thunder hawks had been very familiar with the outside world; however, the other 4 smaller ones were very curious and excited about this new world; especially the snowy day. They kept chirping while flying around Zhang Tie.

At the request of their "father", the 4 younger thunder hawks had to accept the baptism of a lightning bolt in their lives like why a flying moth would dart into the fire. It originated from their instinctive impulse.

If thunder hawks could survive the baptism of a lightning bolt, they might accomplish an evolution in their lives. If they failed, they might be heavily wounded or lose their lives. The first thunder hawk that Zhang Tie raised was caught by someone in the Selnes Theater of Operations after being struck by the lightning bolt. The 4 younger thunder hawks' mother was also wounded when she accepted the baptism of a lightning bolt. However, she was lucky as she was not captured by people.

Standing still in the air, Zhang Tie watched these thunder hawks who came to Taixia Country with him from Waii Sub-continent with a tender look.

These thunder hawks were not only his pets but also his partners and comrades-in-arms...

"Go, go to the north, there are fewer people over there. Remember to survive back!" Zhang Tie instructed them while pointing at the sky in the north.

It was Liao Zhou Province in the north of Youzhou Province, which was a wild province with fewer people.

Thunder hawks were born to be hardly captured. These thunder

hawks were smarter and stronger due to the training of Aziz in Castle of Black Iron while those younger thunder hawks had mastered hunting skills. In Liaozhou Province, they would have a fewer chance to meet people. Even if they were struck by a lightning bolt, they didn't need to worry about being captured by people.

Those thunder hawks chirped and flew around Zhang Tie for a short while. Finally, Zhang Tie waved his hand towards them. After knowing Zhang Tie's intention, they instantly penetrated through the clouds and flew towards the north as fast as a lightning bolt facing the heavy wind and snow.

Seeing them off, Zhang Tie felt a bit sad. Because he didn't know how many among the 4 younger thunder hawks could survive back. However, it was their fates. They had to accept the challenge from their fates like how Zhang Tie was coming here to accept the challenge from his own fate. They could not avoid that; instead, they could only face that.

Until the 6 thunder hawks disappeared in his vision did Zhang Tie move his eyes to Youzhou City in the distance. He then accelerated towards Youzhou City.

Zhang Tie came here today after receiving a message from Huaiyuan Palace that the Clan head had something to negotiate with the other elders of Zhang Clan yesterday.

As Count Long Wind had been the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, no matter how influential and great Zhang Tie was in Youzhou Province, he should never think about having Zhang Taixuan invite him to Golden Light City. Nobody else across Youzhou Province had such a right. In the Northeast Military Region, only Commander Cheng was qualified to call a provincial governor of Youzhou Province.

Zhang Tie didn't know why Zhang Taixuan summoned him; however, he knew that it must be a major event.

2 days ago, all the procedures about purchasing the land had been handled. Through this journey, he could bring back those documents about land ownership, atlas and certificates about property right and title deed for land. From then on, Zhang Tie's family would enter the list of major landlords in Youzhou Province; the land area of Zhang Tie's family would reach 200,000 square miles, which was equal to 1/4 of that of Yanghe Prefecture.

The new land was also incorporated into the administrative area of Yanghe Prefecture. After the city was built, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang planned to have their dad be the major of Jinwu City...

Chapter 853: Reason

When in Huaiyuan Prefecture, Zhang Tie's dad ran a medium-sized airship corporation as his new undertaking. However, after moving to Taixia Country, his airship corporation became disadvantageous completely because its manufacturing skills were greatly lagged behind in Taixia Country. Not only that, the airships that were produced by large-scale airship production bases and factories in Spiritualmaple Prefecture and Chaoyang Prefecture were even much cheaper than that produced by Zhang Ping's corporation due to the effect of scale.

As they could not match their competitors on quality and price, of course, their products had no market in Taixia Country; therefore, Zhang Ping's airship corporation could only wind up.

Actually, across the Yanghe Prefecture, only the Huaiyuan Airship Manufacturing Plant affiliated to Huaiyuan Palace was a bit competitive in this line in Youzhou Province on both scale and skills. All the other small and medium-sized airship manufacturing enterprises could not match the local airship manufacturing enterprises in Taixia Country. Therefore, these foreign enterprises could only be merged by Huaiyuan Airship Manufacturing Plant, cooperate with each other to be the downstream suppliers of Huaiyuan Airship Manufacturing Plant or wind up.

After moving from Waii Sub-continent to Taixia, Huaiyuan Palace also suffered pains from adapting to the integrated demands from all aspects in Taixia Country. On one hand, Huaiyuan Palace's certain industries had overcapacity and labor surplus; on the other hand, Huaiyuan Palace's products lacked core-competitiveness in Taixia Country.

Not only the airship manufacturing industry, even the entire manufacturing industry that Huaiyuan Palace was involved in was experiencing such a sharp pain.

The method that Huaiyuan Palace used to relieve pain was to build a city. They intended to stimulate the great domestic demand by building a city so as to gradually advance and integrate the overall strength of the manufacturing industry in Yanghe Prefecture.

As a clan elder and the one who suggested to build a private city for his family, Zhang Tie could pay attention to these domestic affairs facing Huaiyuan Palace from a higher point.

'By buying land and building a city, I intend to meet my family's demands and give a hand to my clan at the critical moment. Given the current layout of Yanghe Prefecture, if it contained one more city, it would welcome an all-round development. Additionally, my father who has "lost his job" and is staying at home could take the office of the major of this new city, which could spice up his living. My mother could live a life as a major's wife. That would be better.'

The reason that Zhang Tie's elder uncles' families drew closer to Zhang Tie's family was that the Milkway Shipyard was facing the same question as Huaiyuan Palace's airship manufacturing industry. Milkway Shipyard had to realize promotion and resources integration so as to survive on and further develop given the internal situation facing Zhang Tie Clan and the macro environment facing the entire shipbuilding industry across Taixia Country. Milkway Shipyard and Zhang Tie's elder uncles' families didn't have such a strength. Milkway Shipyard could not have a bright future without Zhang Tie's protection and support.

A clan should have a strong economic lifeline. However, as Huaiyuan Palace had just settled down in Taixia Country, the only two competitive businesses of Huaiyuan Palace in Youzhou Province and Taixia Country were rune weapons, equipment manufacturing and the all-purpose medicament of Zhang Clan.

Rune weapons and equipment manufacturing was the trump card of Huaiyuan Palace. Rune weapons and various types of equipment were always badly needed in both Waii Sub-continent

and Taixia Country. They were always shopping-rush goods at proper market prices regardless of their quantities. The problem facing Huaiyuan Palace was that the rune weapons and equipment produced by Huaiyuan Palace could not meet the market demand.

The key manufacturing process of rune weapons was artificial; precisely, they were made by rune equipment's handicraftsmen. Rune equipment's handicraftsman was a high-end profession in this age and the most precious resources of Huaiyuan Palace. The number of rune equipment's handicraftsmen who were cultivated by and served Huaiyuan Palace grew at a limited speed. Therefore, they could not compare with the industrial streamline.

In such case, as the market of all-purpose medicament was gradually opened in Taixia Country, Zhang Tie's family would also become increasingly important in Huaiyuan Palace even though without Zhang Tie's help. Like a gold mountain which could not be used up, all-purpose medicament would grow more and more valuable in Huaiyuan Palace.

Although outsiders didn't know that the all-purpose medicament was invented by Zhang Tie and its production was completely within Zhang Tie's control, the management of Huaiyuan Palace knew it clearly. During the 2 more months when Zhang Tie stayed in Golden Light City, Elder Muen who had become the prefectural governor of Yanghe Prefecture had paid a visit to Zhang Tie two times so as to talk about the Jinwu City and the all-purpose medicament.

Huaiyuan Palace hoped Zhang Tie to expand the production of the all-purpose medicament.

Half of the 2 million-odd all-purpose medicament that was produced by Jinwu Business Group were sold out through the channels of Long Wind Business Group according to the agreement. If Zhang Tie could expand the production scale of all-purpose medicament, those business groups and commercial networks under the affiliation of Huaiyuan Palace would be the

beneficiaries.

In Waii Sub-continent, the Long Wind Business Group of Huaiyuan Palace was famous. After moving to Taixia Country, Long Wind Business Group had deteriorated to be average. If they wanted to expand the clan business and commercial network, Long Wind Business Group urgently needed a unique knockout product, which was rightly within Zhang Tie's control. As Zhang Tie directly controlled the annual production scale of all-purpose medicament, Huaiyuan Palace could only dispatch one elder to pump Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't reply to Elder Muen's request clearly, because Elder Muen could not handle too many affairs in Huaiyuan Palace. Additionally, in a clan, affairs being involved with the interest of tens of millions of gold coins must be clarified. Even two brothers would keep careful accounts in some families, not to mention Huaiyuan Palace which was such a complex, huge clan.

This time, Zhang Tie estimated that Zhang Taixuan was going to negotiate with him about this thing in Youzhou City.

'Zhang Taixuan has been very busy since the beginning of October. When in Golden Light City, I was told that Zhang Taixuan had not exited White Tiger Complex for three months and worked about 20 hours a day. Therefore, it's reasonable that Zhang Taixuan wants to negotiate with me about the provision of all-purpose medicament after handling the major affairs in White Tiger Complex.'

Through Zhang Taixuan's 3-month efforts, the entire Youzhou Province had entered the normal track; the government's organs at different levels gradually ran normally, making Youzhou Province a bit like a province in Taixia Country.

If it was other lower provinces which had just been established, it would take them at least 1 year to enter the normal track. It would take a new lower province at least half a year to be equipped with

all the officers, not to mention having all the affairs enter normal tracks. However, it only took Zhang Taixuan less than 3 months to make all of this. As a result, everybody admired his high-efficient ability. Even Commander Cheng was shocked by his excellent achievement.

It could be said that Youzhou Province had become a real lower province in Taixia Country by now.

Overlooking the city from the sky, the magnificent Youzhou City didn't look different than that 3 months ago. However, although the snow outside the city had been several feet in thickness, there was no snow on the city wall of Youzhou City. Given this point, Zhang Tie knew that Huaiyuan Palace had fully controlled this city over the past 3 months. Without a powerful ruling ability over the city guards of Youzhou City, the city wall of this city could never be so clean during the daybreak.

Zhang Tie landed on the wild outside Youzhou City with the heavy snowflakes. Closely after that, he strode towards Youzhou City in a relaxed way.

Unless wartime or due to public affairs, generally, Class A cities in Taixia Country forbade knights to fly inside without consent. Otherwise, as long as they flew over the city wall, they might be attacked by the city guards. In order to not make any trouble or joke, Zhang Tie just landed outside the city and strode inside the city.

It was his second time to visit Youzhou City. He felt pretty special.

When he came to Youzhou City for the first time, Zhang Tie didn't even take a round in the city. He took his family members into Huaiyuan Mansion. After that, his family members left Youzhou City. He then entered White Tiger Complex to attend the competition. Later on, he got drunk by a jar of dragon-marrow liquor gifted by Commander Cheng. When he woke up, he took the

office of the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province. After being familiar with his responsibilities, he left Youzhou City. Therefore, he almost had no impression about this city which covered over 1,000 square miles.

When Zhang Tie arrived at an east city gate of Youzhou City at over 6 am. He found that the city had been boisterous as over 10 trucks were entering the city gate at the same time...

Each city wall of Youzhou City had several city gates, which assumed different responsibilities. Through different city gates, they separated human flows from vehicle flows. The city gate where Zhang Tie stood was mainly available for vehicles that transported materials, which included grains, meats and vegetables that were produced in the farms outside the city...

Chapter 854: Theft

"Uncle Man, have you sold out your mutton? It's so fast!" A young man who was waiting for entering the city in a medium-sized steam truck lowered down the window and shouted towards an old man who was wrapped in a goat-hide coat and a goat-hide hat on an oxcart.

It seemed that they were familiar with each other. They might both live in the nearby farm villages and towns which were subordinate to Youzhou City.

"The new year is coming. I've sold them to my old customers at a discount. The moment they entered the market, they had been taken away!" The old man pulled down his hat before exhaling a cold breath, "Why are you alone here? Where's your elder brother?"

"My elder brother is strong. He used to practice battle skills. Last night, my uncle came back and said that some archers were wanted in the new archers' station in the town with the compensation of over 10 gold coins a year. He might be promoted to a village constable in the future if he had a good performance there; therefore, my elder brother has gone there before daybreak. If he's got good luck, he might be a civil servant from then on. As the snake butter and cabbages are ordered by Steward Liu of Dainty Building, my elder brother doesn't need to give me a hand. When I send them over there, the buddies of Dainty Building will help me unload them!" The young man replied as he moved his car a bit forward when he saw one more vehicle ahead of him entering the city.

"Hahahaha, brat, you look diligent. I will introduce a beautiful and able girl to you next year!" The old man teased. Closely after that, he waved his hand and said, "Well, hurry up, if you're late, Steward Liu will not show you a good look!"

"Thanks, Uncle Man. Uncle Man, watch out on your way back. I will invite you for a drink when I come back!" The young man revealed a cheerful look as he stretched his hand out of the window and bid a farewell to the old man. After that, he drove into the city.

The old man on the oxcart took out a small metal pot from inside his coat and had a small mouth of drink. Closely after that, he drove the oxcart out of the city.

When the young man entered the city gate, Zhang Tie was also going through the pedestrian passageway beside the vehicle.

Zhang Tie was wearing a fur cashmere with hood. After putting on his hood, he almost covered half of his face. Therefore, nobody could identify Zhang Tie at all.

The soldiers outside the city gate were just checking whether those vehicles carried contrabands or not. However, most of the trucks entering the city were carrying vegetables and meats, which could access to the city gate very fast. As there were 8 driveways entering the city, it was not crowded over there.

Above 80% of the vehicles were small and medium-sized steam trucks and tractors. Some were drawn by animals such as long-horn yaks and tall and strong david deer, even rhino-dragon horses.

At the sight of the vehicle drawn by a rhino-dragon horse, the soldiers outside the city gate threw two more glances at it in order to check whether it was an army horse. Rhino-dragon horses in army horse-breeding farms always had marks on their bodies, which could not be used by commoners. Those army horses would not be sold to commoners. However, there were wild colts in the wild of Youzhou Province, which were usually captured by local people. It was very dangerous to catch a rhino-dragon horse, even a colt. If someone caught it, he could show off his ability for sure.

Most of the wild rhino-dragon horses would be sold to army horse-breeding farms for mating. Few of them were raised by their

conquerors, who were usually pioneers, professional hunters and part-time rhizotomists in the wild.

If there was any need, these people would draw maps in the wild; survey the topography in the wasteland or hunt something in the wild and sell them. However, they liked to serve major clans and rich people by hunting some exotic animals or pets in the wild at their requests. Pharmacists were also their customers. Pharmacists would always entrust them to seek for some animals and plants for refining some special pills or medicaments. These guys would even be employed to drive dangerous wildlife away from the region where a city was going to be built.

As Zhang Tie knew that these guys were active in the wild of Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie told his thunder hawks to accept their baptism in Liaozhou Province.

"Show me your face!" A soldier stopped Zhang Tie and ordered him with a solemn look.

Zhang Tie then put off his hood and showed his face.

Zhang Tie thought that he would be recognized; however, after looking at Zhang Tie for a short while, the soldier directly waved his hand and let him in.

'It turns out that I think too much.' Zhang Tie mocked himself before putting on his hood once again.

Until Zhang Tie had entered the city gate for a half minute did the soldier who checked him just now suddenly feel something wrong as he scratched his head and murmured, "Yi? That young man looks familiar. But I don't know him. What the hell!"

Over 2 months ago, when Zhang Tie shocked the entire Youzhou City, many people had seen him in the mirage. However, due to different perspectives, they could only see what happened in the cony domain from top to bottom within 45 degrees. They could not see his face clearly. Therefore, this soldier just felt Zhang Tie's face

was familiar.

Nobody could imagine that the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province whose nickname was the Lion of Youzhou Province appeared outside the city gate of Youzhou City and directly strode into the city without any retinue.

After entering this city gate for a short while, Zhang Tie had seen a boisterous trading market. Most of the vegetables and meats that were carried in the city from outside were sold here...

Although the day had just broken, it had been filled with bargaining voices in the trading market, although they were just bargaining for a few haos or copper coins...

Hearing the boisterous bargaining sounds, Zhang Tie felt tender instead of being annoyed.

When he was in Blackhot City, he used to buy grains in such markets by tricycle...

At this moment, a kid knocked into Zhang Tie and soon disappeared in the crowd...

With a smile, Zhang Tie just saw him disappearing into the crowd...

A thief dared steal money from the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province, how hilarious!

Of course, what was funnier was that when the thief fumbled across his body, Zhang Tie suddenly moved a purse containing over 10 gold coins out of Castle of Black Iron. Precisely, Zhang Tie "foisted" the purse into the thief's hand...

The thief really thought that he had made it. After pinching the purse, he instantly ran away and soon disappeared into the crowd. However, he didn't know that it was Zhang Tie who foisted the purse into his hand; neither did he know that his body, that purse and each gold coin in the purse had been attached with a tracing tentacle by Zhang Tie in the split second.

Zhang Tie just felt that it was funny to do this. Of course, as he had not been to Youzhou City for over two months, he wanted to check the efficiency of breaking a criminal case of the court temples within his territory. By the way, as the new year was coming, he wanted to give a favor to the security in Youzhou City. As that thief was still young, it was not late to save him and send him on a right path.

Zhang Tie didn't think too much about this thing...

Chapter 855: Jia Farmland

Youzhou City covered 1,000 square miles, almost half of which were high-yielding farmlands. Additionally, there were abundant water resources in the city. Under the protection of the high city walls, the farmlands were forbidden to be developed for commercial use.

Perhaps, only Hua people could build such a city.

Having just lit a new dragon scale on his knight's crystal plate, Zhang Tie was loitering in the city and enjoying the magnificent scenery of the only Class A city in Youzhou Province.

After leaving those crowded commercial areas, Zhang Tie entered the neighborhood of those farmlands.

Compared to those buildings with Hua characteristics and various strange places, those farmlands in the city attracted Zhang Tie the most.

In Taixia Country, farmlands in Class A cities were specially called jia farmlands.

According to the Laws of Taixia Country , those who dared violate or destroy any farmland in Taixia Country would be punished to starve to death in the prison of court temples just as brutally as those corrupt officers were punished to swallow golds after being reported.

Jia farmland was an important symbol of a Class A city.

It could be said that Hua people used jia farmland to respond to holy wars.

In holy wars, the jia farmlands which were divided into several pieces in Youzhou City could realize self-sufficiency for its 3 million people when this city was surrounded by demons and constantly fought demons until the end.

Actually, each Class A city in Taixia Country could be a self-sufficient fortress in dilemma. Even though being the toughest battle, as long as the city was not broken through, the millions of survivors inside the city would be able to sustain the bloodline of Hua people.

Besides containing the meaning "first", the word "jia" also meant armor and helmet.

As Zhang Tie's family wanted to build Jinwu City, Zhang Tie gradually learned more about city planning.

Besides jia farmlands, Youzhou City contained 6 strategic materials warehouses which were buried underground and were built together with this city as the basic allocations of a Class A city. Among those strategic materials warehouses, the first warehouse stored 30 million tons of standard coal; the second warehouse stored 3 million tons of various metals predominated by steel and iron; the third warehouse stored 10,000 whole sets of machinery equipment and tools; the fourth warehouse stored crops' seeds and table salt; the fifth warehouse stored ordnance and weapons; the sixth warehouse stored other necessary or major strategic materials. These 6 warehouses were called Six Warehouses of a Class A city. Each Class A city should ensure the safety and sufficiency of the strategic materials in the six warehouses.

When a city was besieged by demons, it would enter a state of emergency. These strategic materials warehouses would be activated at once. With the help of the jia farmlands in the city, this city would become a firm wartime fortress.

Without the extremely miserable historical lessons before the Catastrophe, Hua people would not pose such a strict requirement on their Class A cities. After experiencing the constant disasters before the Catastrophe, Hua people genuinely understood what were the most important resources that Hua people could survive on.

If a nation wanted to survive on, it must rely on its cultivated lands rather than its real properties being made of steel reinforced concrete. The genuine mineral resources were much more reliable than the colorful paper notes; with crops' seeds in hand, they would feel much safer.

Cultivated lands, resources and crops' seeds were the three basic elements that a nation survived on at the cost of countless blood and tears. If a nation lacked any one of the 3 elements, it would deteriorate into the dust in the long course of history for sure.

Perhaps some small countries could still survive on if they lacked one or two of the three basic elements. Even if they lacked cultivated lands or crops' seeds, they could also be traded for their demands with others. However, it didn't fit Hua people. As Hua people was too powerful as the pillar of humans, also the implacable foe of demons. If Hua people lacked any of the 3 basic elements, the entire human race would not survive on.

Hua people almost deteriorated into dust before the Catastrophe.

Therefore, after the Catastrophe, when the first Class A city of Hua people appeared, they prioritized the protection of four elements, namely, Hua population, cultivated lands, resources and crops' seeds.

No matter how terrifying was the war, as long as there was a Class A city remaining in this land, Hua people would survive on.

When other continents or sub-continents were protecting rich people with high city walls, the largest cities of Hua people were protecting the most basic elements, also the hope of the rejuvenation of the nation with high city walls. This might be the reason why Hua people was the most powerful and awe-inspiring nation.

Only at this moment did Zhang Tie feel something familiar with this city when he watched the tidy aqueducts in the jia farmlands of Youzhou City.

Rich people would not cultivate land themselves; however, jia farmland could not be left uncultivated; therefore, only common farmers would choose to cultivate farmlands in the city. Because of this, if the city was besieged, many of these farmers would survive on due to their ownership of the jia farmlands.

In normal times, after the wastes in the sewers and the domestic garbage were fermented and dried in the sun in a concentrated way, they would become the fertilizers of the jia farmlands. In this way, the urban resources were gradually recycled.

As the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province had just come to an end a month ago, the greater part of jia farmlands in Youzhou City had not been sold out yet.

All the jia farmlands in Youzhou City were high-yielding farmlands. Additionally, the irrigation engineering in the jia farmlands had been established. The price of such farmlands was as same as that outside the city walls. Additionally, they were in city walls, which meant that the grains produced from such farmlands could be sold directly in the city. Given so many benefits, they should have been in urgent demand; however, they had not been sold out yet over the past 3 months. Because Taixia Country posed very strict requirements on the qualification of the purchasers.

As the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province, even though Zhang Tie could buy hundreds of thousands of square miles on the border of Yanghe Prefecture, he was not qualified to buy any jia farmland in Youzhou City.

According to the Laws of Taixia Country , the purchasers of jia farmlands had to be farmers who had cultivated lands for over 10 years with adroit farming skills; besides, they had to have the preliminary farming gentry qualification certificate. Each preliminary farming gentry could purchase 10,000 square meters' jia farmlands; farmers with medium farming gentry qualification certificates could buy 20,000 square meters' jia farmlands; farmers

with senior farming gentry qualification certificate could purchase 30,000 square meters' jia farmlands. Farming masters who were one level higher than senior farming gentry could purchase 150,000 square meters' jia farmlands.

In Taixia, if farmers could cultivate lands well, they could promote to farming gentries. After purchasing jia farmlands, farming gentries would become townspeople and enjoy a lot of benefits. After promoting to half landlords, they would win a sharp increase in honor, social status and wealth. In wartime, farmers who had jia farmlands could be real farming gentries as long as the city walls were not broken through. For most of the common farmers in Taixia Country, they could win higher social status by owning jia farmlands.

Although it was snowing, some places near the jia farmlands were still pretty boisterous. A lot of purchasers were converging there from all the other prefectures of Youzhou Province. They were checking the topography and fertility of the farmlands before purchasing them. Zhang Tie also swarmed up and gained more knowledge about that.

After joining in the fun, Zhang Tie suddenly thought of his No. 1 earthworm, 'I wonder how many grains could be increased across Taixia Country if I placed several kgs of No. 1 earthworms in each piece of Jia farmland?'

After Zhang Tie took a walk around Youzhou City in a leisure way, it was 10 minutes away from 12 am. Zhang Tie came to White Tiger Complex on time with high spirit.

As the new year was coming, the outside of White Tiger Complex had also been faintly decorated with red lanterns, which represented a festive atmosphere.

According to the appointment, Zhang Taixuan and Zhang Tie would meet at the lunchtime. It felt both genial and important to talk about it at lunchtime.

To tell the truth, Zhang Tie really felt a bit hungry after exploring around the city for an entire morning.

Less than 10 people could be qualified to be invited by the provincial governor across Youzhou Province. When he thought that his father-in-law was going to invite him for a lunch, Zhang Tie felt especially strange.

After putting off his hood, Zhang Tie had been recognized by some fighters from Huaiyuan Palace who were standing outside the White Tiger Complex. Therefore, he was invited into the Provincial Governor's Mansion respectfully.

After over 2 months, Count Long Wind looked more dignified as the provincial governor of Taixia Country.

In a tranquil place of the Provincial Governor's Mansion which was full of plum blossoms, Zhang Tie and Zhang Taixuan were talking about the affairs in Youzhou Province while drinking and enjoying the beautiful scenery.

"How do you feel about Huaiyuan Palace's position in Youzhou Province now?" After proposing toasts to each other for three rounds, Zhang Taixuan put down the glass and suddenly watched Zhang Tie with a solemn look.

Zhang Tie murmured inside, 'Here it is...'

"After taking a round in Youzhou City, I learned that Huaiyuan Palace is growing increasingly vigorous in Youzhou day after day!" Zhang Tie replied leisurely.

However, Zhang Taixuan suddenly let out a sigh, "Although Huaiyuan Palace looks vigorous in Youzhou Province, it's actually treading as if on thin ice. It might be at stake at any time!"

After hearing this answer, Zhang Tie became stunned at once...

Chapter 856: Treading as If on Thin Ice

'Although Huaiyuan Palace looks vigorous in Youzhou Province, it's actually treading as if on thin ice. It might be at stake at any time?'

When Zhang Tie heard these words from Zhang Taixuan the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, he almost wanted to touch Count Long Wind's forehead to check whether he had fever or not.

'Are you kidding me? Huaiyuan Palace is growing pretty well now. How could Zhang Taixuan be so passive?'

It seemed that Zhang Taixuan had known what Zhang Tie was thinking about; he then called a clerk to bring a document here.

After the clerk left, a document appeared in front of Zhang Tie. Count Long Wind then implied Zhang Tie to read it by throwing a glance at Zhang Tie. Out of curiosity, Zhang Tie took up the document.

"This is a document that Commander Cheng sent to the Xuanyuan Hill. Commander Cheng copied one over here. You can take a look at its contents."

Out of curiosity, Zhang Tie opened it. Only after reading a few lines, he had been shocked. The upper part of the document was the imperial to the throne of an impeachment; the lower part of it was the reply and denouncement of the Northeast Military Region.

Zhang Tie could never imagine that he would become the main character in the memorial to the throne.

——"Su Qianling, the official in charge of the discipline of the public functionaries impeaches Zhang Mushen the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province for dereliction of duties"

At the sight of the title of the memorial to the throne, Zhang Tie had widely opened his mouth.

After composing himself, Zhang Tie read the contents carefully while growing increasingly furious...

The contents contained two events: first, Zhang Tie rarely handled the public affairs in the court temple after taking the office for over 2 months. He didn't even know whether the gate of the court temple was facing south or north; those officials in the court temple didn't even know the look of the new dean of the provincial court in Youzhou Province at all.

Second, Zhang Tie was taking liberties with his beautiful wives and concubines, traveling leisurely, drinking and amusing himself with them every day in Golden Light City; besides, he even bought land and stored wealth and goods in Youzhou Province excessively.

The expressions in the memorial were very delicate. After deleting the other relevant reasons and linking the two affairs with each other, the impeacher precisely depicted an image of a newly rich who was fickle, rude, horny, avaricious and lazy. Anyone who caught sight of this person might spit towards him.

Closely after that, he started to criticize Zhang Tie viciously.

"If it were in peaceful time, it's good to see the dean of the provincial court being leisure; however, it's the wartime. Given the situation outside Taixia Country, our vast country is constantly being disrupted by demons. War flames could be seen almost everywhere; hundreds of millions of commissioned officers and soldiers are awaiting eagerly the order for battle or fighting forcefully with demons on the battlefields. Given the situation inside the country, the Heavens Reaching Church is making troubles everywhere; crafty and evil forces were surging, afflicting commoners severely...however, in such a chaotic period, the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province is only indulged in beauties, drinks, wealth and goods. What a misfortune it is for the commoners..."

"I, Su Qianling now propose to impeach Zhang Mushen the dean

of the provincial court of Youzhou Province for the sake of the commoners in Youzhou Province. Please punish him with the crime of dereliction of duties..."

If the names of Youzhou and Zhang Tie were changed in the memorial, Zhang Tie would smite the table and rise to his feet for sure. Besides, he would swear that dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province for holding down his job without doing a stroke of his work. Given the memorial, the commoners in that province under the governance of that dean of the provincial court were definitely living a miserable life. However, when that main character became Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie was driven extremely furious as his chest rose and fell.

After composing himself gradually, a question occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, 'Who's that motherf*cking Su Qianling? I've just been to Taixia Country for a few months but I don't know him at all. What does this guy bite me for?'

'I've not offended anyone surnamed Su, not to mention Su Qingling. What's the reason then?' Although Zhang Tie was longing for the Xuanyuan Hill, before he caught sight of its look had someone in the Xuanyuan Hill started to attack him.

This memorial was directly presented to the dasikong, one of the top three chancellors of Taixia Country from the Central Censorate of Xuanyuan Hill. After reading it, the dasikong left no comment; instead, he directly sent it to the Northeast Military Region for further response. However, the reply from Northeast Military Region was of one word, "F*rt!" What an aggressive reply! At the sight of the reply "F*rt!", Zhang Tie instantly recalled the cold, black face of Commander Cheng. He then immediately felt warm inside.

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhang Taixuan. He knew that Zhang Taixuan must have something to say.

"Do you know what punishment you will face in Taixia Country as a knight with the crime of dereliction of duties?" Zhang Taixuan asked with a gloomy look.

Zhang Tie shook his head. As it was not written in the Laws of Taixia Country, Zhang Tie also wondered about that.

"If a knight commits the crime of dereliction of duties in Taixia Country, he would be chopped off his head in the army; or removed from his post and dispatched to the abyss of the earth-elements realm to fight demons for 6 decades. However, in the abyss of the earth-elements realm, a common knight only has less than 20% of possibilities to survive the battle with demons for 6 decades. As the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, I shall also assume the joint responsibilities because of your deed. I will not promise you any higher post within 6 decades! Additionally, from then on, the key position dean of provincial governor of Youzhou Province will be assumed by other people but Zhang Clan."

After hearing Zhang Taixuan's words, Zhang Tie changed his face, 'What a memorial! My mom has been so worried about me when I'm above the ground; if she knew that I was punished with the crime of dereliction of duties and dispatched to the abyss of earth-elements realm, she might get scared to death.'

'Even if I returned to the ground after 6 decades, what would my family members look like?' Zhang Tie dared not imagine that.

The vicious intention between the impassioned lines really frightened Zhang Tie.

'What a bloodless massacre!'

Zhang Tie finally understood why Zhang Taixuan sighed that Huaiyuan Palace was treading as if on the thin ice.

"Who's Su Qianling? I've not provoked him; I've not even seen him or heard about him before. Why did he frame me?" Zhang Tie

asked as he looked straight into Zhang Taixuan's eyes and tamed his anger.

After letting out a sigh, Count Long Wind shrugged, "The 360 censors in the Central Censorate of the Xuanyuan Hill are responsible for supervising all the officials in the territory of Taixia Country. They are called around-the-clock imperial censors. Before reading this memorial, I also didn't know Su Qianling."

"Really?" Zhang Tie replied with an amazed look.

Count Long Wind nodded, "Actually, Su Qianling is not the point as he's just a tool and piece in the hands of others. However, you've missed a point. Su Qianling didn't target at you, but Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace. If he could defeat you, he would defeat the entire Huaiyuan Palace too. Because you're the youngest and most hopeful elder in Huaiyuan Palace. They want to humiliate Huaiyuan Palace and further rock the foundation of Huaiyuan Palace by tearing a wound on you!"

"They? Who're they?" Do Huaiyuan Palace have an enemy in Taixia Country?"

"As we're in the secular world, each of us has personal enemies." Zhang Taixuan let out a sigh as he watched Zhang Tie seriously, "Have you considered why our ancestor Lord Huaiyuan would leave Taixia Country and lay a foundation in Waii Sub-continent?"

Zhang Tie was shocked once again as he had not imagined that the enemies of Huaiyuan Palace were left by Lord Huaiyuan.

"They were the opponents of Lord Huaiyuan!"

"Besides being the opponents of Lord Huaiyuan, they are also the enemies of the Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace. Because of them, Lord Huaiyuan was killed in the earth-elements realm!" Zhang Taixuan revealed a sense of animosity, "Too many people in Taixia were involved in this event. It's the secret of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace. Only elders and some other figures knew it. I

planned to tell you about that after a few years; however, I've not imagined that they couldn't wait to frame you in such a vicious way after knowing that Huaiyuan Palace won the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province. If I still didn't tell you about it, you might suffer a big loss." After a pause, Zhang Taixuan watched Zhang Tie with a serious look and continued, "It's Gobbling Party who framed you and Huaiyuan Palace!"

"Gobbling Party?" It was Zhang Tie's first time to hear such a strange name.

"Lord Huaiyuan offended the Gobbling Party in Taixia Country, the head of which has become the master of the crown prince in the east palace of Xuanyuan Hill. It's a class I position, the most dignified position below the three top chancellors, namely; dasima, dasitu and dasikong. He might probably promote to one of the three top chancellors. He has numerous apprentices, ears, and eyes in Xuanyuan Hill. His family has hundreds of cities in the upper provinces. His clan forces are dozens of times greater than that of Huaiyuan Palace..."

After hearing that, Zhang Tie felt like swearing that b*stard...

Chapter 857: The Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele

As the party originated from Gobbling Province, one of the 36 upper provinces in Taixia Country, it was gradually called Gobbling Party by the public.

On the 687th year of the black iron calendar, the mysterious stele which was unearthed from the Gobbling Party of Taixi Country shocked the world.

Nobody knew what was the stele. It could not be damaged a bit by any means, even by powerful, high-rank knights. Therefore, it aroused a sensation in Taixia Country. Many high-rank knights across Taixia Country poured into Gobbling Province and wanted to try whether the mysterious stele was as firm as that in the legend. However, although they tried all the possible means only to damage even a bit of it. Not only common high-rank knights, even the 7 major sects in Taixia Country and the Xuanyuan Hill were shocked and dispatched powerhouses to Gobbling Province.

The mysterious stele was indeed completely out of people's imagination. No matter how many chakras had the knights formed, they could not damage the stele a bit.

Later on, through the authentication of some top alchemist masters in Taixia, they reached a more shocking conclusion—the substance of that mysterious stele violated all the ionization laws of substances on the planet. The stele could resist any element, energy and substance. The atoms and porous structure of the substance of that stele were always fixed. In another word, time didn't exist compared to that stele. That stele was really immortal.

"Immortal?" This word drove everybody mad; especially Hua people who used to treat themselves as immortals and keep pursuing the natural laws as the ultimate target. After that mysterious stele was unearthed, it aroused a storm in Taixia

Country. In the opinion of all the Hua people, being immortal was a reflection of freedom. Only those being immortal could be free and produce such an immortal object.

After the mysterious stele was unearthed for 3 months and aroused a sensation in Taixia Country, a paragraph of Hua characters loomed on the unlettered stele, which could be translated in the following words——with benevolence as the core, morality as the body, ritual as the use and righteousness as the driving force, natural laws would loom on objects while containing objects. The essence of natural laws is real and reliable. Natural laws could not be described by words but shall be followed.

The paragraph of characters on the mysterious stele shocked the entire Taixia Country once again. The mysterious stele was therefore called Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele. The characters on it drove numerous people mad. Many people even treated the characters on the stele as the truth towards the natural laws.

In the beginning, the Gobbling Party was just a non-governmental organization or a group of people who studied the contents of the characters on the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele in Gobbling Province. Later on, this organization gradually expanded. It even had leaders. Therefore, the name of Gobbling Party gradually spread across Taixia Country.

By now, the so-called Gobbling Party was definitely not a local force in Gobbling Province; instead, it had developed into an organization that didn't belong to any sect and had a great influence among the people and in the imperial court of Taixia Country.

When the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele was unearthed in Gobbling Province, Zhang Huaiyuan the former West Expedition General of the God's Will Army, one of the top 4 armies in Taixia Country even went to investigate the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele himself. When the inscriptions appeared on the stele, Zhang Huaiyuan even wanted to carry the Far-ancient Immortal Moral

Stele back into the abyss of the earth-elements realm with his God's Will Army despite world condemnation, which aroused a big trouble and offended Gobbling Party from then on.

"Why would Lord Huaiyuan move the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele back to the abyss of earth-elements realm?" Zhang Tie couldn't stand to ask Zhang Taixuan.

"Our ancestor Lord Huaiyuan was straightforward and candid. He thought that the inscriptions on the stele were casting spells on people. If the mercy, morality, rituals and righteousness advocated by the words spread over Taixia Country and became the truth that was pursued by people, it would cause limitless damages to Taixia Country. Before demons arrived, Hua people would have been exterminated. Because of this, in order to preserve the spirits of Hua people, Lord Huaiyuan preferred to move the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele back into the abyss of earth-elements realm despite world condemnation!" Zhang Taixuan let out a sigh.

'I've not imagined that Lord Huaiyuan was so heroic in Taixia Country. When hundreds of millions of people were watching the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele and wanted to laud it to the skies, he dared lead the God's Will Army to rob it and intended to move it back to the abyss of the earth-elements realm.' Zhang Tie felt blood boiling when he recalled the heroic look of his ancestor.

"Has he made it?"

"If he could make it, there would not be Gobbling Party now!" Zhang Taixuan sighed, "The stele itself had been regarded as the immortal object of Taixia Country and the symbol of natural laws by many people regardless of the inscriptions on it. If Lord Huaiyuan wanted to seal it, he would shock the Gobbling Province even the whole country at once. Therefore, the entire Gobbling Province was at loggerheads. A great number of people who wanted to seek for the secrets of the natural laws from the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele didn't want it to be sealed. Thus, they started to prevent Lord Huaiyuan and the God's Will Army,

almost deteriorating the entire Gobbling Province into a battlefield. The entire country was shocked. Later on, Emperor Xuanyuan issued the decree and dispatched the commander-in-chief to appease this event in Gobbling Province!"

"Ahh? Who's the winner?"

"Before Lord Huaiyuan wanted to seal the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele with God's Will Army, people across the country wanted to consecrate it in the Xuanyuan Hill and fix its position as the immortal object of Hua people. However, after this event was appeased, Lord Huaiyuan and his God's Will Army were dispatched away from Gobbling Province. The Gobbling Party then instigated the public opinion to force Lord Huaiyuan to exit the God's Will Army and leave Taixia Country for Waii Sub-continent. Additionally, the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele is still in Gobbling Province; instead of being consecrated in the Xuanyuan Hill!"

"In this case, how could the leader of Gobbling Party be the master of the crown prince in the east palace of Xuanyuan Hill?"

"After the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele was unearthed for many years, one guy entered meditation and cultivation 3 years before the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele and promoted to the black iron knight at 18. After that, he continued to enter meditation and cultivation for 30 years before it and promoted to an earth knight, which shocked the entire country. After promoting to an earth knight at 48, it took him 5 years to finish his masterpiece The Morality and The Classic on Returning to the Nature . He even made annotations to the 12 classics of Taixia Country, which had been widely accepted by scholars and intellectuals across Taixia Country. It was said that The Classic on Returning to the Nature was the supreme truth that he had learned through medication. Anyone would improve his cultivation progress by cultivating The Classic on Returning to the Nature. Therefore, The Classic on Returning to the Nature was regarded as

the treasure for cultivation by the members of Gobbling Party. Outsiders could not even have a chance to read it. After finishing his masterpieces, he entered the earth-elements realm and fought another 6 decades. Due to the great achievements that he had made during the 6 decades, he was awarded as the duke; besides, he promoted to a shadow knight. After leaving the earth-element realm, he refused all the high positions and rich compensations and entered his meditation in front of the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele once again. After another 6 decades, he promoted to a heavens knight. After that, he entered earth-elements realm and killed the demon duke and destroyed a fortress of demons with his own battle strength. By then, this guy had been well-known across the world for both political and military achievements. Plus, he had been longing for that position for a long time and the Gobbling Party had reached a scale, he naturally became the master of the crown prince in the east palace of Xuanyuan Hill and the leader of the Gobbling Party!"

'What a weirdo! What a weirdo!'

"Was Lord Huaiyuan killed by this guy?" Zhang Tie clenched his fist as he asked Zhang Taixuan.

"Although this guy didn't launch an attack himself, it's also related to this guy. When this guy promoted to an earth knight in 30 years and shocked the entire country, Lord Huaiyuan had been exiled to Waii Sub-continent. As this guy and Lord Huaiyuan were both earth knights by then, when this guy headed for the earth-elements realm, the Gobbling Party also instigated the public opinion to force Lord Huaiyuan to enter the earth-elements realm too. Their competition had been faintly carried on since then. Finally, that guy returned from earth-elements realm; however, Lord Huaiyuan fought to the death over there."

This was the history of the resentment between Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace and the Gobbling Party. Although Lord Huaiyuan had passed away, the resentment between Gobbling Party and

Huaiyuan Palace had not come to an end. The competition between Lord Huaiyuan and Gobbling Party was more like a competition between beliefs and ideas than a piece of Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele. Because of this, the two parties were always hostile against each other. Given the current situation, unless the offsprings of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace joined Gobbling Party regardless of their face and bowed towards the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele, it was impossible for Gobbling Party to not cause Huaiyuan Palace troubles.

If not, even though the offsprings of Zhang Clan survived well with both honor and wealth, it was nothing different than death.

Therefore, Huaiyuan Palace could only continue to turn hostile against Gobbling Party. If Huaiyuan Palace became scared at this moment, not only the Gobbling Party would turn pleasant and rampant; even those who supported Huaiyuan Palace such as Commander Cheng would belittle Huaiyuan Palace.

When the ancestors planted the tree, the posterity would enjoy the cold. Similarly, when the ancestors beat the tiger, the posterity would be prepared to be attacked by the tiger. As an offspring of Lord Huaiyuan, Zhang Tie knew that he didn't have the right to choose something. Since the day he came to this world, he had been branded as the offspring of Lord Huaiyuan, who should not only carry the honor in Waii Sub-continent but also the resentment in Taixia Country. On such a critical issue, Zhang Tie could only stand firmly on the side of Huaiyuan Palace; share honors and humiliations with Huaiyuan Palace.

After being silent for a short while, Zhang Tie made his determination, "Next year, the output of all-purpose medicament of Jinwu Business Group would increase to 15 million vials, half of which would still be sold by Long Wind Business Group without any surplus condition. Long Wind Business Group could get commodities from Jinwu Business Group at 50% off!"

Zhang Tie's decision meant the benefit of tens of millions of gold

coins a year. This figure was not small even in Taixia Country.

'Now that Gobbling Party said I was greedy about money and liked to stock land and commodities, I will show them what they want to see. I will show them money makes the mare go.'

When wealth reached a certain scale, it would become a terrifying, overwhelming strength.

Zhang Tie revealed a tameless sneer at his mouth corners, 'F*ck you, Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele; f*ck you, Gobbling Party; f*ck you, heavens knight! This father even dared to fight the entire demons and Three-eye Association, do you think that I'm afraid of you? F*ck! Do you really think that you're Emperor Xuanyuan?'

Zhang Tie always accommodated himself to circumstances. He had been very satisfied with the living during the past two months when he just read brief reports from the court temple in Youzhou Province and played with his sons. However, Zhang Tie was also very unyielding and unruly. He would turn more unyielding and unrulier if he met a more powerful enemy. Facing those great challenges, Zhang Tie's ambition and spirit would also rise.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt that he had returned to the No. 7 National Male Middle School. Although he just sat below a small tree leisurely and didn't mean to incur someone; some b*stards still came to his side and threw some service plates in front of him so as to reflect their lofty images.

After hearing Zhang Tie's decision, Count Long Wind became silent for a short while. As the head of Huaiyuan Palace, he knew the importance of Zhang Tie's decision, "As Taixia's industrial development is much more advanced than Waii Sub-continent, the shipbuilding industry in Yanghe Prefecture should also be integrated so as to be more competitive. You can have Jinwu Shipyard merge Long Wind Shipyard!"

Long Wind Shipyard had an asset of over 50 million gold coins. After Jinwu Shipyard merged Long Wind Shipyard, Zhang Clan's

Jinwu Shipyard immediately became the largest shipbuilding enterprise in Youzhou Province. Zhang Tie's family would also become the largest shareholder of Jinwu Shipyard.

Count Long Wind just presented Long Wind Shipyard to Zhang Tie so forthrightly.

Zhang Tie nodded without any hesitation...

'I wonder how would my grandpa feel after knowing that Count Long Wind presented the largest shipyard in Yanghe Prefecture to me.'

...

After half an hour, Zhang Tie left White Tiger Complex vigorously under the escort of some officials of Zhang Clan.

After raising his head and throwing a glance at the snowflakes in the sky, Zhang Tie didn't put on his hood; instead, he directly strode towards the Land Bureau which was less than 1 mile away from White Tiger Complex.

In the heavy wind and snow, all the snowflakes just stayed 10 cm away from him...

At the sight of this scene, all the passers-by thought that they mistook it as they all kept their eyes on Zhang Tie...

...

Chapter 858: Another Form of Counterattack

There were 4 red lanterns outside the gate of the Land Bureau, which were used to set the festival atmosphere. The arrival of Zhang Tie made those in the Land Bureau busy at once.

As the new director general of the Land Bureau in Youzhou Province, Elder Muan was not there. The deputy director and two hierarchical superiors came out to receive Zhang Tie.

The position of deputy director was assumed by a deacon of Huaiyuan Palace. The two hierarchical superiors were from two subordinate departments of the Land Bureau respectively.

In a magnificent parlor of the Land Bureau, Zhang Tie was drinking tea leisurely and talking with the deputy director and the two hierarchical superiors. The others were trotting here and there in the Land Bureau. In a couple of minutes, a field register official had entered the parlor with a pile of documents. He then placed those documents in front of Zhang Tie.

After waving his hand to let the field register official leave here, the deputy director started to introduce the documents to Zhang Tie one after another.

"Elder Mushen. This is the general agreement of the land that you've purchased. With the general agreement, the title deed that you sign when you want to divide and sell this land would be legitimate; this is the trading document approved by the Land Bureau of Youzhou Province; this is your receipt; this is the map of that land that you've bought..."

With the introduction of the deputy director, Zhang Tie reviewed all the documents one after another. The material of the title deed was similar to silver-based paper. However, it was more ductile than silver-based paper. The title deed for the land was

watermarked with complex, colorful, secret patterns. The secret patterns would change their colors from different perspectives. Touching the grains, Zhang Tie could feel evident three-dimensional lines. This should be a very senior anti-fake printing means. There were the location, area of the land, the corresponding identifiers of the subsidiary files, maps and a scarlet stamp of the Land Bureau of Youzhou Province on the title deed for land.

The names of Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang were written in the column of owners of the title deed. Because the land was paid by Zhang Tie, when his elder brother handled it, he only wanted Zhang Tie's name to be left in the column of owners of the title deed. Later on, at Zhang Tie's insistence, Zhang Yang's name was added as well.

This bit of land was really nothing for the two brothers. The common title deed symbolized the common undertaking of the two brothers.

The entire land that Zhang Tie purchased covered 257,970 square km. In the beginning, Zhang Tie thought that he could buy an integral area of land such as 250,000 square km. Later on, he knew that plain countries in Taixia Country could be easily sold integrally; however, such mountainous areas were always sold according to the trends of the mountains and rivers and topography within the territory. A river, a mountain or a remarkable topographical symbol would serve as the boundary of the territory, which could be easily identified. Because of this reason, the area of the mountainous region could only be measured according to details.

As the attached document of the title deed, the map of this private territory was composed of over 40 pages.

The turnover on the receipt presented by the Land Bureau was 110,927,100. According to the preferential policy formulated by the Land Bureau of Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie could enjoy 5% off.

However, Zhang Tie felt that Huaiyuan Palace might be framed as being greedy for small gains due to this, especially when Huaiyuan Palace wielded the scepter of Youzhou Province; therefore, he ignored the benefit of millions of gold coins. Compared to the reputation of Huaiyuan Palace, such a preferential policy was really trivial. Given the overall situation, Zhang Tie ignored the small gains.

Watching the figure on the receipt, Zhang Tie felt that he was too innocent, 'If others want to attack me, they could. It's nothing to do with my caution.'

As the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province, only those people above LV 15 on the wanted list or events that aroused a shock across a prefecture could attract Zhang Tie's attention, 'Knights should not pay attention to trivial affairs or bury themselves in these documents all day long. Knights in Taixia Country are not that cheap. Even if I did that, I'm sure that they would impeach me too with the reasons such as "has no appreciation of things' importance", "Being busy doing trivial affairs all day long", "sees only tree leaves instead of Mountain Tai", "has no experience and is only limited to counties and cities". Given their reasons, facing demons outside the country and evil forces inside, it's the countrymen's misfortune to have me take the office of the dean of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province.'

At the sight of the figure 110,927,100, Zhang Tie felt that the zeros in this figure were like ripping mouths that were deriding him as an idiot. After running his spiritual energy, Zhang Tie instantly got a figure 5546355, "F*ck, over 5.5 million gold coins, over 2 years of compensation for this father. Even many dogs would wave their tails towards me if I bought steamed buns for them with this amount of money; however, those b*stards still want to ruin my family."

'Being meticulous? That's bullsh*t!'

The deputy director was always observing Zhang Tie's facial

expressions carefully. Watching his slightly complex expression at the sight of the receipt presented by the Land Bureau, the deputy director lightly coughed twice and comforted Zhang Tie meticulously, "Don't worry about that, Elder Mushen. Although it's a high price, when Youzhou Province develops into a medium-sized province, this land will definitely pay off. Additionally, all the mineral resources beneath this land have not prospected. If you discovered large-scale mineral ores in your territory, you would further make a great profit. Based on the information mastered by the Land Bureau, Youzhou Province is not a barren province. We've found various rare mineral resources in Youzhou Province. Many major clans in Taixia Country also usually make such enclosure investments on large scale in lower provinces and have made great profits. As there're more and more people in Taixia Country, after a few years, this land would become more and more valuable. Your offsprings would have something to rely on by then."

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he felt a bit better. He then threw a satisfactory glance at this deputy director.

After telling the deputy director to put away these materials for him, Zhang Tie said, "Did any other clans purchase a lot of land like me lately?"

"Over the past two months, the Land Bureau has received a lot of records of land purchase cases. Many major clans from Tongzhou Province, Qiongzhou Province, Yanzhou Province, Huizhou Province and Chaozhou Province were purchasing lands which ranged from hundreds of square miles to tens of thousands of square miles. Besides being used for domestic investment, these lands are always provided for the branches of those major clans! Aww, Zhu Dabiao 1 the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province had also bought one patch of land in Youzhou Province. His private land covers over 200,000 square miles, which is the largest patch of land being traded by now. Yesterday, he had

already paid it off through the bank. After the new year festival, the Land Bureau will dispatch people to survey that land, draw a map and set boundary marks for it."

After hearing his words, Zhang Tie realized that a climax of land enclosure was aroused after Youzhou was promoted to be an established lower province. However, the name of the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province really...really...had a strong personality...

Zhang Tie smacked his mouth...

"Lands in lower provinces are the cheapest in Taixia Country; especially those which have just been established. According to the regulations of Taixia Country, after one purchases a patch of land and builds a city there, he will take the office of the mayor of this city and become an official of Taixia Country. In Taixia Country, many major clans choose such a method to help their juniors become officials! If one buys a patch of land in a wild province, even though he builds a city there, he could not be an official of Taixia Country. By implementing such a policy, Taixia is guiding folklore major clans' capital to flow in lower provinces for the sake of the development of lower provinces." The deputy director explained.

"Hmm, not bad!" Zhang Tie nodded as he stroked his jaw with hand, "I want to buy one more patch of land. Do you have the map of Youzhou Province? Bring it to me, please. I want to select one more patch of land and register it here today!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the deputy director became stunned, 'How rich is Elder Mushen?'

After being silent for a second, he composed himself at once as he hurriedly threw a glance at a hierarchical superior on his side and let him fetch the map of Youzhou Province.

After drinking two mouths of tea water, the hierarchical superior had already fetched the map of Youzhou Province and paved it

directly over a huge square desk in the room. Zhang Tie walked closer to the desk and could see the whole territory of Youzhou Province on the map.

Youzhou Province's map was like a fat eggplant. It was almost 15,000 miles from east to west and about 7,500 miles from south to north. With Liaozhou Province in the north, it connected other provinces in the territory of Northeast Military Region in the south and west; besides and was close to the ocean in the east. The entire area of Youzhou Province was about 200 million square miles.

The topography of Youzhou Province was predominated by mountains and plains, which were in disorderly distribution. All the lands that had been purchased on the map were marked in blue while those that were available were marked in green. Given the map, the blue areas were mainly in the prefectures of Youzhou Province while the green areas occupied over 95% of the total area of Youzhou Province.

'Aren't you impeaching this father for being immersed in stocking lands and wealth? This father will show you about greed. F*ck! I don't believe that you could bite off my ass for that. There's no regulation in the Laws of Taixia Country that officials are forbidden to buy land. Additionally, the more land I buy, the deeper Huaiyuan Palace will root in Youzhou Province.'

Zhang Tie bought more land especially for those members of Gobbling Party. As the old Hua saying went, humans and buddhas both strove for vindication. Although Zhang Tie could not defeat the Gobbling Party right now, it didn't represent that he would not launch a counterattack.

Being supported by Commander Cheng and some big figures in the Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie felt reassured. 'Although the Gobbling Party is powerful, someone dares ignore it too. As long as I don't do anything excessive so that the Gobbling Party could get my alibi, I don't need to worry about anything at all.'

As he purchased this patch of land mainly for giving vent to his anger and making his enemy uncomfortable, what was important was not where that patch of land was located but that the patch of land should be large; the larger the better.

"Which land is cheapest in Youzhou Province? Even cheaper than the patch of land that I've already bought?" Zhang Tie put it straight.

"Elder Mushen, the patch of land that you've bought is wasteland over 150 miles away from Yanghe Prefecture. It's Class C Level II. The cheapest land in Youzhou Province is here. The mountainous areas here are Class D Level IV!" The deputy director pointed at the green mountainous area nearby the border of Liaozhou Province which covered tens of hundreds of square miles, "This mountainous area is a depopulated zone. There's no city within 1500 miles. It borders Liaozhou Province with a large area of wilderness in the west. Additionally, the greater part of this mountainous region is covered with rocks. Few plants could be found there. Few lands could be cultivated over there. Therefore, the land over there is Class D Level IV. Its price is only 30 gold coins per square mile!"

'30 gold coins per square mile?' Zhang Tie watched the map as he thought about the money that he could use. He then directly patted onto a gourd-shaped plateau which covered almost 2 million square miles, two times the size of that of Yanghe Prefecture before saying, "Here, I will buy it. Register it today. Go prepare for it, I want to handle the procedures as soon as possible!"

After Zhang Tie moved his palm away from the map, the deputy director was shocked by the words below Zhang Tie's palm——Zanggu Plateau.

The Zanggu Plateau was a bit larger than 1% of the total area of Youzhou Province on the map.

"Elder Mushen...are...are you sure? You're buying Zanggu

Plateau?" The deputy director watched Zhang Tie with a shocked expression, "There's nothing here. It's too difficult to develop it. Even if Youzhou develops into a medium province or big province in the future, this place will still be of a very low value..."

"I don't care, as long as it's large enough!" He then gritted his teeth and added, "And, I will take all the discounts! F*ck..."

The deputy director didn't even know why Zhang Tie suddenly swore. After all, less than 10 people had read the memorial that Zhang Taixuan showed Zhang Tie across Youzhou Province.

Zhang Tie took all the documents away from the Land Bureau, leaving a lot of exclamations once again.

After leaving the Land Bureau, Zhang Tie came to his territory with a cold face——Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.

Forbidding agencies like the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province remained unchanged even though the new year was coming while the other yamuns had hung red lanterns at the gates. On such a cold day, it still looked like "Business Only".

In the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie was sitting in the main seat of the main hall while hundreds of officials were lowering their bodies towards him for the first time.

After stealthily throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, the officials in the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province found Zhang Tie didn't look good. Therefore, they dared not breathe smoothly.

After running his eyes over the officials, Zhang Tie sipped a mouth of tea water and put down the teacup. As a result, the officials felt much colder in the hall.

"I've not been to Youzhou Province for over 2 months. While taking a round in Youzhou City this morning, my purse was stolen..."

...

Chapter 859: The Heavens Reaching Church

Only after 2 more hours, Zhang Tie had seen the young thief who had stolen his money at the end of a remote alley in a residential area in the east of Youzhou City.

When Zhang Tie arrived here, although it was still windy and snowy, the alley had been surrounded by criminal hunters in solemn, black uniforms with crossbows and sabers in hands like ghosts within 100 m, even on the walls and the roofs.

"Tell them to get off the walls and roofs. The new year is coming, don't scare others!" Before entering the alley, Zhang Tie instructed the one beside him.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the one on Zhang Tie's side made a hand gesture while those criminal hunters disappeared from the roofs and walls at once.

The one on Zhang Tie's side who waved his hands towards those criminal hunters was an old man, who looked solemn and a bit aggressive. This old man was Zhang Tie's assistant. When Zhang Tie was not in the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province, this assistant took charge of it.

Actually, this assistant had known Zhang Tie in Huaiyuan Prefecture in Waii Sub-continent. At that time, Zhang Tie returned to Zhang's old mansion after promoting to a knight. Coincidentally, Zhang Haitian's eldest wife was celebrating her birthday. Out of jealousy, some unworthy descendants of Zhang family aroused some filthy troubles in the banquet. In order to clarify his innocence, Zhang Tie fetched Zhang Yuanshan, the grand justice of Golden Sea City; by the way, those unworthy descendants of Zhang family were severely punished.

Given Zhang Yuanshan's position in Huaiyuan Prefecture, Huaiyuan Palace arranged for him to be Zhang Tie's assistant and cooperate with Zhang Tie to handle criminal cases.

Compared to Zhang Tie, Zhang Yuanshan was more experienced in criminal justice. Being severe and capable, he was the best supplement to Zhang Tie.

Count Long Wind was good at choosing people for jobs. During the period when Zhang Tie was not in Youzhou City, under the rule of Zhang Yuanshan, the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province ran orderly and no chaos occurred within the scope of the official duty of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.

Because of this, Zhang Tie was extremely furious about the malicious impeachment of Gobbling Party.

The alley was piled with some sundries such as hencoops, honeycomb briquet and broken cases. Like other places, even though Taixia Country was good enough and Youzhou City was big enough, there were still poor people in this city. Some families lived in brilliant residences and pavilions while some families only crowded in humble abodes. Here was the second kind of residence.

Even big cities like Youzhou City were not full of fresh flowers or sunshine everywhere. There were also people living in dim places.

Those sundries were covered with snow as thick as 3 cm.

The ground in the alley was a bit dirty, which was muddy, thawy snow caused by numerous people's footsteps. They could even see the clear grains left by the soles of the leopard-headed battle boots of those criminal hunters in Youzhou Province on the snow...

The footmarks on the snowfield also implied that many criminal hunters had entered this alley before Zhang Tie's group arrived.

Even the residents in the neighboring residential area could not imagine that so many ferocious criminal hunters from yamuns could gather in such a remote place one day. Few people with a genial look could do a good job in this profession. Because those who looked genial could never frighten those evil and brutal people.

In such a snowy day, the criminal hunters dispatched by the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province were like black vultures with an awe-inspiring inauspicious qi. The residences in the neighborhood had long closed their curtains. Some brave guys dared only throw stealthy glances at them from behind the curtains.

At the end of the alley, Zhang Tie made a turn and caught sight of that young man whom he had met in the early morning.

Like a section of a deserted broken tree stump, that young man's corpse was lying beside some railway sacks of sundries, facing down. His body had almost been covered by snow.

It became silent in the surroundings.

After letting out a sigh, Zhang Tie squatted down in front of that corpse and turned it over.

Given his angular look, he was just 13 or 14 years old. Zhang Tie found his face had turned totally pale. By contrast, the location of his heart had been covered with blood. Due to the cold weather, his blood had been frozen before flowing out. Therefore, a few blood drops were left on the ground beside his corpse.

He was still looking up at the sky with an anguished and amazed look.

Zhang Tie watched this face seriously as he had not imagined that this juvenile whom he had met in the early morning could become an icy corpse. 'It's just a common crime of theft. He would be set free after being put behind the bars for about a year. Why are you so brutal?' Zhang Tie sighed inside.

"This man is called Lu Xiaoshuang. He had been jobless for many years and lost his family. When the Northeast Military Region decided to build Youzhou City, millions of people poured in the territory of Youzhou City. He followed the contingent of builders in and wanted to seek for a chance to survive himself. He was just a

beggar and went on errands for people in the city. 2 years ago, a local ruffian called Wang Wu had him in his care and taught him how to be a thief; Lu Xiaoshuang then survived on theft. 2 hours ago, someone saw Wang Wu and Lu Xiaoshuang enter this alley. Finally, Wang Wu left here alone!" Zhang Yuanshan introduced this thief to Zhang Tie, "Wang Wu's corpse was also discovered in his home. He has already committed suicide by taking poison. Besides Lu Xiaoshuang, 7-8 thieves who worked for Wang Wu had been arrested and were being interrogated!"

Zhang Tie just put his hand on Lu Xiaoshuang's face as if he intended to close Lu Xiaoshuang's eyes.

In others' eyes, Zhang Tie's movement was nothing strange but driven by the mercy. Therefore, although Zhang Tie put his hand on Lu Xiaoshuang's forehead for a couple of seconds, he didn't arouse the doubts of those beside him.

Nobody knew what Zhang Tie was "seeing" and "hearing" in his mind.

Lowering his head as if he was gazing at Lu Xiaoshuang; however, nobody could notice Zhang Tie's glittering, exotic eye light.

After Zhang Yuanshan finished his words, Zhang Tie's fingers slightly trembled. Closely after that, he moved his hand away from Lu Xiaoshuang's face, when the latter's eyes were closed.

Zhang Tie picked himself up before sighing once again with emotions, "Buy a good coffin using the gold coins that he had stolen from me and bury him. Stop interrogating the other thieves. They're just poor people without any reliance. Have people send them to the Righteous Palace in Youzhou City and instruct them with knowledge; Confiscate Wang Wu's family property for public use. Send all the money to the Righteous Palace. Additionally, spare 100,000 gold coins from my compensation this year and send them to the Righteous Palace of Youzhou City too so that the

Righteous Palace could have more homeless juveniles and beggars in. Prevent them from being misled by evil people anymore!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zhang Yuanshan instantly cupped his hands and bowed towards Zhang Tie, "Benevolent Lord!"

It could be said that all the homeless juveniles and beggars across Youzhou City would survive themselves with the 100,000 gold coins donated by Zhang Tie. 100,000 gold coins was not a small figure. Even though they were deposited in the bank, their interests could also afford over 1,000 orphans and beggars each year.

The Righteous Palace of Youzhou City had just been in place lately after Huaiyuan Palace won the competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province. Of course, as it started from scratch, it could not take many people into its care. Before Youzhou promoted to an established province, there was no Righteous Palace in Youzhou City.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as if he had forgotten about this "trifle", "Well, let's go back. Take a round across Youzhou City with me. As the new year is coming, we'd better guarantee a peaceful year for the commoners in Youzhou City!"

...

After knowing that the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province was going to leave, a fierce criminal hunter from the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province and the officials from yamuns left with him too. Of course, the orders that Zhang Tie had issued would be executed by someone else.

In over 1 hour, Zhang Tie truly took a round across Youzhou City with those officials and a criminal hunter from the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province facing the heavy wind and snow. Although they were not awe-inspiring enough to arouse a general turmoil like lions in streets, they also scared commoners away.

During the past few hours, Youzhou City had finished a temporary yet sharp "crackdown of evil forces" before the new year festival. As a result, over 100 ruffians who preyed upon people and fattened themselves had to celebrate the new year in the cells. These b*stards were domineering in front of commoners yet were as docile as rats in front of cats facing these criminal hunters and officials from the yamuns.

After taking a round in Youzhou City, Zhang Tie had returned to the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.

When the others left, Zhang Yuanshan moved closer with a bit more solemn look, "Lord, whatever happened today was a bit weird!"

After rolling his eyes, Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile, "Yup, the moment we wanted to find them, they had been killed. It seems that someone was leaking message from the yamuns. If they keep doing this, even trifles would deteriorate into big events. After the new year, you'd better screen them carefully. Although some officials in the Provincial Court are closely related to people from all walks of life, it's not good if the human relationship is too complex. We'd better dismiss some of them!"

Although Zhang Yuanshan wanted to see something more, Zhang Tie had waved his hand, "No more words. As the new year is coming; don't make our fellows depressed!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zhang Yuanshan swallowed his words back before bowing towards Zhang Tie and intended to leave. As an experienced person, especially in forbidding agencies like the Provincial Court, he clearly knew what he should speak and do as the assistant of Zhang Tie. Although this event was a bit weird, now that the dean of the Provincial Court didn't want to continue to investigate it in the spring festival, he didn't need to think too much about that. After all, only 2 trivial people had died.

"Ahh, is there any people on duty in the Provincial Court during

the spring festival?" Zhang Tie casually asked when he found Zhang Yuanshan was going to leave.

"I will be on duty in the Provincial Court during the spring festival. The officials in the other yamuns would also be on duty by shift."

"That's fine. The deacons and disciples in the Provincial Court from Huaiyuan Palace would better not come back during the spring festival. They should practice more and be familiar with their services. So many forces are gazing at Huaiyuan Palace. If we don't work hard, people will laugh at us. In major agencies like Provincial Court, deacons and disciples of Huaiyuan Palace should make greater achievements!"

"Yes, sir. I will make an arrangement soon!" Zhang Yuanshan received the order.

Zhang Tie nodded as he said with a self-mockery expression, "Today, I planned to show my face to those who had not seen me in the Provincial Court in case of being spoken ill of by them; I've not imagined about such boring things. Alright, I will go back to Jinwu City..."

Although Zhang Tie dared order the disciples and deacons of Huaiyuan Palace to stay in the Provincial Court during the spring festival, nobody dared order Zhang Tie to do the same. Even Zhang Taixuan dared not say such words to Zhang Tie.

...

After half an hour, Zhang Tie left Youzhou City by airship under the gazes of the officials from the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.

After traveling to Youzhou City, Zhang Tie made the officials in the Provincial Court cheer up; besides, the number of thefts across Youzhou City would greatly reduce for sure during the new year festival.

Watching Zhang Tie boarding the airship, someone in the Youzhou City let out a sigh of relief.

In the airship, Zhang Tie's eyes flickered and revealed a bit cold light as he saw Youzhou City diminishing under his foot. At the same time, he pursed his mouth tightly.

His subordinates told him that his purse and gold coins had been discovered and even showed them to him. The purse and the gold coins inside it were both real; even the quantity of the gold coins remained unchanged; however, Zhang Tie knew that those gold coins didn't belong to him as the gold coins that he had marked with tracing tentacles were still in a place in Youzhou City.

After Lu Xiaoshuang submitted the gold coins, those gold coins had long been shifted among them for two rounds.

Those people were strictly organized at a high efficiency.

After following Wang Wu for so many years, Lu Xiaoshuang had known something more or less.

Especially before his death...

In the last moment, Lu Xiaoshuang saw Wang Wu's face which suddenly turned grim, closely followed by a sharp pain.

When Lu Xiaoshuang fell down, he heard another strange voice talking with Wang Wu——

"5 days later, we will do great things in Youzhou Province. Remember to not make any mistake at this critical moment. Zhang Mushen is called Lion of Youzhou Province. A new broom sweeps clean. As the Provincial Court's prison has a lot of means to investigate you; we have to prepare for that. I feel sorry for you. Just tell me what you want to say now!"

"I hope Heavens Reaching Ancestor to descend to the world. This disciple expects to be the lad cupping flowers on the Ancestor's side..." A panting and frenzied voice sounded.

"Fine, I will tell the Heavens Reaching Ancestor. Here's the Brain Shattering Pill gifted by the altar head. Take it and you will get relieved without any pain..."

"Thanks, Law Protector Zuo, please pass on the message to the altar head that Wang Wu could not propose a toast to him in his "Washing Hands Ceremony" on the first day of the lunar new year..."

"I know, you can leave now..."

Only after a short dialogue between Wang Wu and the other strange voice, Lu Xiaoshuang's consciousness had entered into total darkness with unwillingness...

Zhang Tie knew that Brain Shattering Pill was a rank poison. Compared to common poisons, Brain Shattering Pill could not only destroy one's vitality rapidly but also destroy one's brain structure, causing one's brain to die at the fastest speed. This was the fastest way to die. After one took that pill and died, nobody else could get any message from his brain anymore.

In Waii Sub-continent, those who took Brain Shattering Pills were all dauntless fighters or spies. Once being caught, they would commit suicide by taking Brain Shattering Pills. Additionally, the performance of Brain Shattering Pill was no different than that of "powerful rat poison". Unless making brain anatomy, it was hard to identify what they had committed suicide with.

Therefore, in order to not frighten the tiger, Zhang Tie even didn't check Wang Wu's corpse; he just handled this thing in a distant way...

Zhang Tie had not imagined that his casual movement could have him involved in the plot of the Heavens Reaching Church.

The big things mentioned by the strange person from Heavens Reaching Church referred to riot and rebel for sure.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether it was his fortune or the

misfortune of Heavens Reaching Church...

'Someone must be keeping an eye on my movements from time and then in Youzhou City...'

Therefore, Zhang Tie just ignored the crime scene so as to make his enemy reassured...

However, Zhang Tie felt a bit chilly when he realized that the Heavens Reaching Church could control his subordinates like Wang Wu to sacrifice himself for the sake of the church at the critical moment...

...

Chapter 860: A Back Thrust

This family reunion dinner was the most boisterous one in the late decade.

Besides safe reunion, Zhang family's undertakings were flourishing; plus so many kids, Zhang Tie's father and mother were very happy.

It would be the first day of the 900th year of black iron calendar next day, the beginning of a new century.

In the next year, Zhang Tie's family would build Jinwu City, their first private city in Youzhou Province, Taixia Country and lay a foundation for their descendants. This was also a new century for Zhang Tie's family.

Therefore, this family reunion dinner became pretty boisterous.

Before dinner, the cheers and laughter in the dining hall had started.

Sitting in the dining hall, Zhang Tie's mother and father were giving heavy red packets to each servant, maid and guard. After taking the heavy red packets, all the servants and guards of Zhang family spirited up and did things more swiftly.

Zhang Yang and Zhang Tie had already had their wives and concubines give the red packets to their servants this noon. The two side mansions were both cheerful and festive.

At the table, when they talked about the Jinwu City that they were going to build next year, everyone became highly spirited; especially Zhang Tie's father. After knowing that he would be the mayor of Jinwu City, Zhang Ping almost returned to his youthhood and became more energetic. As a result, he kept talking at dinner.

Watching their father's excited look, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang exchanged a glance with each other before revealing a tacit smile.

'It seems that I've made a wise decision to have dad be the mayor of Jinwu City.'

When it gradually turned dark, they could hear cracking drumbeats from other houses across Golden Light City. Those kids couldn't stand the lure and immediately rushed into the courtyard to beat drums.

According to the custom in Taixia Country, people needed to beat drums in the new year's eve. Therefore, to beat drums in new year festival became kids' favorite activity.

"Have you got enough money to build the city? If not, I've got some case-dough, you can...take it away!" Zhang Tie's father became a bit drunk.

After hearing Zhang Ping's words, before Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang made a response, Zhang Tie's mom had raised her eyebrows while asking in a tender voice on Zhang Ping's side, "How many case-dough have you saved?"

"About 500,000-600,000 gold coins...erm..." Zhang Ping suddenly realized that he had fallen into the trap. He immediately turned around and watched her glassy-eyed look while quivering all over a bit before crying inside, 'Sh*t, I'm over...'

"Well, well, well, Zhang Ping, how dare you save so much case-dough these years? If you were not drunk today, how long did you prepare to cover it in front of me? What do you plan to use this money for? To find another younger mother for Linda, Beverly and Fiona? Where's the deposit book?"

Zhang Tie's mom watched Zhang Ping with an aggressive look while stretching out her hand. At the sight of her majestic look, the mayor of Jinwu City in the future instantly turned pale and dared not look straight into her eyes. He then answered in an embarrassed way, "Erm...erm...it's just a bit pin money!"

"Pin money? You could buy hundreds of beautiful female slaves

with these pin money! Give me the passbook! You can ask pin money from me!"

After hearing this, Zhang Ping instantly became disappointed like a cock who had lost a battle...

After throwing a glance at each other, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang sighed inside and could only wish good luck to their dad, 'Besides being too strict to dad's pin money, mom is always good.' Since they were in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie's father's money had always been in the hand of Zhang Tie's mother. After saving some case-dough these years, he suddenly revealed it after being drunk due to the overexcitement. How poor was Zhang Ping!

"Ahem...ahem...we don't need your money, dad and mom. Jinwu Business Group has sufficient capital for building Jinwu City. Even if there's any problem, I will work out a solution with Zhang Tie too. Am I right?" Zhang Yang threw a glance at Zhang Tie.

"Hmm, right, right..." Zhang Tie replied in a blurry way.

Actually, Zhang Tie had been a bit regretful about buying another patch of land in Youzhou City. 'Zanggu Plateau is too large, the cost of which has already surpassed my remaining deposit in Golden Roc Bank. I still lack tens of millions of gold coins. I could only borrow them from Golden Roc Bank. If my parents know that I've bought such a useless patch of land at such a high price, they would feel very pitiful about that.'

'Although I have so much money in Castle of Black Iron, I could not take them out of the air in the bank or in front of others. Therefore, I need a public reason to gain space teleportation equipment.'

Zhang Tie had already seen space teleportation equipment on Commander Cheng's body. However, given Commander Cheng's status, Zhang Tie knew that space teleportation equipment was in short supply even in Taixia Country, which could not be enjoyed by common knights.

...

After entering the new year, the whole family went to bed.

Before leaving the dining hall, Zhang Tie passed a secret message to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang threw a glance at Zhang Tie before nodding silently.

After sending Linda, Beverly, Fiona and his kids back to his private mansion and watching his sons falling asleep, Zhang Tie left some words to Linda, Beverly and Fiona before changing a set of relatively common clothes and leaving his private mansion. He then came to the garden of Zhang's mansion.

At this moment, only two lanterns were lit in the garden. It was tranquil in the garden except for the drumbeats from distance.

Zhang Yang had long been waiting over there.

"It's so late, what do you want to negotiate with me here?" Zhang Yang asked Zhang Tie out of curiosity.

Zhang Tie put it straight. He told Zhang Yang that he found the trace of Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou City two days ago. As it was of great importance, Zhang Tie used secret voice transmitting skill in case of being eavesdropped.

After hearing Zhang Tie's message, Zhang Yang changed his face. He had also heard that the Heavens Reaching Church was staging an armed rebellion in a province of Taixia Country. The members of Heavens Reaching Church were all lunatics, they could even overthrow a sub-continent. Therefore their hidden strength was very terrifying.

"Now that I know it, I have to go back to exert my full efforts so that the commoners in Youzhou Province could face less trouble. I will not face any danger and won't flaunt my superiority. When I cannot handle it, I will notice Count Long Wind and Commander Cheng. Therefore, you don't need to worry about my safety. However, I don't know about the scale of the Heavens Reaching

Church's riot and whether the riot would influence Golden Light City. Elder brother, you just stay at home; Elder Muyuan will also stay at home in Golden Light City these days. If there's something wrong, you can seek for Elder Muyuan's favor. If dad and mom ask you about my whereabouts, just tell them that I needed to go out for public affairs for a few days. Remember to not make them worry about me!"

Zhang Yang nodded with a solemn look.

Watching Zhang Yang's response, Zhang Tie cut the crap, "See you then!"

Closely after that, Zhang Yang felt dazzled as he found that Zhang Tie had disappeared. He looked up and found no trace of Zhang Tie in the dark sky. He then moved his eyes to the ground and saw no footmark in the snowfield either.

'Is this what a knight is supposed to be?' Zhang Yang felt complex inside before taking in a deep breath. After checking those invisible sentries in the mansion, Zhang Yang then returned to his private mansion.

...

In a short moment, Zhang Tie had already arrived at the wild outside Golden Light City. He landed in a open land. Closely after that, he started to stride towards Youzhou City at a terrifying speed of 100 m per step like a black shadow, which could even match the flying speed of common knights. Additionally, his moving method was more hidden...

'It's too eye-catching if I just fly towards Youzhou City; however, there would be no problem if I strode towards Youzhou City after activating my Kuafu Bloodline. After all, almost all the people across Youzhou Province have seen that I've awakened Kuafu Bloodline after the competition for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province.'

Even now, Zhang Tie was still rigorous in thinking.

As the scenes flashed back on his sides, Zhang Tie put on the disguising face mask that Donder had gifted to him.

Zhang Tie had not used this face mask for many years. However, It was suitable this time.

...

After 6 hours, a Hua youth with a faintly sick look slowly arrived at a city gate in the north of Youzhou City with a common iron-sheath longsword in hand...

Nobody across Youzhou City could imagine that the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province who had just left 2 days ago could make a nice back thrust by returning to Youzhou City silently once again...

Chapter 861: The Master Artisan

As it was the first day of the new year, there was almost nobody on the streets across Youzhou City in such an early morning.

The guards were still sticking to their posts. When Zhang Tie approached the city gate, that soldier just threw a glance at him before allowing him in.

In Taixia Country, the ceremony of "washing hands in gold basin" was very solemn, which indicated that the main characters were going to exit that industry by washing their hands in a gold basin in the public. Generally, two kinds of people would hold such a ceremony: first, the important figures of non-governmental organizations in Taixia Country, who held such a ceremony so as to declare to the public that they were going to make a clean break with his past; second, some senior professionals in Taixia Country such as master swordsmith, rune equipment maker and appraisers who held such a ceremony so as to express that they would not return to their former careers from then on.

Both the first and the second kinds of people had a commonplace, namely, they were both big, respectable figures in local areas or in certain industries. Trivial people didn't need to hold such a ceremony at all; as they could leave as long as they wanted and nobody would remember them.

Wang Wu was the local snake, a rascal who was familiar with Youzhou City. Of course, that altar head who would hold the "washing hands in a gold basin" ceremony, timely got hang of Zhang Tie movements and could have Law Protector Zuo gift Brain Shattering Pill to Wang Wu was in Youzhou City; otherwise, if he was in another prefecture, his subordinates could not make any response to Zhang Tie's movements so fast.

As it was the first day of the 900th year of the black iron calendar, we had to say today was a good day for holding the

"washing hands in a gold basin" ceremony.

...

Like taking a casual walk, Zhang Tie was loitering on the streets of Youzhou City while the map of Youzhou City occurred to his mind. While some areas were gradually moved out of the map in his mind, Zhang Tie selected the optimal routine in his mind and continued to loiter in the remaining areas.

Although Youzhou City was large, its urban planning was very methodical. Except for the jia farmlands, the locations of government agencies, the residential areas of commoners, the industrial and commercial areas, few were left.

It had stopped snowing. A small part of a smile had appeared in the sky, which indicated a nice weather.

After loitering in Youzhou City for over 2 hours, Zhang Tie knew that he finally arrived at his destination.

It was less than 10 miles away from Huaiyuan Mansion, which was close to the Fengyang Lake in Youzhou City. The bank of the lake was planted with 7 miles' willows, which looked pretty nice. This was the habitation of rich people across Youzhou City. What attracted Zhang Tie's eyes was an extremely remarkable manor and courtyard in this habitation, which covered about 470,000 square meters. The high, vermilion wall of the manor occupied 1/3 of the street outside.

As it was the first day of the lunar new year, many stores didn't open today. However, a lot of vehicles and servants in tidy uniforms had been busy receiving guests outside the manor. Some airships directly landed at the airport behind the manor. After someone got off it, it flew off.

This was the most boisterous place across Youzhou City today.

"As master will wash his hand in a gold basin today, about 1,000 influential figures would arrive here today. We'd better be spirited

up. Don't make any trouble. After today, Steward Zuo said he would award each of us 3 gold coins." A person in the uniform of steward shouted at the side door outside the manor while guiding those servants to carry the food ingredients into the kitchen of the main mansion from the side door. Of course, the guests could not just watch the performance here, they had to enjoy food and drinks here, "Did Jiang Si's group come back? I told them to take fresh venison from Linjia Village."

"Not yet."

"Take some people to find them. Hurry, the cooks are waiting for it. Venison and deer blood are required for two dishes tonight!"

"Yes, sir!"

After hearing this, Zhang Tie turned around and entered a teahouse on one side.

Like hotels and pubs, this teahouse still ran in the new year festival. There were also many people inside it when Zhang Tie entered.

Gathering around a circle in the courtyard in the teahouse, those people were having tea water, desserts, melon seeds, peanuts and listening to a man in a madarin jacket over a gown telling a story vividly with a fan in hand in front of a small square table. In the expression of Taixia Country, they were not listening to a story, but pingshu.

The roof of the courtyard was half sealed. Although it was precious to light and air, it didn't leak rain or snow; there were still some vigorous green plants in the courtyard, making it a special scenery.

Of course, many people were also watching the grand occasion in the manor. Some were whispering or discussing the event in the manor which was not far from here with low exclamations.

"Welcome, welcome, come in!"

The moment Zhang Tie entered the teahouse, an argute lad had walked towards him and greeted Zhang Tie with a big smile.

Zhang Tie flicked a silver coin towards him.

"Give me a tranquil private room. I don't wanna be bothered. By the way, bring me your best tea water and pastries!"

The lad immediately caught the silver coin before turning around and shouting, "VIP in No. 17 Heavens private room, Floor 3!"

Zhang Tie directly went upstairs to the 3rd floor while another lad greeted him at the end of the staircase and led him directly to a private room which was a bit farther than the courtyard. After opening the door of the private room for Zhang Tie, he invited Zhang Tie in.

This private room covered over 20 square meters while being matched with soft seats and a teapoy. There was also a window inside, from where Zhang Tie could watch the manor in the opposite. Zhang Tie was very satisfied with this room.

"Sir, what can I do for you?"

"Bring me the best tea water and pastries!" To be honest, as it was Zhang Tie's first time to enter such an entertainment venue in Taixia Country; therefore, Zhang Tie didn't know what to order.

"Okay, sir, I find you're new here, you might not know the price of this private room; being different from those seats outside, you need to pay 50 more copper coins per hour here. You can stay here until we close it for the night. As "honesty and integrity management" is our service ideology, we don't cheat any customer!"

"Good, no problem, you can leave!"

After the lad left the private room for a short while, he took in a pot of tea and some plates of pastries. After arranging all of these items on the teapoy, he asked whether Zhang Tie needed any other service or not. Watching Zhang Tie nodding his head, he left the

room while closing the door for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie picked a piece of tea cake and ate it. At the same time, he listened to the discussions of those people in the teahouse. When he ate one plate of tea cakes, he almost got the information that he needed. Zhang Tie finally learned about the background of the "altar head of Heavens Reaching Church" who was going to wash his hands in a gold basin here today.

The altar head surnamed Jiang. Everyone called him Master Jiang. This person was famous in Youzhou Province, even in the entire Northeast Military Region.

Master Jiang's ancestors were all blacksmiths. He started to help his father in the smithy when he was only 8 years old and showed a very high talent for casting. His experience was amazing. He became an artisan apprentice at 12, an artisan at 16, when his casting skills exceeded that of his father; when he was 20 years old, he had promoted to a copper hammer artisan. In the next 100-odd years, Master Jiang constantly promoted to a silver hammer artisan, a gold hammer artisan, a mithril artisan and a secret runes artisan. Master Jiang had promoted to a master artisan 4 decades ago.

If one person could promote to a master artisan, he would be famous wherever he was, even in Taixia Country.

Before promoting to a master artisan, Master Jiang had taken the office of deputy director of the Provincial Construction Administration in Tongzhou Province. After promoting to a master artisan, Master Jiang took the office of director general of the Provincial Construction Administration. He worked 2 decades in this position before applying for resignation and gaining his freedom once again.

Master Jiang didn't stop cultivating these years after he resigned. As a result, his reputation grew louder. He used to produce elite rune products. As Master Jiang was excelled at casting weapons,

especially at casting swords, his mansion was frequently visited by people who invited him to cast weapons for them. Therefore, Master Jiang had established deep human relationships over the past years; additionally, his reputation grew louder and spread farther.

Master Jiang's old home was in Youzhou Province. After Youzhou became established, Master Jiang moved to Youzhou Province and settled down there.

The great part of the industry in the craftsmen's street in Youzhou City belonged to Master Jiang, his apprentices or his apprentices' apprentices. This indicated Master Jiang's influence in Youzhou City.

When Master Jiang was celebrating his 149th birthday last year, he declared to wash his hands in a gold basin and would not touch tools that were used to cast rune equipment this year. He wanted to improve his health physically and mentally and sense the natural laws so as to make further progress in casting rune equipment.

The day arrived today when the entire Jiang Mansion became busy.

Master Artisan—even Zhang Clan which was famous for casting rune equipment in Waii Sub-continent only had one Master Artisan!

After knowing this guy's background, Zhang Tie became excited immediately as he knew that he caught a big fish...

Chapter 862: Another Breakthrough

At 10 am, more and more people entered Jiang Mansion while the street outside the mansion became more boisterous. Jiang Mansion's subordinates, stewards and Master Jiang's apprentices were welcoming and seeing off guests outside the manor. What was more boisterous was the airport behind the manor where so many airships landed and flew off, transporting influential figures from afar.

When Zhang Tie was thinking about finding the breakthrough, a tall, thin man with long and thin eyes in cyan long gown walked out of the gate while a lot of stewards and disciples outside the gate of Jiang Mansion hurriedly bowed towards him, "Steward Zuo!"

The man just nodded in a reserved way, "Jiang Ping, Jiang Sheng, Master Jiang summoned you. The CEO Gu of Bailian Palace of Gaozhou Province has arrived, Master Jiang wants to introduce him to you!"

After hearing Steward Zuo's words, the other disciples of Master Jiang who were welcoming guests outside the gate threw "admiring" looks at two of them. After taking a deep breath, Jiang Ping and Jiang Sheng both followed Steward Zuo in with high spirits.

It was normal for influential figures like Master Jiang to introduce his excellent apprentices to others when he washed his hands in a gold basin.

Master Jiang lost his wife at a young age. Due to deep affection between them, he was severely stricken by it. He became very depressed for a long time. Later on, Master Jiang put all of his efforts into studying about rune equipment. Over these years, he didn't marry any woman. Therefore, he didn't have any posterity. All of his apprentices were his adopted children who followed his family name.

The spoony experience of Master Jiang also became a much-told tale in his life. Of course, someone felt pitiful about Master Jiang.

Although the distance between Steward Zuo and the teahouse was over 100 m, with his strong knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie could hear each of his words clearly.

This voice was the same as that Lu Xiaoshuang had heard before death.

Zhang Tie knew that Steward Zuo was his target.

Watching Steward Zuo entering the mansion once again, Zhang Tie's eyes glittered. Closely after that, he disappeared from the private room. At the same time, a tiny beetle appeared in the room and flew towards afar.

It was pretty tranquil in the private room; additionally, those people outside could not see what happened inside the private room. He found that nobody was paying attention to him; therefore, he entered Castle of Black Iron and called his incarnation out of there.

After a few hours, when the lad opened the door and wanted to ask whether Zhang Tie needed to add tea and pastries, he found nobody was inside except for a gold coin on the table. Scratching his head, the lad became confused as he had not seen anyone exiting the private room at all. However, when he noticed the open window and the weapon in Zhang Tie's hand, he understood something, 'It turns out that the young man is a powerhouse...'

The Stewards Zuo didn't find that he had been followed by a white, trivial beetle when he entered the Jiang Mansion once again.

Jiang Mansion today was indeed much more boisterous than that outside.

There was a temporary canopy on a patch of open land in Jiang Mansion, which covered at least 200 tables. There was a very

solemn hathpace in the middle of those tables, which held a 1-m high stone table. A gilded basin full of water was placed on the stone table.

Numerous servants and maids were penetrating through those dining tables while a team of strong guards was standing against the hathpace while holding swords.

This was where Master Jiang would wash his hands tonight; by then, all the 200-odd tables would be occupied.

Steward Zuo was also very busy.

As Master Zuo was talking with his VIPs kindly in the mansion, all the affairs across Jiang Mansion would be managed by Steward Zuo. Thankfully, Steward Zuo had been familiar with all the procedures. He kept his eyes on Master Jiang and his subordinate stewards, who would attend to their own duties. Therefore, all the affairs across Jiang Mansion ran in the order.

Zhang Tie just gazed at Steward Zuo. Although Steward Zuo was busy, Zhang Tie believed that he would have a chance sooner or later. It only took him 1-2 minutes to extract all the messages and secrets from the brain of Steward Zuo without arousing the attention of others.

As there was no knight in Jiang Mansion, Zhang Tie became totally reassured.

As a person who could cultivate alone in a tower of time for 15 years, he was patient enough to wait.

Steward Zuo walked around Jiang Mansion and constantly handled various affairs followed by Zhang Tie.

After 2 hours, it was almost 12 am. After receiving the report of a subordinate steward that the lunch had been prepared well in the dining hall, Steward Zuo entered a parlor and invited Master Jiang and those VIPs who had arrived here earlier to have lunch in the dining hall.

When Steward Jiang entered the parlor of the inner mansion, Zhang Tie was resting on a plum blossom in the garden outside the parlor.

A faint forthright laughter and the voices of talks with someone drifted from the parlor. After half a minute, Zhang Tie saw a genial, old man with white hair and whisker in plain robe leaving the parlor with some people who also looked noble for the dining hall.

'This old man is Master Jiang. Given his look, who could imagine that he's the altar head of Heavens Reaching Church?'

'You could not identify a person from his face.' Zhang Tie sighed with emotion inside.

As not too many people have arrived this morning, they had lunch in the dining hall instead of the venue where Master Jiang was going to wash his hands in a gold basin. The venue would turn boisterous in the evening.

At lunch, Steward Zuo just stood not far from behind Master Jiang and waited for his order at any time. The table was full of dainties. However, Master Jiang only ate a vegetarian diet.

When someone asked out of curiosity, Master Jiang sighed with a pitiful look. Steward Zuo answered on one side, "Mrs. liked to eat a vegetarian diet before; since Mrs. passed away, Master Jiang had started to eat the vegetarian diet and didn't kill living beings anymore!"

"Master Jiang is really the No. 1 spoony man in the world!"

"Master Jiang is too merciful!"

All the guests at present praised him in unison.

Hearing this praise outside the dining hall, Zhang Tie became speechless at once...

In the brief report from the Provincial Court of Youzhou

Province, Zhang Tie learned that Heavens Reaching Church coerced commons to rise in revolt in Ganzhou Province. Those commoners who refused to follow their orders would be chopped off their heads together with their family members. Finally, when the Heavens Reaching Church in Ganzhou Province was cracked down, almost 1 million people were wounded or killed. 'How could such an old d**chebag be praised as merciful? F*ck...'

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt that all the reputations in the secular world were nothing but a sh*t.

When he recalled his master Zhao Yuan, who was blamed by all the commoners across the world, Zhang Tie realized that something must be hidden inside.

'Even the old d**chebag of Heavens Reaching Church could be praised when he didn't expose his real status, how could those be sworn by the public be heinous?'

...

This lunch lasted about 1 hour. After lunch, Steward Zuo left Master Jiang and hurriedly walked towards a tranquil place in the manor. Zhang Tie knew that his chance finally arrived.

People had to take a pee or sh*t. After the entire morning, this guy should take his pee. Zhang Tie didn't believe that this guy would be followed by a lot of people when he was taking a pee or directly solved it in the public.

Zhang Tie was right, Steward Zuo was indeed heading for the washroom.

As a lot of servants were in the Jiang Mansion, even the washroom of management was separated from that of servants. The washroom that Steward Zuo entered was more advanced and tranquil where he would not be bothered by others.

At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie realized the thing would proceed even faster than he had imagined.

After taking a pee, Steward Zuo quivered twice. The moment he had put his mummy into his trousers, Steward Zuo had faintly frowned. He turned around and saw a pair of eyes. From then on, he could not move his eyes away anymore...

Zhang Tie slowly put his hand onto the forehead of Steward Zuo...

The breakthrough that Zhang Tie made in the Dragon Cave not only promoted him to the rarest and most powerful profession among knights but also advanced his Soul Capture Skill to a realm that Zhang Tie had not imagined. In this realm, Zhang Tie made another breakthrough to the secret methods in the Soul Capture Skill and directly entered the supreme realm.

After 2 minutes, Steward Zuo walked out of the washroom like nothing had happened and continued to do his work. He didn't look abnormal at all; he had already totally forgotten about what happened in the washroom just now...

He just took a pee, nothing strange at all!

...

10 minutes later, the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province...

After feeling that one more person appeared in the room, Zhang Yuanshan who was lowering his head and reading a document immediately raised his head while his qi turned aggressive...

"Argh, chief justice!" Zhang Yuanshan was shocked by Zhang Tie.

However, what shocked him more was Zhang Tie's words.

"Heavens Reaching Church will rise in revolt in the Northeast Military Region, it's time for the Provincial Court to render meritorious service in Youzhou Province..."

Chapter 863: Making Trouble

At night, the Jiang Mansion was filled with human voices. All the guests had almost arrived.

Most of these guests came from Gaozhou Province, Mozhou Province, Tongzhou Province, Qiongzhou Province, Yanzhou Province, Huizhou Province and Chaozhou Province. Over 2/3 of the almost 2000 guests came here by airship. After receiving the invitation, many people had set off a month ago.

Besides Master Jiang's old friends, even those who had invited Master Jiang to make rune equipment for them had arrived. A few of them were of the same trade as Master Jiang. What Zhang Tie had not imagined was that even the Provincial Construction Administration of Tongzhou Province had dispatched an official to witness Master Jiang's ceremony with one gift. What a great respect it was!

A master artisan's powerful influence and human relationship were clearly manifested at this moment.

After leaving Jiang Mansion a few hours ago, Zhang Tie finally arrived at Jiang Mansion once again in a disguised look half an hour ahead of the ceremony.

This time, he directly swaggered inside without using his incarnation.

Finding that Zhang Tie was strange in average dress and came with no gift, a steward frowned as he immediately blocked Zhang Tie.

"Brother, may I know your name and your purpose here?"

Zhang Tie blinked his eyes and replied, "Won't Master Jiang wash his hands in a gold basin today? I also came here to join in the fun and witness that!"

"You've met our Master Jiang? Brother?" That steward watched

Zhang Tie with a dubious look.

"Only once. Master Jiang looked kind; he's even a vegetarian!" Zhang Tie answered seriously.

'It seems that he has indeed met Master Jiang.' The steward murmured as he waved his hand. Two servants then walked over here, one with a roll, the other with a tray.

The roll had been filled with names of guests. After throwing a glance at it, Zhang Tie picked the pen and jostled down his name "Zhang Tie" on it.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's scrawl which looked like an ox's dung in blossoms, the steward even wanted to slap his face.

After the signature, Zhang Tie wanted to enter; however, he found the other guy who was cupping the tray and staring at him.

"Ahem...ahem..." The steward coughed twice after composing himself, "According to the regulation, all the friends who come to witness Master Jiang wash his hands should present a gift, which represents their admiration to Master Jiang, regardless of its value!"

"I see, I see..." Zhang Tie nodded while smiling like a rat genius with narrow eyes. At the same time, he stretched out his hands and fumbled over his upper coat for a while. After that, with a crash, he threw his "ritual" into that tray.

Watching the three copper coins circling around the tray, the steward opened his mouth which could almost hold an egg as he frowned. All the servants of Jiang Mansion outside the gate were glaring at Zhang Tie as if they were ready to drive Zhang Tie away the moment the steward issued the order.

"May I come in? I think Master Jiang would not blame me for such a little gift. No matter what, it's my sincerity!"

After gazing at Zhang Tie for a couple of seconds, the steward took in a deep breath before waving his hand with a glassy-eyed

look, "Take this guest to the 11th average table!"

After hearing the steward's order, a servant invited Zhang Tie in with a reluctant look

Watching Zhang Tie moving away, a servant on one side couldn't stand to ask, "Steward Wu, the b*stard obviously came here for free food, why not drive him away?"

"If we didn't let such a sophisticated person in, he might make some trouble. If such a toad climbed onto your foot, he would be disgusting even if he did not bite you. We'd better not provoke him. Even though our dog doesn't lack these copper coins. Just let him in. Those average tables are especially set for such people from all walks of life. Just hope him to speak high of Master Jiang after having the food!" Steward Wu said. After throwing a glance at the 3 copper coins in the tray, he directly threw them into the grass of the parterre beside the gate. After that, he gazed at the two ox dungs on the roll for quite a while before recognizing that they were "Zhang Tie".

'It sounds a bit familiar; I remember that Zhang Mushen the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province is called Zhang Tie...'

'I've not imagined that such a rascal dare share the same name with the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.' Steward Wu ridiculed inside, 'It's really a humiliation to this name...'

However, he could never imagine that the one who had just dropped 3 copper coins in the tray was Zhang Tie the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.

When he recalled the two words "Zhang Tie", Steward Wu couldn't stand to look at them on the roll once again. This time, he felt the other signatures were repressed on the page and became inconsistent and abrupt. What a weird feeling!

Although being not a knight, Steward Wu couldn't taste the realm of knights. As Zhang Tie was here to make trouble;

therefore, his signature carried his spirit and awareness no matter how ugly it was. Although it was a casual scrawl, the spiritual realm that the words contained had destroyed the brilliant qi field on the roll. Because of this, Steward Wu felt the entire page becoming weird.

However, Steward Wu had two servants to pay special attention to "Zhang Tie" silently. As long as "Zhang Tie" made any excessive movement, they should drive him away at once.

Although being far away from Steward Wu, Zhang Tie could still hear clearly what Steward Wu ordered the two servants to do.

Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile...

On such an occasion, the so-called average tables were in the most remote places which were specially set for those who came to join in the fun from Youzhou City.

Those at the average tables were all small figures compared to those guests being invited. They could make the banquet more boisterous.

If Wang Wu didn't die, he might have been at an average table.

Those who sat on the average tables were from all walks of life who liked to join in the fun. Although they had certain social statuses, their statuses were dwarfed on such an occasion. Therefore, they could only stay at the average tables.

When Zhang Tie arrived there, he saw those guys in brilliant clothes sitting seriously at those average tables who were watching that hathpace where a gold basin was placed on it and those figures at those main tables beside that hathpace. Additionally, they were whispering to each other. Although being tough, they had to disguise to be reserved. Some of them were twisting their bodies at the tables as they didn't fit their new clothes.

"Boss, this new pair of deer hide boots aches my foot. Can I take them off? I feel the wooden slippers in our outdoor bathing place

was more comfortable!" A guy complained to a tough guy on his side in a low voice.

"F*ck, if you dare take off your boots at this moment, this father would let you have no feet to wear boots. Do you believe that?" The boss swore in a low voice as he threw a glare at his subordinate.

"10 gold coins is really wasteful for two of us. I think 3 gold coins is enough. It's 10 gold coins, boss, you cannot make so much in one month. With so much money, we can even rent a courtyard of girls and play with them for one week, if we don't nitpick!"

"Shut up! Dogs only know to eat sh*t!" The boss raised his eyebrows as he added, "One pile of sh*t for one teeth!"

The other guy hurriedly shut up.

Hearing this funny dialogue, Zhang Tie laughed inside.

"Here, just sit here!" The servant took Zhang Tie to the table on the edge as he pointed at a chair to him. After throwing a sick glance at Zhang Tie, he turned around and left at once.

After throwing himself onto the chair, Zhang Tie started to glance at the other guys at this table. Given the dress, only Zhang Tie's clothes were the most average. Besides, Zhang Tie's "look" was also average.

"Bro, you look a bit strange, do you scrape a living in Youzhou City?"

The moment Zhang Tie took a seat, a 50-year odd guy on his opposite had thrown a glance at him and asked.

"Hmm, almost like that!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's answer, that man frowned as he said frankly, "What do you mean by almost like that? If you're, just say yes; if not, just say no. Whether you're or not?"

Rubbing his face, Zhang Tie replied, "Yes, then. But my job is arranged by my family. It's not stable. Some people even speak ill

of me and want to drive me away!"

"Where do you work, bro?"

"Yamun!"

After hearing that Zhang Tie worked in yamun, the other guys at the table revealed a clear look at the same time. In their opinions, Zhang Tie, as one who went on errands in yamun would always be pushed aside if he was dumb, not diligent and didn't have a deep background. As yamun was a profitable place, even though boilersmith and dustman should have a background. Those who could stay long inside were not average.

"Bro, do you know Zhao Long? He's my friend, also a criminal hunter in yamun." The other guy asked in a tentative way.

"No!" Zhang Tie shook his head directly.

After finding that Zhang Tie didn't even know Zhao Long, those guys lost their interest in Zhang Tie at once and continued to chat. Through their chat, Zhang Tie learned that they were in the coal trading industry in Youzhou City. They had trade ties with those smithies and foundries which belonged to Master Jiang. They were the coal suppliers of those smithies and foundries. Therefore they were here to join in the fun today...

Chapter 864: Washing Hands in the Gold Basin

Soon after Zhang Tie took a seat, the servants of Jiang Mansion had started to serve dishes.

Generally, on this occasion, after the dishes were served, Master Jiang would wash his hands in the gold basin and say something. After that, he would get off the hathpace and sit in the chief seat of the main table. After toasting each other, this ceremony would come to a successful end.

The moment the dishes were served, Zhang Tie had started to enjoy them with chopsticks, splashing soup and oil everywhere.

"Come on, they're turning cold!" With braised venison in the mouth, he told those on his side while moving his chopsticks across the table.

He was the first one who moved his chopsticks among the over 200 tables.

All the others were gazing at Zhang Tie. They didn't know whether Zhang Tie was an idiot or really didn't know about the rite. On this occasion, Master Jiang should be the first one to move his chopsticks. How could a guest move his chopsticks first and watch Master Jiang to wash his hands on the hathpace? Did he really take it as a performance?

When the two servants wanted to walk towards him, Zhang Tie threw a glance at them. They then stood still at once.

At the sight of this scene, those on the neighboring tables who wanted to stand up and give Zhang Tie a lesson became silent at once. 'Now that people in Jiang Mansion don't care about him, if I steal Master Jiang's thunder, people in Jiang Mansion may think that I'm playing an act with him to destroy the atmosphere here.' Therefore, when Zhang Tie was enjoying his dishes, the others just

watched him while forcefully swallowing their saliva by moving their throats.

Especially those who sat at the same table with Zhang Tie. Watching Zhang Tie messing up the entire table of good dishes, they all glared at him while swearing him "b*stard" tens of thousands of times inside.

The dishes tasted really good. Besides the cooks in Jiang Mansion, some cooks from famous boîtes in Youzhou City were also giving a hand in the kitchen of Jiang Mansion. Of course, the dishes were perfect in color, fragrance and taste.

Zhang Tie was really hungry. From the time he left home last night to now, he had not eaten anything. At first, he traveled 2,000 miles; later on, he made an arrangement in the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province and distributed jobs to his subordinates. Now that the dishes had been served, how could he wait until Master Jiang finished washing his hands in the gold basin? Because he knew that Master Jiang could not wash his hands in the gold basin forever.

Zhang Tie had made the arrangement well. His forces could have started work one hour ago; however, Zhang Tie felt that it would be more effective when Jiang Mansion became more boisterous.

Why would he choose this moment? Because there were more people in the Jiang Mansion at this moment. If Master Jiang was taken away silently, how could Zhang Tie publicize that Zhang Mushen the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province crackdown Heavens Reaching Church? Additionally, the box on the ears of Gobbling Party would not be loud enough. The greater part of these guests at present were my best witnesses.

Zhang Tie felt that he had grown more and more insidious. So what? There were many insidious people in this world!

After thinking about it carefully, Zhang Tie was actually a bit afraid about that. 'If the Heavens Reaching Church rose in revolt

closely after the memorial that Gobbling Party used to impeach me, my crime would be confirmed. If so, not only me, even the entire Huaiyuan Palace and Commander Cheng who was on my side might be involved.'

'The time when Heavens Reaching Church rise in revolt in Youzhou Province really coordinates well with the time when Gobbling Party impeached me.' If having not gotten the evidence, Zhang Tie almost thought that Gobbling Party and Heavens Reaching Church had reached an agreement in advance. However, he could only think about it instead of revealing it to the public. Even though the top three chancellors in Taixia Country dared not blame that Gobbling Party colluded with Heavens Reaching Church. Because this would arouse a big chaos in Taixia Country.

'However, every coin had two sides. Heavens Reaching Church could work as Gobbling Party's dagger towards me and my sharp bolt towards Gobbling Party. The memorial that Gobbling Party used to impeach me could be farsighted words of concerning about the safety of the country and the countrymen and the insidious words for framing me.'

'The property of the memorial could not be determined by the memorial itself, but the result of the wrestle between Heavens Reaching Church and me in Youzhou Province.'

The change in Youzhou Province being hundreds of thousands of miles away could influence the decision-making of Xuanyuan Hill and disturb the public opinions across the country. This was how politics ran! Zhang Tie could not imagine this since he had just come to Taixia Country for a few months. 'Taixia Country was a bigger quagmire than Waii Sub-continent. Now that I've fallen into it, I have to face a lot of uncertainties.'

...

When Zhang Tie was enjoying his food, Master Jiang's old friends and disciples had gone up onto the hathpace and praised

the meritorious deeds and achievements that Master Jiang had made these years as the prelude and pavement to this ceremony. Later on, even that official from the Provincial Construction Administration of Tongzhou Province spoke highly of Master Jiang's meritorious deeds and achievements on the hathpace on behalf of the Administration.

'I wonder whether these guys would like to swallow their words when they knew the real status of Master Jiang as the altar head of Heavens Reaching Church.' Zhang Tie thought.

Knights always had a good appetite. Additionally, Zhang Tie ate fast. When Master Jiang went up onto the hathpace under the gaze of so many people at present and prepared to wash his hands in the gold basin, Zhang Tie had almost finished 2/3 of the dishes on the table.

"Erm", Zhang Tie burped as he touched his belly with a satisfied look and watched the others at the table who were glaring at him, "Come on, it's getting cold!"

'F*ck!' Those guys' eyebrows jumped as they even wanted to spring up and cover the remaining dishes onto Zhang Tie's head, 'Since how long has this b*stard been starving? He's definitely here for food...'

...

On the hathpace, Master Jiang bowed towards all directions with a kind look before straightening up his body.

"My fellowmen, thanks to your favor, I was born in a poor family and had been diligent in my work for over 100 years. I'm already very satisfied with my current achievements. After washing my hands in the gold basin today, I will be free and immerse myself in a landscape. Before washing my hands in the gold basin, according to the custom, I have to ask whether there's any resentment between you and me? If there is, in front of so many friends, we can end it now. Otherwise, after I wash my hands in the gold basin,

I don't want to mention it anymore!"

Actually, these were just words out of rite. Of course, he had already ended his resentment with others before this ceremony.

However, he had to ask about it.

Finding that nobody responded below, Master Jiang was very satisfied. With a big smile, he then walked towards the gold basin which was filled with fresh water. When he wanted to put his hand in the gold basin, an abrupt and loud voice sounded among the crowd below in a lazy way.

"Master Jiang, wait a minute please, there's a resentment that you've not ended yet!"

After hearing this voice, Master Jiang frowned as he glanced over the guests. With a "buzz", all the guests turned around and threw their eye lights towards the origin of the voice.

On the edge of the banquet, a guy slowly stood up as he touched his belly.

Of course, he was Zhang Tie.

Watching Zhang Tie standing up leisurely, all the people at the table widely opened their mouths like seeing a ghost in the daytime.

'Is...is...this guy...making...making trouble here? How dare he make trouble in the ceremony of Master Jiang?'

Feeling the eye lights from Master Jiang and the guests at over 200 tables, those at the same table with Zhang Tie twisted their bodies like sitting on a piece of red-hot iron. It would be too inauspicious if they were mistaken by Master Jiang as the accomplices of Zhang Tie. If they left there right away, under the gazes of over 200 tables of guests, they would look too timid.

Therefore, they felt extremely embarrassed as their faces turned as dark as coal.

Nobody dared to use chopsticks anymore on this occasion.

"Friend, you look a bit strange. Sorry for my poor vision, I don't remember that I met you before. I wonder about the resentment between you and me?"

As he had experienced many big scenes, only after being silent for a couple of seconds, Master Jiang had opened his mouth in a calm pattern like a king. Given his calm look, many guests at present hailed him.

On this occasion, thousands of guests could only widely open their eyes while pricking up their ears.

"There's no resentment between Master Jiang and me. But at the request of others, I have to make trouble here!" Zhang Tie let out a sigh.

"I wonder who told you to do that, my friend?" Master Jiang asked with a big smile.

"It's 2700 million commoners across Youzhou Province. Now that Master Jiang wants to kill them, I have to kill you as a compensation!"

Soon after Zhang Tie's words, a cold breeze had blown over the entire Jiang Mansion. At the same time, the temperature in Jiang Mansion dropped below zero at once.

Closely after that, with a boom, the courtyard wall in the length of over 300 m outside this banquet venue collapsed at once...

All the elite forces of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province poured inside like a black tide...

Chapter 865: Trampling the Old D**chebag to Death

The elite forces in black helmets and armors of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province poured in with shields and battle tools in hands...

In the blink of an eye, some more parts of the courtyard walls of Jiang Mansion had been pushed over while a lot of elites of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province poured in like a black fiery flame and besieged the entire venue.

At the sight of such elites, all the guests felt cold all over as they could only stay still.

"Xiezhi Camp!" Many people at Zhang Tie's table turned pale; some even started to quiver all over.

It was the Xiezhi Camp which pushed over the exterior wall of Jiang Mansion.

Xiezhi was a far-ancient immortal beast worshipped by Hua people. According to the legend, Xiezhi was as large as an adult ox. Besides being covered with black fur, it had a pair of fiery eyes and a horn on its forehead. It was very intelligent and could distinguish between right and wrong, good and evil, allegiance and crafty; abhor evils as deadly foes. At the sight of the evil and treacherous ones, it would kill them with its horn before eating them.

The totem of the yamuns in Taixia Country was Xiezhi. As the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie's official hat was called Xiezhi Hat, which was similar to the horn of a Xiezhi. As it would take him some time to put it on, Zhang Tie didn't wear it.

The most forcible and deterrent force among the subordinates of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province was Xiezhi Camp.

After Huaiyuan Palace took control of Youzhou Province, the

greater part of Breaking Sun Corps and a part of Hurricane Corps had been arranged into Xiezhi Camp and spread over Youzhou Province. They became the most powerful force that Huaiyuan Palace used to rule the province.

In Taixia Country, armies were used to defend enemies from outside while Xiezhi Camp was used to resist enemy from inside.

Based on the standards of Western Continent or Waii Sub-continent, Xiezhi Camp was similar to a super armored police force.

Being composed of the pillar forces of two major corps of Huaiyuan Palace and some local powerhouses in Youzhou Province, although it was called camp, it actually contained 900,000 people, which was equal to the total population of two corps. This was the most powerful force in Zhang Tie's hand. As the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province, of course, Zhang Tie had a good card. Among the judicial agencies in Taixia Country, average criminal hunters were responsible for arresting disperse bandits and criminals while Xiezhi Camp was used to crack down riots.

Over the past 3 months, Xiezhi Camp which was composed of the pillar forces of two major corps of Huaiyuan Palace had already spread over Youzhou Province.

After knowing that Heavens Reaching Church was going to riot in revolt, Zhang Tie directly mobilized the entire Xiezhi Camp.

As the soldiers in Xiezhi Camp had the experience in fighting demons in Waii Sub-continent, undoubtedly, they had a great battle strength; especially the commissioned officers in Xiezhi Camp, most of whom had fought demons. Therefore, their killing qi made people suffocate.

During the period Zhang Tie engulfed the food, the force under the affiliation of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province had already cleaned up the exterior guards of Jiang Mansion. 30,000

elites of Xiezhi Camp had already been in place around Jiang Mansion. The moment Zhang Tie stood up, those elites of Xiezhi Camp had Jiang Mansion under control.

Besides Xiezhi Camp, a lot of powerhouses among the criminal hunters of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province had appeared on the roofs and courtyard walls. With immortal crossbows and heavens tearing nets which could even scare powerhouses, they were glaring at those people in the Mansion.

"At the order of our superior, the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province are here to take down the heretics of Heavens Reaching Church. Anyone who dared move would be killed!" Zhang Yuanshan shouted with a solemn look while entering the venue being escorted by a lot of powerhouses.

At the sight of the soldiers of Xiezhi Camp and Zhang Yuanshan, Master Jiang became still on the arch. He just watched Zhang Tie and replied with a calm voice, "Who're you?"

Zhang Tie slowly pulled off his mask and revealed his original look.

"The dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province!"

"Zhang Mushen!"

"Lion of Youzhou Province!"

At the sight of the excessive, young face, the guests exclaimed at once.

3 months ago, Zhang Tie's image had deepened into people's heart in the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province. On this occasion, the moment Zhang Tie showed his original look, he had been recognized by many people.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile at Master Jiang in the distance before saying, "All the 900,000 soldiers of Xiezhi Camp across Youzhou Province have swarmed out and cleaned up all the bases and heads of Heavens Reaching Church across Youzhou Province. You will

have no time to notice them. Altar Head Jiang, why not fold your hands for capture?'

Master Jiang let out a long sigh of grief before saying, "I've been working so hard in my life so that I could have such properties. I know that wealth could incur disasters. My properties make people jealous. As Huaiyuan Palace has just laid a foundation in Youzhou Province, it needs to expand in all aspects. I planned to wash my hands in the gold basin for the sake of my safety; I've not imagined that I was still one step late. Now that you liked my properties which were made during the past 100 years, you could have just told me about that. I would have directly gifted them to you. Why do you have to kill so many innocent ones and fabricate these crimes for me? I will gift my properties to you only expecting that you could let my old friends and disciples leave safely. From then on, I will be a hermit in deep mountains; pick tea leaves and plant chrysanthemum. How about that?"

After hearing Master Jiang's sigh, the guests were in an uproar.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that this old D**chebag could still make unfounded countercharges at this moment and exonerate himself from the charge while framing Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Tie at the same time. How incorrigible he was!

Zhang Tie sneered, "No matter how talkative you're, you could not escape today. As for whether you're the heretic of Heavens Reaching Church, we only need to take you down and search around Jiang Mansion. To prevent commoners from being killed by your b*stards, I will chop off the head of anyone who dares to block me. Do you think that I will be scared by your brief words? Come on!"

"It seems that you've determined to embezzle my properties and don't intend to leave me alive!" Master Jiang lowered his voice...

"Take him down!" Zhang Tie shouted.

Zhang Yuanshan and two criminal hunters of the Provincial

Court of Youzhou Province instantly charged at Master Jiang at the same time.

"Zhang Mushen the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province wants to embezzle the properties of our master and kill all of us. Brothers, let's fight these sons of bitches officials to death!"

The moment Zhang Yuanshan moved, one of the old d**chebag's disciples had shouted of extremely grief as he directly took a weapon and rushed towards those soldiers of Xiezhi Camp.

Many disciples and servants of that old d**chebag moved too as they wanted to cause a bigger chaos here.

However, they were in Taixia Country. Although not all the officials were good-hearted here, the local administration of civil affairs was clean in compliance with the strict laws and complete system. Few officials dared bully commoners or plunder the properties of commoners across Taixia Country.

Those who attended this ceremony were not silly. They would not directly rush towards those soldiers of Xiezhi Camp at the risk of their lives only because of some guys' instigation. Actually, even if Zhang Tie was arresting those guys' parents and brothers, these guys would hurriedly disassociate themselves from them regardless of the so-called righteousness once the latter ones were related to the Heavens Reaching Church, not to mention that Zhang Tie was catching Master Jiang.

Those who wanted to provoke chaos and charge at soldiers of Xiezhi Camp were waiting for the storm-like bolts of the immortal crossbows.

In a split second, some corpses had lain on the ground like hedgehogs. The small turmoil was appeased at once.

...

Suddenly, two longswords appeared in the hands of Master Jiang

on the arch.

Nobody could imagine about such a change. With a sword qi, Zhang Yuanshan and two powerhouses were sent flying backward from the arch after uttering a muffled harrumph at the same time...

Even one LV 15 battle spirit and two LV 14 battle demons could not defeat Master Jiang.

Zhang Yuanshan's face turned red while a part of his sleeve had been left on the arch. After landing on the ground, Zhang Yuanshan's fingers were still dropping blood while the two LV 14 powerhouses both moved some steps backward and spat out blood at the same time.

With a cracking sound, the long gown of Master Jiang was broken while a pair of wings and a tail suddenly stretched out of his back. He flew off at once.

Among humans, besides knights, no one else could fly. As for those who could speak human words with wings, they could only be minas, parrots or demons.

"Ahh, shadow demon!"

One guest cried as if his anus was being stabbed by someone.

Everyone else was shocked by the words "shadow demon" like suffering from a magnitude Richter 10 earthquake.

Zhang Tie was shocked too. Closely after that, he became excited while a great trembling sense flashed by his spine like current. He soon caught a longsword on his side and threw it towards the shadow demon...

With a fiery flame, the longsword hit that shadow demon who was flapping its wings immediately.

After that, they heard a thunder, which shocked almost the entire Youzhou City. At the same time, its bloody flesh and body

parts fell into the arch, which included broken and burned wings, a greater part of the tail and a strange body being covered with scales whose chest had been penetrated through with a horn on its head. Besides, its eyes were very terrifying...

"...Hua people... 's doomsday is coming...I'm waiting...for you in the hell...ha...ha..."

Although the voice belonged to Master Jiang, the remaining body where the words came from made people tremble with fear.

The pleasant laughter came to an end at once...while that ugly head was trampled to pieces by Zhang Tie...

Zhang Tie didn't know that his image had become extremely brave and fierce in the eyes of the guests.

After moving his foot away from it, Zhang Tie flicked off the blood stains on his clothes...

"Congratulations, Castle Lord, you got one more fruit of plunder!" Heller, who had not talked with Zhang Tie in a while, uttered a voice in Zhang Tie's mind sea...

'Great...'

Zhang Tie couldn't help raising his mouth corners. He then continued to shout with a dignified look, "Topple over the entire Jiang Mansion..."

Chapter 866: Defeating the Heavens Reaching Church

At least by now, Taixia Country was still scared by this heresy's ability to mislead people and the indirect harm that it posed to commoners instead of its direct battle strength.

Last November, after the riot caused by the Heavens Reaching Church in Ganzhou Province was pacified, it was said that the highest level among those insurgents was just LV 13 battle general; even though, the riot in Ganzhou Province still caused a great harm to commoners in Ganzhou Province; even the entire Taixia Country was shocked.

Throughout the past hundreds of years, there were always guys in remote rural areas who liked to play religions; however, those guys were more like spicing up the daily life of provincial courts than being heresies. They used to hide in a small room in a group of ten to dozens. After that, some brain-damaged guys would disguise to be gods or something like "Emperor**", "Heavensman**", "Incarnation of **", etc.. More than 10 cases like this could be found in the archives of each provincial court.

As for such cases, even some bowmen under the leadership of the village constable could clean them up, not to mention those criminal hunters in the provincial courts. Local officials liked these guys the most. Because it would not take them too much time to handle these guys. Additionally, after reporting the cases to the superiors, they could be awarded a lot due to their so-called big achievements. Therefore, those village constables, heads of a group of households and county magistrates would be in an ecstasy of delight like hitting the jackpot.

Whereas, the Heavens Reaching Church was different from the other "heresies" in Ganzhou Province. In only a couple of days, it had heavily inflicted over 10 suburban counties. Even commoners

were threatened to join in the riot. Anyone who disobeyed them would be killed together with his family members. In the suburban counties, all the officials and civil servants in Taixia Country would be killed together with their family members in an extremely cruel way once they fell into the hand of Heavens Reaching Church.

Over the past hundreds of years, the Heavens Reaching Church was the first heresy which caused over 1 million casualties. Therefore, it shocked the entire Taixia Country. Even though the supreme court of Taixia Country had to dispatch their right-hand criminal hunters and powerhouses to Ganzhou so as to handle the follow-up events. Additionally, they dispatched documents to the entire country for arresting the leftover evils of the Heavens Reaching Church.

Until today, even the supreme court of Taixia Country had not imagined that the Heavens Reaching Church was supported by demons, not to mention Zhang Tie.

From today on, Zhang Tie knew that the Heavens Reaching Church would shock the entire country once again.

Because it was not simply a civil strife among humans, but with a more complex background. They had sharply different properties.

Clearly, Zhang Tie knew that he had made another great meritorious deed this time. If not him, nobody across Taixia Country would ever know that the Heavens Reaching Church was supported by demons.

All the subordinates of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province were throwing an eager look at Zhang Tie. Because all of them knew that the dean of the Provincial Court had made a great meritorious deed this time; of course, they also benefited from Zhang Tie's halos.

Although having made a great meritorious deed, Zhang Tie didn't become conceited; instead, he was faintly worried about the last

words that the "Master Jiang" roared when he trampled its head into sh*t.

'The doomsday of Hua people?'

'Is that the old d**chebag's alarmism at the final moment or the shaper means that demons would use to attack Taixia Country and Hua people?'

Zhang Tie thought.

'Pitifully, as the brain structure of demon is greatly different than that of humans, my "Soul Capture Skill" is ineffective to the shadow demon; otherwise, I could even know what other messages does that shadow demon know. This shadow demon is even more advanced than Master Abyan. It's already a battle-spirit demon, which was close to a knight. Such a guy must know a lot after lurking in humans for so long!

Zhang Tie had made a great achievement today; however, a great sense of crisis woke up Zhang Tie who had immersed in the warm family life for a couple of months once again.

Both demons and Gobbling Party were very terrifying forces.

'In order to respond to the situation in the future, I need to improve my battle strength.'

'Come on!' Zhang Tie encouraged himself.

In such a short while, the elites of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province had started to search the Jiang Mansion one inch after another. Zhang Tie was not concerned about that because the Provincial Court had exclusive professionals in this line.

Zhang Tie knew that some items were still buried underground the Jiang Mansion; however, he didn't want to mention it. As the superior, if he considered everything well for his subordinates, his subordinates would have no chance to make meritorious deeds and play their roles. By pretending to be "blind and deaf", he could trigger the initiative of his subordinates.

All the guests and the servants in Jiang Mansion had been isolated by the soldiers of the Provincial Court.

The moment there was a commotion among the guests, the criminal hunters had charged at them. In a split second, they had arrested some guests who came from Gaozhou Province, Yangzhou Province, Mozhou Province and Tongzhou Province; dislocated their jaws and joints all over; bundled them; dragged them onto the vehicles outside and interrogated them on the spot. These people were all members of the Heavens Reaching Church from the other provinces in the territory of the Northeast Military Region who were preparing to contact the old d**chebag Jiang by this chance.

Standing on the arch, Zhang Tie watched the 200-odd dining tables which remained unchanged. He then shook his head. Who would dare continue to eat at this moment? Therefore, all the dining tables have cooled down.'

Each part of that shadow demon's body had been gathered onto the arch. Right on Zhang Tie's side, Zhang Yuanshan observed two experienced coroners examining the corpse of the shadow demon.

When this shadow demon fought Zhang Yuanshan and the two criminal hunters, it suddenly had two longswords in its hands, which were not silver secret items that could be formed in the elements realm which were usually used by knights; but high-end rune weapons. Now that this shadow demon could have 2 weapons out of the air, it must carry a rare space-teleportation equipment. After finding that those ornaments on the corpse of the shadow demon were just common rune equipment, Zhang Yuanshan fetched two experienced coroners and asked them to examine the inside of this corpse carefully.

As long as the space-teleportation equipment was close to the body of its user, it would be effective whether it was on or in the user's body. Of course, people could barely hide a space-teleportation equipment in their body.

When a coroner cut open the skin of the shadow demon's left carpal, a bead as large as a common pearl with exotic metallic luster appeared.

The bead was still bloody. After taking it out using a pair of tweezers, the coroner cleaned it in alcohol. After wiping up it with a piece of dried cloth, he handed it to Zhang Yuanshan. Without examining it, Zhang Yuanshan directly passed it to Zhang Tie respectfully, "Lord, look!"

After taking it, Zhang Tie looked around it in his hand when he found the exotic runes on the surface of the bead.

Zhang Tie then injected his spiritual energy into the bead.

As the demon shadow had just been killed, a part of its spiritual energy still remained in the space tunnel in the bead. Nevertheless, how could Zhang Tie care about such a bit foreign spiritual energy? The moment he ran his spiritual energy, it had charged at the remaining spiritual energy of the demon shadow like a ground-breaking tsunami. As a result, the remaining spiritual energy in the bead instantly disappeared like how a sand fortress was destroyed by a flood.

A space appeared in front of Zhang Tie's eyes.

This space was about 5 m in length, width and height respectively, which was nearly 4 times larger than that of the demon general.

Like what he had seen in the space of the portable space-teleportation equipment of demon general, Zhang Tie also saw a pile of gold coins, weapons, food, fresh water, vials, jars and mirrors. Right, mirrors, the same as that in the backroom of Master Abyan. It seemed to be a peculiarity of shadow demons. At the sight of something else, Zhang Tie was so scared that he even felt goosebumps all over his body.

Zhang Tie then moved over 20 naked, well-preserved female

human corpses onto the arch out of the space-teleportation equipment, which scared those in the surroundings.

Zhang Tie had people cover those female corpses before letting out a sigh, "Go investigate the cases of missing women in the residence of this old d**chebag. If their information matched those in the cases, contact their family members; as for the unidentified ones, just bury them properly!"

Zhang Tie sighed inside, 'All the shadow demons are abnormal. Just like Master Abyan, this old d**chebag had lost its wife and didn't marry any woman over for many years; although it disguised to be sentimental in the public, it had done so many evil things secretly.'

Those female corpses were soon carried away by the soldiers of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.

"Lord, we found something over there!"

The moment the female corpses were carried away, an official of the Provincial Court had trotted towards Zhang Tie and invited him to take a look over there.

...

In the basement of Jiang Mansion, there was an extremely hidden dungeon. The moment Zhang Tie entered the dungeon, he had heard a hysterical roar like pigs which were going to be slaughtered.

"B*stard, you old d**chebag. Let me off. Do you know who I am? When this father is out of here, I will kill all your family members and pick off your head and make it a urinal; I will explode your anus with a red-hot iron rode and rape all of your women tens of thousands of times before selling them to the lowest-rank brothels. This father will pay 100 gold coins to anyone who could f*ck them for. You old d**chebag, old dick, let me out of there..."

Along the source of the voice, Zhang Tie saw a disheveled fat roar

in the dungeon-like being mad.

It seemed that this guy had suffered a lot of tortures here. However, he still looked energetic. His original clothes were not bad; however, they had become cloth strips. Hanging over his body, they seemed to have been caused by whips, because the blood traces could be seen under those stripes...

"Who's him?"

"He said he was Zhu Dabiao, the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province. As I dare not make the decision, I invite Your Lord to deal with him!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he knew what the official meant. 'If this guy is really the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province, I'd better save him out of there myself so as to indicate that I paid special attention to him.'

'Yangzhou Province is one of the upper 36 provinces in Taixia Country and the most prosperous part in the Northeast Military Region. Even though the Northeast Military Region Headquarter is located in Yangzhou Province. If this guy is really the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province, he must be rich. But why would Zhu Dabiao stay here? Wait...Zhu Dabiao...this name sounds a bit familiar, it seems that I've heard about it before...Ahh...I got it...When I was in the Land Bureau of Youzhou Province, the clerk said that the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province had bought a patch of land which covered over 200,000 square miles in Youzhou Province...'

When Zhang Tie walked over there, Zhu Dabiao who was roaring instantly caught sight of him and those subordinates on Zhang Tie's side. When he saw them wearing togas of Provincial Court, Zhu Dabiao instantly stopped roaring as he widely opened his eyes...

"Who're you?" Zhu Dabiao asked Zhang Tie.

Zhu Dabiao was really fat. Even though he opened his eyes, he could only show a narrow gap between his eyelids; when he tried to widely open his eyes, his eyes were just as large as that of normal people, which looked a bit ridiculous.

"Help Childe Zhu open the door!" Zhang Tie waved his hand instead of answering him.

"Humph, humph, whether you were dispatched by that old d**chebag surnamed Jiang? Do you think you could get this father hooked only after changing some sets of clothes to the uniform of Provincial Court?" Zhu Dabiao sneered as he crossed his arms and continued, "Do you really take this father as an idiot? This father had already been fed up with this trick at the age of 8! It might be better if you use honey-trap at this moment."

"Shut up, this is Lord Zhang, Zhang Mushen, the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province!" Zhang Yuanshan scolded him.

The provincial governor of Yanzhou Province might scare him a bit; however, honestly, the grandson of the provincial governor of Yangzhou Province was not qualified to be arrogant in front of Zhang Yuanshan. Even a spirited LV 9 county magistrate in Taixia Country didn't need to be polite to the grandson of a provincial governor. This was a feature of Taixia Country. Although descendants of major clans were rich, they were not qualified to be arrogant in front of the officials of Taixia Country.

With a cracking sound, the door of Zhu Dabiao's cell was opened.

Zhu Dabiao changed his face and attempted to walk out of the gate of the dungeon; after finding that the others were just watching him instead of catching him, he moved his eyes onto Zhang Tie, "Are you...the real...Lion of Youzhou Province?"

Zhang Tie responded with a smile, "When I went to the Land Bureau of Youzhou Province a couple of days ago, I was told that Childe Zhu had purchased over 200,000 square miles' land in

Youzhou Province and had just paid it in the bank. How did you get here?"

Zhu Dabiao gazed at Zhang Tie as his eyes gradually turned wet. All of a sudden, he rushed forward and embraced Zhang Tie like a person who was going to be drown suddenly caught a buoy or someone who suddenly embraced his relative after departing with him for decades. Closely after that, he burst out into tears while dropping nasal mucus, "Ahh, my god, thankfully, you came. If you were two days late, I would have been killed or tortured to death by that old d**chebag. I almost collapsed mentally and physically. I've not enjoyed many things. I'm only 27 years old; I'm still a virgin. I don't wanna die. Even though when I was surrounded by 7 beauties in the Heavens Leaning Pavilion last time, I had stuck to my bottom line. I don't wanna die here. I've made appointed with Chunlian that I would be a real man at 30, wuhwuhwuhwuh..."

Childe Zhu's "cries" sounded so miserable that those onlookers even felt like crying for him. When he cried, he kept grumbling. Not knowing how long he had been locked in here and what mistreat had he experienced, Zhang Tie became wordless about how Zhu Dabiao vented his emotions. Zhang Tie could not imagine that a tough guy who had been clamoring and swearing in the cell suddenly turned into a such a tearful person...

"Ahem..ahem..." Zhang Tie cleared his throat as he felt that he would have to change his clothes if he was further embraced by Zhu Dabiao. After comforting Childe Zhu by patting his back, Zhang Tie slowly moved the hands of Childe Zhu away, "Childe Zhu, the old d**chebag that you mentioned has been executed. I suggest you have your doctor examine your health after exiting. As you've stayed here for a few days, you'd better ensure that you're not inflicted by any disease!"

After hearing this, Zhu Dabiao hurriedly stopped crying. After venting his emotions, he looked around before wiping his tears off. Zhu Dabiao then suddenly felt being a bit embarrassed as he

watched Zhang Tie and asked with an unconfident voice, "What I said...just now..."

"Have you heard about that?" Zhang Tie asked those on his side.

"Besides hearing that Childe Zhu swore the old d**chebag Jiang heroically in the cell, we heard nothing else!" A guy said wisely after exchanging a glance with all the others while the others nodded.

Zhang Tie then smiled, "Although being in a dilemma, Childe Zhu still defied steadfastly all brutal forces heroically. You're really an admirable posterity of the famous clan! In this world, those merciless are all contemptible; those who drop tears are all heroes; we don't need to care too much about the trivial things such as dropping tears."

After hearing this, Zhu Dabiao was deeply moved as his eyes turned red. While Zhang Tie was worried that he would burst out into tears once again, Zhu Dabiao forcefully patted his thick, big hands onto Zhang Tie's shoulder twice before saying, "From today on, you're my good brother!"

...

The moment he came to the ground, Zhu Dabiao had started to sniff the air while forcefully swallowing his saliva, "This is braised venison...this is bear palm with honey...f*ck, and...and Eight-Treasure mountainous delicacies..."

Before Zhang Tie invited him to eat, Zhu Dabiao had darted towards the banquet like a wild ox...

After exchanging a glance with each other, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yuanshan both wondered inside, 'Is this grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province a dog or something? How could he have such a sharp smell? He's over 100 m away from the banquet...'

Zhang Tie shook his head...

When Zhang Tie and Zhang Yuanshan arrived there, they found

Zhu Dabiao was holding a bear palm with one hand and a roasted chicken with another hand while chewing something; at the same time, he was trampling the corpse of that shadow demon forcefully like a witch on the arch, causing the corpse to badly mutilate. Besides, he kept swearing, "You whip me...whip me..."

At this moment, Zhang Yuanshan whispered to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie became faintly stunned before asking, "Does this work?"

"If you hunt and kill an evil person, these properties should be confiscated and submitted to the government. However, according to the regulation in the Laws of Taixia Country, now that the old d**chebag Jiang is a demon, all of its properties will become your trophies, Your Lord. As the Laws of Taixia Country are supreme in Taixia Country, we need to handle affairs according to the supreme law. Therefore, everything in the Jiang Mansion, even those under the name of the old d**chebag Jiang belong to you, Your Lord!" Zhang Yuanshan whispered.

Touching that space-teleportation equipment in his hand, Zhang Tie considered about it for a couple of seconds before saying, "You can make a plan to share those trophies with all the subordinates of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province. Just take it as my red packet, which symbolizes a good start!"

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Yuanshan bowed towards Zhang Tie respectfully, "Yes, sir, Your Merciful Lord!"

...

In such a short period, being tortured by the strict means of the Provincial Court, those members of Heavens Reaching Church who had been taken away for interrogation had admitted their background and their target here...

"It's time to notice the Northeast Military Region and the other provincial courts. Celerity is the most important affair in war.

Don't let those guys escape in advance..." Zhang Tie issued the order...

...

On January 1st of the 900th year of Black Iron Calendar, namely, the first day of the lunar new year...

In one day, Zhang Mushen the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province had dispatched over 900,000 soldiers of Xiezhi Camp across Youzhou Province and coordinated with elite criminal hunters to arrest and kill over 17,000 believers of Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou Province and destroy 37 secret bases...

On the same day, after receiving the intelligence from the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province, the powerhouses from all the provincial courts in Northeast Military Region had launched an emergency action on the same evening and captured so many believers of Heavens Reaching Church lurking in the territory of Northeast Military Region. As a result, the forces of Heavens Reaching Church across the Northeast Military Region had almost been destroyed.

After a couple of days, the plot that the Heavens Reaching Church was going to rise in revolt in Youzhou Province, even the entire Northeast Military Region was revealed to the public.

After knowing that the Heavens Reaching Church was going to rise in revolt across Northeast Military Region in the new year festival, many people oozed sweat.

After coming to Taixia Country for a few months, Zhang Tie's name had become well-known even out of the Northeast Military Region. The nickname Lion of Youzhou Province started to spread across Taixia Country for the first time...

On January 4th, Commander Cheng's airship arrived at Youzhou City once again...

Chapter 867: The Second Arrival of Commander Cheng

If the Heavens Reaching Church was just a heresy, even though Zhang Tie made much greater achievements in Youzhou Province, he would not attract Commander Cheng here; however, Zhang Tie unveiled the existence of "demons" in the Heavens Reaching Church. Therefore, the property of the Heavens Reaching Church was far more than a heresy...

Actually, it was a big event that shocked the entire Taixia Country.

On September 4th, Commander Cheng's airboat landed in White Tiger Complex.

Zhang Taixuan, Zhang Tie, Elder Muyu and a lot of officials in Youzhou City were welcoming the arrival of Commander Cheng.

Zhu Dabiao, the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province was also standing on Zhang Tie's side.

As his grandson was captured by demons, Zhu Tong the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province followed Commander Cheng to Youzhou City too.

After coming out of the dungeon for only a few days, Zhu Dabiao's face had turned oily smooth once again. In a white bear cloth and an Aleutian mink scarf, he was standing on Zhang Tie's side while his face turned red due to cold.

The news that Zhang Tie cracked down the Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou Province had been spread over the entire country; however, Zhu Dabiao was ignored in both public news or gossips.

The provincial governor of Yanzhou Province owed Zhang Tie a lot. If his grandson fell in the hand of the Heavens Reaching Church and demons, regardless of the result, Zhu Clan would lose

their face due to the public opinions; if some bad guys took advantage of this event, Zhu Clan might have a lot of troubles.

'Taixia Country is not a Shangrila.' This was what Zhang Tie learned during the past few months.

When the airboat slowly descended, all those on the ground were spirited, except for Zhu Dabiao who faintly let out a sigh.

"Aren't you happy?" Zhang Tie turned around and asked him.

Zhu Dabiao had been staying in the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province these days. As he had been tortured so much in the dungeon of Jiang Mansion, he felt that nowhere else in Youzhou City was safe. According to his description, he was living in a deluxe hotel in Youzhou City; however, when he woke up, he found that he had come to the dungeon of Jiang Mansion. His bodyguards might have been killed. After such an experience, this guy would never go to other hotels in Youzhou City anymore.

The Provincial Court was also cleaning up the remnants of the Heavens Reaching Church these days. As the one who was abducted by the Heavens Reaching Church, Zhu Dabiao had touched that old d**chebag for a few times; therefore, he knew about the old d**chebag more or less. He then made a confession in the Provincial Court and stayed there for a few days so as to tide over this event.

During the period he stayed in the Provincial Court, Zhu Dabiao became familiar with Zhang Tie. They had the same likes and dislikes. Therefore, they dispelled their misgivings in the talk.

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Zhu Dabiao let out a sigh with a sorrowful look before replying, "You might not believe in it. I've not seen my grandpa for 5-6 years. I might not have talked with him much. If not I was abducted in Youzhou City, he might not even know me."

"Ahh? Are you kidding me?" Zhang Tie blinked his eyes. Based on

his warm family atmosphere, Zhang Tie could not imagine what Zhu Dabiao depicted could exist in a family.

"My grandpa has 87 children. My dad ranks 63rd in the family. He's not outstanding among the rest. Besides my mom, my dad married other 20-odd women. My mom ranks 14th among the women of my dad. I have 34 sisters and brothers and I rank 24th. Plus my dad's branch, by last year when I left Youzhou Province, my grandpa almost had 800 grandchildren. The figure keeps rising. You tell me who I am?" Zhu Dabiao rubbed his face as he continued, "The old thing is the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province. Besides handling documents, he would enter meditation. Therefore, I've met him less than 20 times since I was born. In most cases, I only saw him in the new year festival or when we offered sacrifices to our ancestors. I remember that the old thing talked with me when I was 6 years old. He asked my name in the Shrine Palace at that time. When he talked with me for the second time, I had already been 12 years old and awakened my first ancestral bloodline..."

'Old thing?' Zhang Tie was wordless when he heard the "respectful form of address" from Zhu Dabiao. Given his words, Zhang Tie finally knew why major clans always had different affections.

But it was reasonable. Nobody could look after each of his 80-90 sons well if he had. Although knights were powerful, they only had 24 hours a day too, unless the family was living in a tower of time. In the position of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province, he had to handle public affairs, meditate, eat and sh*t; occasionally, he had to focus on either producing more babies or relax himself. Therefore, he had less time left in the day. Even if he had some time left, he had to divide it into 80-90 units. When the 80-90 people had babies, how much attention would the juniors get from him?

Zhang Tie knew that Zhu Dabiao's words were not peculiar;

instead, it was a common phenomenon in major clans of Taixia Country. It was too normal for a knight to have over 100 babies in a major clan. Sometimes, the continuation of a knight's bloodline was not only related to the knight himself; but also to the multiplication of the entire clan; especially the knights who had awakened ancestral bloodlines had to assume responsibility to give birth to babies for the clan. It was not a joke.

Actually, after settling down in Taixia Country for a few months, Zhang Tie had already sensed the stress from Huaiyuan Palace. The elders in the Palace had already started to imply him to marry more concubines and have more babies. If not Zhang Tie had become an elder of Huaiyuan Palace and made a great meritorious deed in the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, he might have been f*cked by a lot of women arranged by the other elders.

"No way! Haven't you just bought over 200,000 square miles' land in Youzhou Provincie? It's worth at least 20 million gold coins. How could you be so poor in your family?" Zhang Tie asked.

Compared to the patch of land that Zhang Tie bought on the side of Yanghe Prefecture, the patch of land that Zhu Dabiao bought was a bit more remote; therefore, it was cheaper. Additionally, given that he was the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province, the Land Bureau of Youzhou Province had made a discount for him.

When Commander Cheng's airboat was about dozens of meters above the ground, Zhang Tie, Zhu Dabiao, Zhang Taixuan and Elder Muyu walked forward.

"I'm the only son of my mom. That money came from my mother's case-dough, my brothers, my friends, my mother's father and my mother's brothers. Given that I'm the grandson of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province, the Yanzhou Bank even lend a loan to me!" As Zhu Dabiao explained, he silently daubed some pepper oil that he had prepared onto the place below his

lower eyelids. In a split second, his eyes had turned red while his face had been covered with tears, "For this trade, I even gotten my 9th younger sister's "lucky money" by cheating her. How poor I am! In order to be not found by her, I even dared not come back in this new year festival..."

'F*ck! How could this j*rk use a little girl's lucky money as an investment?'

The moment the hatch door of the airboat was opened, before those inside came out, Zhu Dabiao had wailed mournfully and charged at that direction like having felt wronged in a gesture like how a young swallow returned to its nestle, "Grandpa..."

At this moment, some figures appeared at the hatch door of the airboat, one was the commander of the Northeast Military Region, one on the side of Commander Cheng was Zhu Tong, the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province who had a high forehead, slim eyes and white snow hair on the temples. Behind them were the two young knights whom Zhang Tie had seen on the other bank of the river when he washed tablewares at the riverside.

"Welcome, Mr. Commander!"

All the officials of Youzhou Province bowed towards Commander Cheng while Zhu Dabiao instantly held Zhu Dong closely and burst out into tears, "Grandpa...as grandson is low in battle strength, I fell into the hand of demons; thankfully, grandson always kept grandpa's instructions in mind and didn't lose face for Zhu Clan. I didn't agree with the old d**chebag's request and swear to not betray Taixia Country...grandson had determined to die for righteousness; I've not imagined that I was finally saved by the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province at the crucial moment..."

After hearing his grandson's words, Zhu Tong faintly relieved his solemn face.

He then directly moved his eyes on Zhang Tie.

"When we found Childe Zhu, he was locked in the dungeon of Jiang Mansion by the shadow demon of Heavens Reaching Church. Although Childe Zhu's clothes had been whipped into stripes, he still didn't succumb to the demons. How righteous he was! Additionally, he kept swearing that old d**chebag in the dungeon. What an admirable man!" Zhang Tie said with a solemn look.

Although it was a praise, Zhang Tie was not telling a lie, though he omitted the later embarrassed deeds of Zhu Dabiao. Although Zhu Dabiao came from a major clan, he could still stand being tortured at the key moment, that was why Zhang Tie liked him. If Zhu Dabiao was a timid guy and was not righteous in the key place, even if Zhang Tie had saved him out of there, Zhang Tie would directly ignore him. How could he allow such a person to live in the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province?

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Provincial Governor Zhu completely relieved his solemn look. After slightly patting Zhu Dabiao who was crying aloud, "These years, grandpa didn't pay much attention to you. Sorry for what you've experienced. Through this event, I find that you have a bit of masculinity. Although you don't have a talent, you have health. Hmm, not bad, not bad..."

...

In the hub of the White Tiger Complex, Zhang Tie's words shocked Commander Cheng.

"Mr. Commander, I plan to resign the position as the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province!"

...

Chapter 868: No Zuo No Die

Based on Zhang Tie's temperament, he would definitely fight back after being beaten. Now that the resentment between Zhang Clan and the Gobbling Party could not be resolved and the Gobbling Party provoked Zhang Tie in such a vicious way, Zhang Tie had to launch a counterattack.

'Eye for an eye. The public opinion is not controlled by the Gobbling Party. Now that the Gobbling Party could take advantage of the public opinion, I could also take advantage of it.'

'In order to help Huaiyuan Palace root in Taixia Country deeply, I have to take this chance to make Gobbling Party the target of public criticism.

'Someone in Zhang Clan has to stand out to be diametrically opposed to the Gobbling Party. It seems that I'm the most proper person as of now. The Gobbling Party is targeting at me. I am also the most competent one who could launch a counterattack to the Gobbling Party.'

Zhang Tie had communicated with Zhang Taixuan and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace about this plan. All of them supported his decision.

Before Zhu Dabiao met Zhu Tong, he daubed some pepper oil on his lower eyelids. Zhang Tie did the same thing when he requested to resign his position as the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.

The function of the pepper oil remained unchanged. Zhu Dabiao used it to move his grandpa while Zhang Tie used it to move the commoners across Taixia Country and the tycoons in the Xuanyuan Hill on behalf of Huaiyuan Palace.

"Now that I could resign this position, I could also take it up again. After all, nobody else could grab it away from me in

Youzhou Province. However, there's a big learning about the resignation. As the old saying went, you take a step back to have a bigger world in front of you."

Zhang Tie was not taking a step back.

It was Zhu Dabiao who taught Zhang Tie to do this.

As the grandson of the Provincial Governor of Yanzhou Province, Zhu Dabiao was very familiar with the affairs in the imperial court and the official circles.

The event that Su Qianling the imperial official in charge of the discipline of the public functionaries in the censorate of Xuanyuan Hill was not a secret in a certain circle of the Northeast Military Region in Taixia Country. The resentment between Huaiyuan Palace and the Gobbling Party was not a secret either. Before coming to Youzhou Province, Zhu Dabiao had heard his father talk about it. Therefore, he was familiar with this event.

Therefore, during the days when Zhu Dabiao lived in the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province, he worked out such an idea for Zhang Tie.

In the beginning, Zhang Tie felt that Zhu Dabiao was joking; whereas, he gradually realized the subtlety of this idea. After considering it for some time, Zhang Tie finally adopted this idea.

On January 6th, after Commander Cheng arrived at Youzhou City, Zhang Tie officially resigned.

As he had long made some preparations, on the same day when Zhang Tie resigned, the entire Youzhou City had been shocked. Along with the message that Zhang Tie resigned was the memorial that Su Qianling used to impeach Zhang Mushen, the new dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province for the dereliction of his duty and the resentment between the Gobbling Party and Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace...

In one day, the reputation of Su Qianling the imperial official in

the censorate of Xuanyuan Hill had become notorious in Youzhou City. Numerous commoners were swearing the Gobbling Party in all the pubs and hotels across Youzhou City.

Before the Heavens Reaching Church rose in revolt, they had been nipped by Zhang Tie. As a result, numerous commoner families survived. However, such a talented dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province had been forced by the Gobbling Party and an insidious villain in the censorate to resign only after taking the office for less than 3 months. After hearing this news, of course, all the commoners across Youzhou City became infuriated.

On the same day, the Gobbling Party and Su Qianling the imperial official in the censorate of Xuanyuan Hill were sent above the grill. As this message gradually spread over, the fire below the grill grew fiercer. The more troubles did the Heavens Reaching Church make, the greater destruction it would cause to the Gobbling Party as more furious would the official circles and folks in Taixia be about the Gobbling party. Because the only dean of Provincial Court in Taixia Country who cracked down the Heavens Reaching Church was pushed aside by the Gobbling Party for the sake of its own benefit, Heavens Reaching Church grew more and more aggressive. The fury of commoners and officials in Taixia Country was not only stabbing the Gobbling Party; it could rock the foundation of the Gobbling Party in Taixia Country like a bloodless saber.

This time, Zhang Tie knew that he had completely offended the Gobbling Party in Taixia Country.

'From the start, the Gobbling Party has not spared any chance to me and Huaiyuan Palace to negotiate with them. Even though I could stand it this time, I would only be regarded as weak and easily bullied by the Gobbling Party. Kind-hearted men would always be bullied while kind horses would always be ridden by people. This rule always works.'

However, the Gobbling Party might not imagine that they could

encounter such an overwhelming counterattack so fast.

'No zuo no die——After this time, the Gobbling Party must know the meaning of this proverb. When the Gobbling Party wants to deal with me and Huaiyuan Palace, they have to think well about it. How could the posterities of Lord Huaiyuan be easily bullied by others? Now that Lord Huaiyuan could slap the face of the Gobbling Party and almost seal the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele, his posterities must be not easily bullied.

The day before yesterday, after knowing that Zhang Tie was going to resign in the White Tiger Complex, Commander Cheng didn't express his opinion. After a couple of days, when Zhang Tie put this event into effect, Commander Cheng had people summon Zhang Tie. He wanted to talk with Zhang Tie before Zhang Tie left Youzhou Province.

After arriving at Youzhou City, Commander Cheng had been focusing on the event of the Heavens Reaching Church. Besides listening to the report from all parties, he even reviewed all the material evidence about the Heavens Reaching Church's riot. Additionally, he entered the prison of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province to interrogate the believers of the Heavens Reaching Church and check the corpse of that shadow demon.

When he escorted Commander Cheng, Zhang Tie didn't see any smile on the black face of Commander Cheng.

On the evening of January 5th, Commander Cheng's airboat left Youzhou City for Changshan Prefecture.

This time, the Heavens Reaching Church developed a force of over 10,000 people in some suburban counties of Changshan Prefecture. Pitifully, before those guys rose in revolt, their nestle had been destroyed by the Xiezhi Camp dispatched by Zhang Tie. As a result, all the heads of Heavens Reaching Church in Changshan Prefecture were under arrest. All the others were caught according to the name-list too. During this couple of days,

before the backbone figures of Heavens Reaching Church were escorted to Youzhou City from Changshan Prefecture, a well-preserved sacrificial altar was discovered in Changshan Prefecture. Therefore, Commander Cheng couldn't wait to fly towards Changshan Prefecture overnight.

Zhang Tie should go there together with Commander Cheng; however, as he had determined to resign, he had to play it to the end. At this critical moment, the words of resignation would have the best effect and make people feel being wronged the most; therefore, Zhang Tie resigned on the same day.

When Commander Cheng's airboat returned from Changshan Prefecture, it passed by Youzhou City; therefore, Commander Cheng wanted to see Zhang Tie. After receiving the message, Zhang Tie, who was in the Huaiyuan Mansion looked up and found that huge dragon-shaped airboat was hovering about 3,000 m above Youzhou City. Zhang Tie then directly shot into the sky. In a split second, he had arrived at the airboat.

At this moment, the movable half-closed crystal cover on the deck of airboat slid off. Seeing the young knight on the side of Commander Cheng nodding towards him, Zhang Tie directly landed on the deck.

Zhang Tie had met this young knight 3 times, once on the riverside, twice in White Tiger Complex.

This young man was called Gao Tianqi, the trusted subordinate of Commander Cheng. His position was military governor under Commander Cheng in Northeast Military Region. He took charge of the soldiers and guards in the Northeast Military Region and work as the inspective attendant. In Taixia Country, all those who could take this office on the side of the commander were cultivated by the commander himself. They would probably take the office of a provincial governor in the future. Therefore, this position was also called "Provincial Governor's Seed" in Taixia Country.

This was told by Zhu Dabiao. If not, it would take Zhang Tie some days to understand it.

"Brother Tianqi!" Zhang Tie cupped his hands towards Gao Tianqi modestly.

"Young elder Mushen, Commander Cheng is waiting for you. " Gao Tianqi always looked kind and didn't put on airs as the trusted subordinate of Commander Cheng. It felt pretty comfortable to be with such a kind person.

Zhang Tie also wondered why this guy's temperament was not influenced by Commander Cheng's bad temper after staying with Commander Cheng for so many years. It was hard for commoners to maintain their temperaments unchanged in front of a shadow knight. Gao Tianqi directly led Zhang Tie into the airboat.

Although Zhang Tie had taken airboat many times, he was still shocked by this one. It was too large. Zhang Tie kept exclaiming inside.

It was spacious and bright inside the airboat. Part of the inner space of the airboat looked larger than a football court. Besides plants, there was also a fountain pond inside. The highest tree was over 10 m in height. Additionally, Zhang Tie saw colorful carps slowly swimming in the fountain pond. In the airboat, you could not identify whether you were in the sky or in the park on the ground at all.

In front of such an airboat, all the so-called luxurious aircraft and airboats were nothing but sh*t.

When Zhang Tie walked, he looked around out of his curiosity.

"How many soldiers could this airboat carry one time?"

"Hehe...if there's any need, this airboat could throw 50,000 full-armored elite soldiers into any place within the territory of 30,000 square miles in 24 hours or carry the same number of soldiers to any place in the territory of Taixia Country within 2 weeks."

"You mean two airboats like this could throw a super demon corps into any place of Taixia Country in a short period?"

Gao Tianqi replied with a smile...

Chapter 869: A Soldier Crossing the River

In a very spacious room of the airboat, Zhang Tie saw Cheng Honglie.

Commander Cheng was standing in front of a porthole with his hands crossed on his back and watching the ground below. After taking Zhang Tie inside, Gao Tianqi silently closed the door and left the room.

As Commander Cheng was tall and robust, even though he stood still over there, he was still like a pillar and made Zhang Tie feel dejected.

Zhang Tie was guessing the intention of Commander Cheng. Right then, a faint qi of a shadow knight caused a great stress to him. Being influenced by such a great stress and the rotating chakras of Commander Cheng, Zhang Tie's chakra slowed down.

'Is this the power of a shadow knight?' Zhang Tie was shocked inside.

All of a sudden, Commander Cheng's battle qi expanded and started to push towards Zhang Tie like an iron wall.

It was like bulldozers driving towards him from all directions. In this space, Zhang Tie felt that four-iron walls were gradually moving towards him like wrapping a dumpling. He almost became suffocated.

Zhang Tie didn't know what Commander Cheng meant by doing this to him. However, he had no time to think too much about that at this moment. If he didn't take any measures to respond to it, Commander Cheng's battle qi would definitely wound him severely.

With a roar, Zhang Tie widely opened his furious eyes; at the same time, he released his protective battle qi and punched hundreds of times in one second towards his surrounding space so

as to completely seal it by imitating the metallic battle qi of the "Five-element ground-look sutra", colluding with Commander Cheng's battle qi ferociously.

With the property of sharpness, metallic battle qi as firm as the iron wall was used to defend which could not be rocked by commoners.

At this moment, a rumbling of muffled thunders rolled in the room; however, the rumbling was limited in a small space around Zhang Tie.

The battle qi that pushed towards Zhang Tie was repelled. However, when Zhang Tie thought that it really moved back, it came back in a more berserk way. The moment it touched Zhang Tie's protective battle qi, it had made Zhang Tie's heart pound due to the amazement. When Zhang Tie wanted to launch a counterattack once again, the battle qi disappeared at once like a life-giving spring breeze and rain.

In only a few seconds, Zhang Tie's back had oozed fine sweat drops...

Zhang Tie had not experienced such a life or death feeling for a long time. It was a wrestle between knights. As Zhang Tie knew that Commander Cheng wouldn't wound him, he didn't make his full efforts to respond to it just now. However, Zhang Tie was a bit scared by the helpless constriction caused by the sharp difference in realms and levels between him and Commander Cheng. It was his first time to sense the terror of a shadow knight.

Commander Cheng turned around and watched Zhang Tie with an extremely profound look, "If it were a heavens knight just now, you would have already died!" Commander Cheng told Zhang Tie after pausing for 2 seconds, "Am I clear? For a heavens knight to kill a black iron knight is as easy as a LV 9 fighter killing a commoner."

After being silent for a second, Zhang Tie replied, "Commander

Cheng, Are you reminding me that I'm risking my life by doing that? I heard the head of the Gobbling Party is a heavens knight who has formed 4 chakras."

Commander Cheng replied with a solemn look, "Since the day you promoted to a knight, you should have known that your punch is the most reliable thing in this world. Because all the disputes in this world have their rules. For the final analysis, the one with the most powerful punch would win the battle. If Lord Huaiyuan was already a heavens knight at that time and directly sealed the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele by force, there would not be any Gobbling Party. However, Gobbling Party has controlled the imperial court; how could you defeat them?"

"So what?" Zhang Tie raised his head stubbornly as he watched Commander Cheng in a recalcitrant expression, "I don't care whether the Gobbling Party has controlled the imperial court or not; I don't care whether do they have a heavens knight or not. Perhaps, a heavens knight could be an unrivaled overlord in other sub continents and continents, I don't think that the Gobbling Party and a heavens knight could shout out the heavens with one palm in Taixia Country. As long as I don't violate the Laws of Taixia Country , I don't believe that the head of the Gobbling Party dares to hurt me. He's just the master of the crown prince; he's not one of the top three chancellors yet. As the Gobbling Party dare attack Huaiyuan Palace, I dare launch a counterattack towards them. Huaiyuan Palace was forced to leave Taixia Country before; in the worst scenario, we will leave once again. If Lord Huaiyuan dared do that, his offsprings would dare do that too!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Commander Cheng slowly raised his dense eyebrows, "If the Gobbling Party request to reconcile with you and promise you a bright future, what will you do then?"

After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie replied solemnly, "I didn't read too many books. However, I remember a paragraph in a book that I've ever read. It was told by a historian before the

Catastrophe——In a dirty country, if everyone was in compliance with the rules instead of just talking about morality, the dirty country would finally become a human-friendly normal country and everyone would be moral. However, in a clean country, if everyone was not in compliance with the rules but speak highly of morality, righteousness and selflessness every day, this country would finally deteriorate into a dirty country being covered with hypocrites. At least 8 of 10 people who speak highly of morality, righteousness and selflessness every day are thinking about behaving like thieves and prostitutes. The most shameless thing is always done by those who speak highly of mercy, righteousness and morality. I feel dirty to be with them even if you give me a continent. It's not even as clean as my courtyard!" Zhang Tie gradually became generous, "If I could be born hundreds of years earlier, I would definitely try my best to seal the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele together with Lord Huaiyuan in case the Gobbling Party abducted the natural rules to scourge the entire country!"

"You mean you're sniffing at the mercy, righteousness and morality?"

"In this world, some things could only be done practically instead of being mentioned every time and then. You could not show it off and request others to do this. Mercy, righteousness and morality are like making love, which is used to sustain human bloodlines; during this period, the couple should respect each other as a human ethic. It's of a great significance and you could make it; however, if you talk about it every time and then; even just perform it in the public, you're obscene, shameless and demoralizing. If you perform it yourself and force others to perform it like you, you are bewildering the countrymen. The Gobbling Party is using the mercy, righteousness and morality advocated by the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele to rule the entire world. If the Gobbling Party became the ruling party in Taixia Country, Taixia would definitely deteriorate into a country

full of beasts. I don't feel that I'm noble; I show my respect to those who could practice mercy, righteousness and morality very much; however, I'm too ashamed to be with the Gobbling Party!"

"Hmm, great!" Commander Cheng couldn't stand clapping his hands forcefully with gleaming eyes, "Mercy, righteousness and morality are like making love, which could only be done privately instead of being performed in the public. What a great metaphor!" Commander Cheng felt moved as he started to look at Zhang Tie in a different eye light, "What an offspring of Huaiyuan Palace! You have such a deep understanding about the essence of the Gobbling Party and maintain such a firm and evident stance. Additionally, you have both braveness and intelligence. Hmm, you don't let me down!"

Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed. Even an outsider like him sniffed at the vicious trick of the Gobbling Party, not to mention the resentment between the Gobbling Party and Huaiyuan Palace, "Thanks for your excessive appreciation, Commander Cheng!"

"It's not an excessive appreciation, you do good and I say good; you do bad and I say bad. Very few people could win my appreciation, you're one of them!" Commander Cheng put it straight, "I have things to tell you so that you could know better what you're doing; otherwise, you might not know if you're trapped!"

Zhang Tie's heart raced at once as he hurriedly cupped his hands and said, "Thanks for your guidance, Commander Cheng!"

"You're not the only one who could figure out the essence of the Gobbling Party. However, do you know why nobody dared to oppose the Gobbling Party till now? Do you think that the top three chancellors and 9 ministers in Xuanyuan Hill are good for nothing?" Commander Cheng asked with a deep meaning.

After being silent for a second, Zhang Tie replied, "The Gobbling Party take the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele as the natural

laws; their head is the master of the crown prince who has made great meritorious deeds. Additionally, although the Gobbling Party has a great influence across the country, the dangers of the theories that it poses have not been manifested; therefore, the moguls in Xuanyuan Hill does not have an antagonist to the Gobbling Party.

Commander Cheng let out a sigh, "You're right. The Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele, the crown prince and the leader who has made great meritorious deeds and is famous across the country. At present, the Gobbling Party has a great influence while their dangers have not been manifested now. Therefore, the moguls in Xuanyuan Hill wouldn't adopt excessive means against the Gobbling Party. On this occasion, any excessive response to the Gobbling Party would be expounded by the Gobbling Party as the doubts against the natural laws pursued by the Taixia Country and the denial of the crown prince in the east palace of Xuanyuan Hill. It would arouse a series of chain reactions. Among the people, anyone who dared oppose the Gobbling Party would be regarded as the protester of the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele, which means you disagree with the natural laws, namely, the belief pursued by Hua people. It means that you want Hua people to stand on the opposite of mercy, righteousness and morality, which is advocated by the demons. If so, a great chaos would be aroused among people. In Xuanyuan Hill, anyone who dared attack the Gobbling Party would be regarded as attacking the master of the crown prince, which would be further expounded as disagreeing with the current crown prince. It would arouse a great chaos in Xuanyuan Hill too. When the holy war arrives, nobody dares bear the outcome of the great chaos in Taixia Country, even the three top chancellors and nine ministers. Therefore, many people must be cheered secretly by your sharp blow to the Gobbling Party and add fuel to the flame so as to further strike the Gobbling Party. Whereas, in the meantime, you will also be the thorn in the side of the Gobbling Party. The entire Gobbling Party might target at you.

According to the game rule of Taixia Country, although the Gobbling Party won't dispatch powerhouses to kill you, as long as you make a mistake, the Gobbling Party will kill you in a lot of bloodless means!"

"Commander Cheng, are you telling me that I've already become a soldier crossing the river and could only move forward while preventing from being others' cannon fodder?" Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile.

"Not necessarily a cannon fodder. It's a rare chance for those who want to strike the Gobbling Party in Taixia Country to have one soldier crossing the river. Therefore, they will protect you from being killed by the Gobbling Party. Additionally, they will assist you to give tit for tat to the Gobbling Party both in the public and in the dark so as to shape you into the vanguard and representative of those who want to strike the Gobbling Party. This is what you should face on this position. It's like wirewalking, which has both benefits and shortcomings. Someone will push you forward while someone can't wait to trample you to the bottom of the hell. As to the degree to move forward or backward, it depends on you. I just want to warn you. You're just a black iron knight. No matter how you strike the Gobbling Party, you have to stick to one bottom line, you'd better not involve yourself in any dispute about the East Palace of Xuanyuan Hill. If not, even I could not stand that, not to mention you. When you realize that you're going to be involved with the dispute about the East Palace of Xuanyuan Hill, run as fast as possible."

"Thanks for your warning, Commander Cheng!" Zhang Tie deeply bowed towards Commander Cheng. After that, he watched Commander Cheng with gleaming eye light and asked, "Commander Cheng, whether do you treat me as a soldier crossing the river towards the Gobbling Party or not?"

"F*ck!" The black-face commander swore as he glared at Zhang Tie with a terrifying look, "You're the very soldier crossing the

river from this father's camp. When you mentioned it to me the day before yesterday, I didn't express my opinion as I wanted you to consider it well. Now that you've already crossed the river, of course, this father will support you. No matter what, I could not watch those b*stards of the Gobbling Party engulfing you without leaving a bone. If not, I would lose my face. Won't it indicate that I, the Black Cheng is incompetent? As you've given a heavy blow to the Heavens Reaching Church, you should have a great reward. Even though you will resign, you will also enjoy the reward. Tell me, what do you want? This father will give you a favor."

"Any reward?" Zhang Tie couldn't adapt to the outright temperament of Commander Cheng as the tone of Commander Cheng sounded like sharing the bribe with his subordinate.

"As long as it's within the limit of my authority, everything is available including, wealth, jewelry, medicinal pills, secret books, land, honor, even official position!" Commander Cheng said arrogantly.

"Erm, may I buy one airboat? I don't need one as large as yours, may I have a smaller one?" Zhang Tie put it straight. After boarding on this airboat, Zhang Tie had a deep feeling on the benefit of an airboat. If he could have one airboat, it would be more convenient for him to travel between Taixia Country and the Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Additionally, it would be too convenient for him to travel with his family members.

Zhang Taixuan's official airboat would be handed over to Youzhou City by March.

"Do you think that the airboat is built by me or white cabbages on the roadside? Do you think that it could be sold and bought at our will? Do you really think that the Taxation and Craftsmanship Ministry of Xuanyuan Hill is good for nothing..." Commander Cheng threw a glare at Zhang Tie as he waved his hand, "Change one!"

Zhang Tie rubbed his nose, "Alright, I will choose earth-elements crystals then!"

"It's told that you've got a space-teleportation equipment from that shadow demon? Have you got it with you?"

Zhang Tie took out of that exotic small bead and directly threw it to Commander Cheng. Zhang Tie knew that Commander Cheng must have something better than this item. Therefore, Commander Cheng would not be jealous of such a small item.

After catching the small bead, Commander Cheng nodded inside as he murmured inside, "This brat is really alluring."

After taking a look at it in hand, Commander Cheng threw it back to Zhang Tie, "It's a nanobead with a good space. Brat, you are really lucky! This father could not get a space-teleportation equipment after killing so many demons in the earth-element realm for one decade; however, you got one only after killing one shadow demon, f*ck..."

"It's called nanobead?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yup. Zhang Taixuan's nanobead, which is especially for the provincial governor will arrive with his airboat. This item could only be found in the earth-elements realm. Additionally, it's very rare. It's inconvenient to take it with you. You'd better have someone process it into a finger ring or something!"

'It turns out the provincial governors of Taixia Country also have such an item.' Zhang Tie nodded after throwing a glance at those finger rings of Commander Cheng.

"300 earth-elements crystals. This is your reward from the Northeast Military Region Headquarter!" As Commander Cheng said it, he waved his arm while 300 golden earth-elements crystals appeared in front of Zhang Tie at once.

Zhang Tie knew that 300 earth-elements crystals were definitely a great reward. With them, a common black iron knight might

form the greater part of his earth chakra. 'Commander Cheng gave me a great favor.'

"Thanks, Commander Cheng!" Zhang Tie then moved those earth-element crystals into the nanobead in front of Commander Cheng.

"Watch out yourself. And, there's one thing that I want to ask for your help!"

"Please!" Zhang Tie asked outrightly.

"Ahem...ahem..." Commander Cheng coughed twice while a guy with a glassy-eyed look pushed open the door and entered.

At the sight of him, Zhang Tie was shocked once again.

"He's Feng Cangwu; he needs to stay in Youzhou Province for some days. As you're in Youzhou Province, may you help me receive him?"

'Receive? What does he mean?' Zhang Tie watched Commander Cheng in a dubious look, 'Is it necessary? This guy is a knight! He's not handicapped. Does he need to be received? Is there some special reason or this guy has some abnormal "hobby"...'

"You are unwilling?" Watching Zhang Tie being silent, Commander Cheng's face turned more black at once, "Wait, did I give you too many earth-elements crystals just now?"

"Hahahaha, Brother Cangwu, I felt I saw an old friend at the sight of you!" Zhang Tie instantly changed his face and burst out into laughter like a hospitable rural rustic. Before Feng Cangwu made any response, Zhang Tie had walked forward and gave a passionate hug to Feng Cangwu and patted his back kindly. After that, he turned around and told Commander Cheng with a big smile, "Don't worry, Commander Cheng, Brother Cangwu can stay in Youzhou Province as long as he wants. He will live and eat with me. I promise you that I will return a white, fat buddy to you..."

After hearing the expressions "white, fat", Feng Cangwu's face

twitched a bit; however, he didn't say anything...

"Well, I have to go back to Yanzhou Province now. You can leave too!" After handing over Feng Cangwu to Zhang Tie, Commander Cheng directly drove them away...

...

In 2 minutes, Zhang Tie and Feng Cangwu had flown off the airboat and landed in the Huaiyuan Mansion of Youzhou City.

Before they landed, the airboat had long disappeared.

After landing on the ground, Zhang Tie seriously watched Feng Cangwu as he stroked his jaw. Nobody knew what he was thinking about.

When Zhang Tie didn't speak, Feng Cangwu just stood still with a cold, arrogant look while he tightly closed his mouth.

"Brother Cangwu, what requirements do you have on accommodation? Tell me about that. I will have people arrange it for you!"

"I will eat what you eat, live where you live and go wherever you go!" Feng Cangwu replied mechanically while Zhang Tie tightened his anus.

However, before Zhang Tie replied, Zhu Dabiao had run over there with a red face, "Ha...ha...Tiezi. I have a good news for you. The old thing has left. Before leaving, he gave me 20 million gold coins and paid off my debt. Additionally, he gave me another 10 million gold coins and told me to run well the land in Youzhou Province. You know what, the trick by daubing pepper oil under my lower eyelids really works. Ahahaha, I will invite you to Yicui Building tonight. I've booked some beauties over there..."

Until Zhu Dabiao finished his words did he find one more person on Zhang Tie's side.

When Zhu Dabiao wailed mournfully in front of his grandpa, he

didn't notice Feng Cangwu behind Commander Cheng. At the sight of Feng Cangwu, Zhu Dabiao just felt that he was a bit familiar; however, he could not remember whom he was. Based on Zhu Dabiao's ability, he could never recognize that Feng Cangwu was a knight.

"Ahh, Tiezi, is this your attendant? I've not seen him before!" Zhu Dabiao put it straight. Closely after that, Zhu Dabiao quivered all over, "Ahh, it's a bit strange, why do I feel a bit cold suddenly?"

"Ahem...ahem..." Zhang Tie coughed twice before explaining, "Dabiao, this is Brother Cangwu, one of my friends. He needs to be...looked after by me in Youzhou City for a few days..."

"Okay, I see, I see. Anyone would need a friend when in dilemma!" Zhu Dabiao said as he instantly put his fat claws onto Feng Cangwu's shoulders forcefully like a new rich, "Younger brother Cangwu, if you need any help, just find this elder brother; this elder brother has nothing but money now. If anyone dares to bully you, just tell him that you're on my side, I, Zhu Dabiao will protect you, gagagaga..."

Zhang Tie covered his face by hands as he almost wailed...

Feng Cangwu was tightly clenching his fists while his hands were quivering...

Chapter 870: Bidding a Farewell

After staying in Youzhou City for one day, Zhang Tie returned to Golden Light City by airship.

He came to Youzhou City with nothing; however, he left Youzhou City with a full load of gifts which were presented to the old d**chebag Jiang by the guests from all walks of life.

There were almost 1,000 gifts in different cases, big or small, which filled the entire warehouse of the airship.

In the "Washing hands in the gold basin" ceremony of a master artisan, even the gifts of those guys sitting at the average tables were at least worth 10 gold coins.

Many gifts packages had not been opened yet; some of them which had been unpackaged were packaged in cases. Even the gift-list had made people dazzled, including various pearls and gems, rune equipment, various exotic goods in Taixia Country, top-quality crystals, tea leaves, medicinal pills and medicaments, boa silk and rare linings, expensive tools and equipment for rune equipment masters, scripts and paintings and antiques, etc..

It seems that Zhang Tie had robbed an exhibition of luxuries and exotic items.

Zhang Tie had the Provincial Court share the "Master Jiang"'s cheques in cash and gold cheques which were worth over 40 million gold coins with the almost 1 million brothers of the Xiezhi Camp across the province including criminal hunters, officials on all levels and bowmen. Each Bowman could share at least 7 gold coins while each member of Xiezhi Camp could share at least 30 gold coins. This was not a small amount of money. Even knights needed to eat and drink, not to mention commoners.

After sharing the red packet of over 40 million gold coins, plus the meritorious deed of inflicting heavy losses on the Heavens

Reaching Church, all the yamuns across Youzhou Province lived a festive new year. Meanwhile, the reputation of Zhang Tie, who had just served as the dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province for three months rocketed to its highest point in the entire judicial system across Youzhou Province.

Not only in Youzhou Province, after receiving the precise and timely intelligence about Zhang Tie, all the other judicial systems across the Northeast Military Region had made great meritorious deeds these days by toppling over the Heavens Reaching Church. Therefore, the name of Zhang Mushen became thunder-like across all the yamuns in the Northeast Military Region. Everyone who heard about his meritorious deeds would thumb up and speak highly of him.

No matter what, those leaders who could win the enemy with their force, make meritorious deeds and could make their subordinates rich would always win the awe, love and esteem of their subordinates.

Therefore, without receiving Zhang Tie's order, his subordinates had moved those gifts of "Master Jiang" onto Zhang Tie's airship consciously.

Although the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province was of a kindly disposition, his subordinates must be aware. Now that the dean of Provincial Court made such a great meritorious deed with his force, there was no way that his subordinates would drink soup and eat meat while the head had nothing to eat. They could share the money; however, nobody across the yamuns in Youzhou Province dared take away those gifts in case of being sneered as rude by the provincial courts in the Northeast Military Region.

Besides these gifts, the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province also transferred the manor of Master Jiang on the 10 mile-willow bank of the Youzhou City, the greater part of the industrial shops in the artisans street in Youzhou City to Zhang Tie.

In the words of good omen of the commoners in Taixia Country, Zhang Tie really left home with nothing and returned home with wealth.

Zhang Tie left Youzhou City on the noon of January 7th when all the officials in the Provincial Court went to Huaiyuan Mansion to bid a farewell to Zhang Tie.

...

"Well, you can go back now. Remember to do a good job. Prevent the Heavens Reaching Church from coming back. Additionally, you should continue to pay attention to the evils and bandits on the wanted list of the Provincial Court in case those people slip into Youzhou Province and scourge any place in it. This is also my last expectation from you before I leave Youzhou City." Zhang Tie left his last warning to the crowd before boarding the airship.

"Lord, too many commoners outside White Tiger Complex today have been willing you to continue with the position of the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province." Zhang Yuanshan told Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie really didn't know about this. After hearing Zhang Yuanshan's words, Zhang Tie directly asked him in secret pattern, "Is it arranged by Huaiyuan Palace?"

Zhang Yuanshan faintly shook his head, which indicated that they were voluntary.

'Voluntary?' Zhang Tie felt a bit complex. He had not imagined that he could root in the hearts of commoners in Youzhou City only after taking the position of the dean of Provincial Court for 3 months.

Given this point, Zhang Tie had been satisfied with it. Someone might dream about a good reputation flowing down for long ages; however, Zhang Tie didn't have such a great ambition. He felt that it would be good if someone could beat him in their minds even if

he left that place. At least it indicated that he was not good for nothing in that place.

Anyone who wanted to have a good reputation flowing down for long ages or leave a stink for ten thousand years would feel very tired!

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie waved his hands towards the crowd before turning around and boarding the airship.

"Bon voyage! Lord Zhang!"

All the officials of the Provincial Court bowed deeply as they said in unison. Even though Zhang Tie would leave, they still treated him as the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.

Watching this scene, Zhu Dabiao on Zhang Tie's side chested out with a frowned fat belly. He looked proud. Since he was born, Zhu Dabiao had been growing up in the family of a provincial governor; therefore, Zhu Dabiao had witnessed such scenes many times. However, those officials only flattered his grandpa, his dad or his uncles. It was his first time to see people show respect to his friend in this way. Therefore, he felt pretty different about that. Although his family members belonged to Zhu Clan, his friend belonged to himself. In Zhu Dabiao's eyes, he felt more pleasant about seeing his friend being flattered than seeing his family members being flattered.

Besides, Zhu Dabiao, Feng Cangwu was also standing on the airship, who felt more complex at this moment. Feng Cangwu had not imagined that this young man who had completely defeated him in the Heavens Ball could win so many people's love and favor only after taking the position of the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province for 3 months. As a result, Feng Cangwu felt more depressed in a split second. He felt being defeated by Zhang Tie once again. The distance between him and Zhang Tie was further enlarged.

When the airship slowly rose, Zhang Tie just stood near the

porthole and watched the streets down there.

At this moment, he found that all the streets outside Huaiyuan Mansion had been crowded with commoners. There were at least 100,000 commoners who came here to bid a farewell to him. As they were forbidden in the Huaiyuan Mansion, they were just looking up in the streets.

When the airship rose, those commoners were in an uproar.

"During the 3 months when Lord Zhang took the position of the dean of Provincial Court, he didn't levy any rice from the commoners across Youzhou City, disturb commoners or expropriate any wealth from commoners. Watching the poor homeless kids in the city, Lord Zhang Tie even donated 100,000 gold coins to the Righteous Palace of Youzhou City so as to settle down those orphans. When the Heavens Reaching Church wanted to rise in revolt, Lord Zhang inflicted heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church alone for the safety of the commoners in Youzhou Province. After that, Lord Zhang killed the shadow demon and won 40 million gold coins from the Jiang Mansion. However, he had people distribute them to the subordinates. What a good dean of Provincial Court! He brought happiness to the commoners in Youzhou Province; however, he was driven away by the son of a bitch official of Gobbling Party!" Seeing Zhang Tie flying off, a grey-haired old man thumped his chest and stamped his feet while being filled with righteous indignation.

In a farther place away from the streets, hundreds of kids were running over here from the Righteous Palace of Youzhou City under the leadership of their teacher. They raised their huge paper banner on the street——Bon Voyage!

Even the kids in the Righteous Palace knew about appreciation.

Watching the airship rising up, many commoners nearby the White Tiger Complex burst out into tears...

In farther places, 40,000 elite forces in 4 matrices in the Xiezhi

Camp of Youzhou City were standing as a mark of respect outside the city by raising high their weapons. Meanwhile, they roared in unison, "Kill, Kill, Kill, Kill!"

Since Zhang Tie became outstanding in the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province to a few days ago when he inflicted heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church, although Zhang Tie had not stayed in this city for a long time, he had left a deep mark in this city.

All of a sudden, a golden light pillar shot into the sky from the airship while a huge geometrical halos suddenly loomed above the airship. Closely after that, the halos swept over the Youzhou City...

In the tranquil, energetic protection of the energy, all the commoners across Youzhou City and the soldiers in the Xiezhai Camp outside the city saw the airship off until it disappeared in the east when the warm strength that covered all of them gradually faded away. All the people then woke up like having a dream...

Such a strength was really fascinating to commoners.

It was the Gentle Strength of Lord Zhang.

"Let's go smash the Learning Association of the Gobbling Party in Youzhou City!" Many people exclaimed out of fury among those surrounding the White Tiger Complex. After that, the contingent of population poured towards the Learning Association of the Gobbling Party in Youzhou City like a fierce tide.

As the Gobbling Party had a great influence, they had Learning Association in Youzhou City which was called Morality Association. Morality Association existed in each city, each prefecture and each province in Taixia Country. It was used to publicize the theory of mercy, righteousness and morality which was advocated by the Gobbling Party and absorb backbone members of the Gobbling Party. It could also be regarded as the club of the members of Gobbling Party...

In Taixia Country, it was illegal to gather people to smash goods; except today when the furious commoners rushed into the Morality Association of Youzhou City, the criminal hunters and inspectors across Youzhou City just crossed their arms and watched that in the distance...

When those furious people left, the Morality Association of Youzhou City had deteriorated into debris, not even a single tile was complete over there...

Chapter 871: Mental Obstacle

After resigning and leaving Youzhou City in order to launch a counterattack to the Gobbling Party, Zhang Tie won his freedom back.

On the airship, Zhang Tie didn't know that some commoners in Youzhou City had smashed the Morality Association in Youzhou City after his departure.

After calculating his booties, Zhang Tie was also shocked.

300 earth-elements crystals, the opportunity to launch a counterattack to the Gobbling Party, over 1,000 expensive gifts in the warehouse of the airship, Master Jiang's manor in Youzhou City, a rare space-teleportation equipment and the fruit of plunder and the unquantifiable reputation.

Zhang Tie had been very satisfied with such a great achievement.

He was forced to take the position of the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province at the beginning given the tense situation; now Huaiyuan Palace had won the heart of commoners; therefore Zhang Tie didn't feel unwilling to resign.

If it were before, after coming to the airship, Zhang Tie would definitely enter Castle of Black Iron and eat fruits; besides that fruit of plunder, he should have 10 more leakless fruits and few fruits of redemption from the gratitude of golden uangs. After taking these fruits, Zhang Tie would make another small progress. The road of cultivation was a process from quantitative change to qualitative change day by day.

However, at this moment, Zhang Tie gave up this thought. It was not because he was afraid of being discovered by the knight on his side after entering Castle of Black Iron but because Zhang Tie had been confident enough to control his impulsion that he couldn't wait to eat fruits.

'Heller was right. The small tree's ability is limited. Unless I die, the small tree will stop providing me fruits sooner or later. I have been able to sense it now.'

After boarding the airship, Zhang Tie took out the earth-elements crystals from the nanobead in his own berth cabin.

It took him 8 hours to use up 4 earth-elements crystals. After throwing the 4 useless earth-element crystals into Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie silently moved 4 earth-element crystals from Castle of Black Iron to the space of the nanobead so as to maintain the number of earth-element crystals in the nanobead unchanged.

With the nanobead, Zhang Tie could casually move items from Castle of Black Iron to the space of the nanobead. In this way, when he took items out of nanobead, he would not worry about arousing doubts to others.

This nanobead was the best stage property that Zhang Tie used to launder the resources in Castle of Black Iron. A few days ago when Zhang Tie was worried whether he could get another space-teleportation equipment anytime soon; talk of the devil and he comes.

As for Zhang Tie, the wing demons that frightened everyone was as cute as a boy with fortune. From Master Abyan to "Master Jiang", each time he met a wing demon, Zhang Tie had a good fortune and improved his battle strength a bit.

'However, If I met a wing demon knight in the future, I would not get any fruit from it. That's too pitiful! Heller said that once demons promoted to knights, they would be protected by special rules. As a result, the small tree could not get any fruit from them. I wonder that whether the rules that protect the demon knights could be broken or have loopholes.'

When Zhang Tie was thinking about it, he walked out of his room.

It was already dark in the midnight while the lamps in the airship had been lit up. Zhu Dabiao had fallen asleep. After sensing around, Zhang Tie walked towards the bar in the resting area.

The other airships could never be such luxurious. However, as the transportation vehicle of elders of Huaiyuan Palace, of course, it would contain everything. However, after visiting the airboat of Commander Cheng, Zhang Tie had a deeper understanding of luxury.

Feng Cangwu was drinking at the bar counter. After boarding the airship, Zhang Tie had felt that Feng Cangwu was in a blue mood.

Nobody else could be found in the bar except for Feng Cangwu. However, there was another empty glass on the side of Feng Cangwu. It should be left by Zhu Dabiao. After drink for a while with Feng Cangwu, Zhu Dabiao might have been drunk and returned to his berth cabin. When Zhang Tie was cultivating just now, he heard Zhu Dabiao throwing up in his cabin.

After coming to Feng Cangwu's side, Zhang Tie took a new glass and made a glass of liquor for himself using the bottle in front of Feng Cangwu. After seeing that Feng Cangwu's glass was empty, he filled it with liquor again.

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, Feng Cangwu bottomed it up.

Followed by Zhang Tie.

It was brewed by a green bamboo snake, which looked dark green and smelt refreshing and fragrant. After drinking a glass of it, Zhang Tie smacked his lips. After feeling addicted to it, he made another glass for himself and Feng Cangwu. They then bottomed it up again.

After drinking the dragon-marrow liquor gifted by Commander Cheng, Zhang Tie felt this common liquor was not that acrid anymore. After drinking 3 glasses, he felt as light as water. When

the bottle was empty, Zhang Tie put down his glass.

"Brother Cangwu, don't beat about the bush anymore. I know that you are arrogant and always aim too high but you must have something to deal with in Youzhou Province. Just put it straight. I would try my best to help you. As long as I could do it while not betraying my conscience, I swear to help you!" Zhang Tie watched Feng Cangwu with a serious look, "But I don't understand that Brother Cangwu has such a great battle strength and could make Commander Cheng help you, is there really anything that you cannot handle in the Northeast Military Region? As I'm just a small figure, I don't think that you need my help."

"Can you let me defeat you?" Feng Cangwu raised his head and asked Zhang Tie with a gloomy look.

Zhang Tie frowned as he watched Feng Cangwu seriously, 'This guy is not drunk, how could he speak such weird words?', "Brother Cangwu, what do you mean? I have no resentment toward you. Additionally, we've not fought at all. How can you say you want to surpass or defeat me?"

Feng Cangwu revealed a bitter smile as he threw a glance at Zhang Tie, "You're not completely right. I indeed have no resentment toward you either; however, we've already wrestled. It's a battle of life or death. You win it!"

"Hahaha, Brother Cangwu, you must be kidding!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "When did I wrestle with you, Brother Cangwu? I don't remember!"

"Have you forgotten about it in the Heavens Ball in White Tiger Complex 3 months ago?" Feng Cangwu let out a sigh.

Zhang Tie's smiled froze at once. After blinking his eyes and gazing at Feng Cangwu, he instantly realized something, "You're that...that last demon knight?"

"Right, I'm the very demon knight that has been killed by you in

the end and helped you win the reputation of the Lion of Youzhou Province!" Feng Cangwu's words contained a little bitterness.

After hearing that, Zhang Tie recalled why he felt that the demon knight, in the end, was excessively powerful. 'It turns out that demon knight is not formed by the Heavens Ball, but being incarnated by Feng Cangwu, f*ck!'

"What the hell?"

"Heavens Ball is the treasure of our Heavens Fortune Sect. If you could enter it, I could enter it too. Besides, I could enter it in any look and frame. Are you getting me?" Feng Cangwu watched Zhang Tie as he continued, "I just wanted to try the battle strengths of the young powerhouses of Youzhou Province in it, unexpectedly, I was discouraged in the end!"

"It's just a battle in the Heavens Ball, don't care so much about it, Brother Cangwu!" Zhang Tie comforted Feng Cangwu as he murmured inside, 'If I were discouraged by losing my life one time in the virtual space, I would have been extremely depressed after losing my life so many times in the trouble-reappearance situations.'

"The battle in the Heavens Ball has become my mental obstacle!" Feng Cangwu forced a bitter smile, "The key of the laws of cultivation in our Heavens Fortune Sect is as follows: after promoting to a knight, we have to know ourselves at first; after that, we will sense the essence of the natural laws. Finally, we need to unite ourselves with the universe. If I could not break my mental obstacle, I would not make any breakthrough in my cultivation base in the future. I would hardly form other chakras anymore. Therefore, I have to seek for your help!"

"How can I help you?" Zhang Tie glanced at Feng Cangwu with a strange look, "If you could break your mental obstacle by beating me, it's negotiable!"

Of course, the so-called negotiation referred to conditions. If the

Heavens Fortune Sect could afford it, Zhang Tie felt that he could be beaten by Feng Cangwu. Just take it as a way of forming iron-body fruits. After all, Zhang Tie had been used to do it. When he was in Blackhot City, he served as a human flesh sandbag; later on, he was always beaten in Selnes Theater of Operations. Therefore, he had a rich experience in being beaten.

"If I could break my mental obstacle, I don't need to come to Youzhou Province." Feng Cangwu threw a cold and arrogant glance at Zhang Tie.

"But, Brother Cangwu, can you break your mental obstacle only by following me up?"

"The mental obstacle could only be broken wherever it was formed. However, I don't know how to break it. It depends. Therefore..." Feng Cangwu continued with an embarrassed look after a pause, "Master and Senior Fellow Apprentice Lin Changjiang both suggested me to find you. Only by following you up could I find the fortune to break my mental obstacle!"

"Lin Changjiang?" Zhang Tie's heart raced as he was so familiar with this name, "Lin Changjiang is your senior fellow apprentice? I also know a Lin Changjiang in Waii Subcontinent!"

"Senior fellow apprentice Lin was once the marshal of Norman Empire in Waii Subcontinent!" Feng Cangwu replied with a natural look.

Zhang Tie was shocked again. Until then did he realize how deep had Taixia's strength penetrated in each subcontinent. Zhang Tie remembered that those who inflicted heavy losses on demons in Waii Subcontinent were just Norman Empire in the north and Hua nations in the south. Hua people of Taixia Country was the pillar of humans. It was true.

After thinking about it for a while, Zhang Tie's face suddenly turned solemn, "Brother Cangwu, you can stay with me as long as you want so as to break your mental obstacle, as this is related to

me and has been supported by Commander Cheng. Whereas, as I'm always a casual person, I'm afraid that I have been a poor host as Brother Cangwu comes from Heavens Fortune Sect, a top sect in Taixia Country..."

"No problem. Everyone has the lowest point in his life!" Feng Cangwu let out a gloomy sigh like a playboy who was in a trouble...

At this moment, Zhang Tie was thinking about that, 'The Heavens Fortune Sect might dislike the Gobbling Party; therefore, they dispatched a knight to my side to show their instance. Based on the young age of Feng Cangwu and his arrogance in the past, he must not be an average member in the young generation of the Heavens Fortune Sect. With such a person on my side, even if he was good for nothing, what other people would think about me?'

'However, why would the Heavens Fortune Sect do that? I'm just a small black iron knight. Is it necessary for the Heavens Fortune Sect to back up me?'

Zhang Tie had racked his mind; however, he couldn't figure it out.

'Whatever, unless I'm dead...'

Now that Zhang Tie couldn't think it through, he just stopped thinking about it...

Chapter 872: Just Do It!

On the second day since Zhang Tie returned to the Golden Light City, the series of outcomes caused by his resignation had been gradually manifested...

Starting from Youzhou City, all the Morality Associations across Youzhou Province had been smashed by people in only a couple of days; however, the entire judicial system across Youzhou Province was just watching them being smashed on one side. Even if they had received the reports, they would just come and go in a symbolic way instead of catching anybody. They could do nothing to the encounter of the Immortal Associations of the Gobbling Party.

The judicial system in Youzhou Province only left one sentence—as the aftermath of the Heavens Reaching Church has not disappeared, commoners in Youzhou Province are still furious; any arrest of commoners would cause a big chaos. Who will take responsibility for that?

In Youzhou Province, the Gobbling Party had been notorious. Even the reputation of the around-the-clock imperial officials in the Censorate of Xuanyuan Hill was affected.

Besides Youzhou Province, in a few days, the news that the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province who was forced to resign after afflicting heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church was fermented under the push of all sorts of forces, arousing an uproar across Taixia Country.

Only after one week, based on the reports that Zhang Tie had received, over 1,000 newspapers across Taixia Country had reported this event in a very skillful way. Most of the newspapers only mentioned the memorial of Su Qianling, Zhang Tie's meritorious deeds and resignation. Who was right and who was wrong? The answer became very clear.

When the public opinion surged towards the Censorate of Xuanyuan Hill, Su Qianling's memorial turned into a steel ingot and forcefully pounded onto his own face.

However, knowing that Huaiyuan Palace had a great resentment with the Gobbling Party and the leader of the latter was the master of the crown prince, the newspapers in Taixia Country reported this event in a very proper way. They didn't reveal the resentment between Huaiyuan Palace and the Gobbling Party. Even so, people could still pass it from mouth to mouth silently. In the eyes of some insiders, the Gobbling Party had been completely exposed this time. What was more, through this event, many people figured out that although the Gobbling Party advocated people to follow the so-called "mercy, righteousness and morality", their deed was very dirty this time; they just raised high the big banner; disregarded the facts; defended those who belonged to their own faction and attacked those who didn't regardless of the lives of the commoners. What they did was nothing to do with the so-called "mercy, righteousness and morality".

Under the stress of the public opinion, on January 18th, the Censorate of Xuanyuan Hill declared to dismiss Su Qianling from his post. Su Qianling was demoted to be a Level 16 financial minister in Yinzhou Province, a lower province.

In Xuanyuan Hill, although the 360 around-the-clock imperial officials in Censorate were not of high rank, they were extremely important. One around-the-clock imperial official could even control the public opinion in the country and the decision of the imperial court of Taixia Country. After Su Qianling's demotion, the Gobbling Party lacked a key voice in the Censorate.

From the perspective of the Gobbling Party, although Su Qianling's demotion felt like losing an arm, what was more annoying was the condemnation from the people.

Many times, like a clean dress, once being stained, it was hard to wash. Even if you could, there would always be a mark, which

became a firm wall in front of the Gobbling Party in terms of an invisible poor impression in others' hearts.

After Su Qianling left the Xuanyuan Hill in an embarrassed way, besides the media in some provinces in Taixia Country, especially Tunzhou Province who supported Su Qianling weakly, the Gobbling Party didn't have any other movement. It seemed that the Gobbling Party ceased fire at once...

Huaiyuan Palace gained a complete victory in the first collision with the Gobbling Party when it returned to Taixia Country.

'However, this is also a narrow victory. If I didn't find the conspiracy of the Heavens Reaching Church, the party being roasted above the grill would be Huaiyuan Palace and I once the Heavens Reaching Church rose in revolt, plus the memorial of Su Qianling.'

Zhang Tie didn't feel happy as he understood the dangers in this wrestle between Huaiyuan Palace and the Gobbling Party. 'As long as the memorial was confirmed, my family might be ruined; Huaiyuan Palace would also be inflicted greatly.' Although demotion of the motherf*cking imperial official in the Censorate was cool, Zhang Tie still felt that his punishment was not severe enough. However, through this battle, Zhang Tie knew that the Gobbling Party would not cause Huaiyuan Palace and him any trouble in a short period. Therefore, he and Huaiyuan Palace could be safe for a short time. However, in the future, unless one party could defeat the other, the resentment between the two parties would never come to an end.

This event was a warning for Zhang Tie.

It reminded Zhang Tie that Taixia Country was not a Shangrila either. Additionally, due to the resentment between his ancestor and the Gobbling Party, even the Eastern Continent was full of dangers for him and Huaiyuan Palace.

This time, Commander Cheng had told him in the most direct

means about the sharp difference between him and a knight who had formed 4 chakras.

In the final analysis, power counted most in this world.

The word power contained many things, such as battle strength which was most direct and powerful, money, human relationship, influence and foundation, etc..

Zhang Tie had reached his target after Su Qianling was demoted. He could find another reason to go back to Youzhou City to be the dean of Provincial Court once again; Huaiyuan Palace had also made pavements for that. Everything could undergo very smoothly. However, through this event, after recovering his composure, Zhang Tie realized that it was very dangerous in the officialdom of Taixia Country and that he was incongruous with the officialdom of Taixia Country.

The position dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province was a double-bladed sword. Besides granting him a great power and an eminent identity in Taixia Country, this position also made him restrictive to the officialdom of the Taixia Country. There were a lot of uncertainties in this position. To be honest, Zhang Tie didn't think that he excelled at being an official. The key was that he didn't have any ambition about power; neither did he have spiritual energy and time to adapt to the system of the officialdom in Taixia Country; especially when the Gobbling Party took an absolute advantage in the officialdom of Taixia Country. 'Is it worth for me to adapt to those rules at the risk of being framed by the Gobbling Party for the compensation of over 2 million gold coins a year? How much will it improve the power of me and my clan?'

'If not being an official in Taixia Country, I would just enjoy myself in Golden Light City even though the Heavens Reaching Church toppled over half of Youzhou Province. How could they cause me trouble?'

This time, Zhang Tie was very lucky in inflicting heavy losses on the Heaven Reaching Church. He could not guarantee that he would also have such a good luck in the future by turning calamities into blessings. 'However, without such a luck, does it mean that I have to be bullied by the Gobbling Party?'

'Therefore, I don't have to take the office of the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province!'

'Especially, given the demand for further wrestle with the Gobbling Party, it's actually beneficial to Huaiyuan Palace if I don't take the position of the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province.'

After knowing Zhang Tie's thought, all the elders of Huaiyuan Palace were startled. Therefore, 3 days after the news that Su Qianling was demoted passed to Youzhou Province, Elder Muen and Elder Muyuan who stayed in Huaiyuan Prefecture came to the manor of Zhang Tie's family in Golden Light City by airship and met Zhang Tie.

The 3 elders of Huaiyuan Palace negotiated with the major event which determined the future of the clan in a pavilion behind the manor of Zhang Tie's family.

The pavilion was surrounded by red maples which looked as fiery as flames after the baptism of the snow. Like polished red crystals, they were extremely brilliant in the fading winter scenery.

The greater part of the snow in the garden had melted; however, it was still a bit cold now; given the firm and verdant grasses that straightened up once again in the garden, Zhang Tie smelt a sense of spring.

In the pavilion, the furnace made of red mud was adjusted to a high temperature while the tea water was steaming. Sitting around the furnace, Zhang Tie, Elder Muen and Elder Muyuan were silent while listening to the sound drifting from the furnace.

At this moment, the noise of the kids of Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang drifted from the garden faintly. As the winter was going to disappear, it was the last chance for these little guys to have a snowball fight and make a snowman.

"Gulugulu..." When the tea water was boiled for about 1 minute, Zhang Tie stretched out his hand and used a pair of pot tongs to nip the teapot in a very regular way. After that, he made a cup of tea for each of the other two elders.

The tea water was collected from the snow on the top of the pine trees on the mountain outside Golden Light City, which had just melted above the furnace. The tea was famous in Taixia Country, which was called Silver Frost. Of course, Silver Frost was the best item that "Master Jiang" had contributed to Zhang Tie selflessly. 0.5 kg' Silver Frost was worth 500 gold coins in Taixia Country. There was a great learning about the teapot. It was made of redware from Lanzhou Province while the firewoods being used for boiling teas were fresh osmanthus twigs in last August.

After the snow melted in the hot water, the silver frost formed mountain peaks in the water; instead of scattering. At the same time, a looming mist came into being above the tea water. In a split second, the tea leaves in the cup and the vapor over the tea water formed a scaled-down misty landscape painting; plus the faint fragrance of pine leaves in the tea water, only by smelling it, people had been brought into an immortal realm while all the boredom disappeared in the tranquility physically and mentally.

Zhang Tie let out a long sigh with a great sense of achievement. To be honest, if not Feng Cangwu, Zhang Tie really could not make such a good tea; neither did he know about such a big learning about a cup of tea. If not for Feng Cangwu, even Silver Frost would be spoiled by Zhang Tie.

"Honestly, I didn't know why Hua people were so proud of themselves and always belittled the other human races on other continents. Until now, after coming to Taixia Country for a few

months did I gradually understand it!" Zhang Tie held the teapot and looked at it with an interested impression. Meanwhile, he sniffed the tea water and watched the landscape formed by the tea leaves and the vapor at the mouth of the cup, "The pride of Hua people originates from their unrivaled strength and culture. The culture is in a cup of tea. A cup of tea contains the entire world, which enables people to comprehend the natural laws in the world. None of the countries in other sub continents and continents could have such a profound culture. With a cup of tea water, Hua people could experience almost 1,000 years' historical details and the essence of natural laws. Compared to Hua people, those kings, princes, aristocrats and rich men on the other continents are just barbarians!"

Elder Muen and Elder Muyuan exchanged a glance with each other as if they had got something from each other's eyes. Now that Elder Mushen could make a tea in front of them at such a critical moment, it had revealed too many meanings.

"Has Elder Mushen made the decision?" Elder Muen asked.

This time, Elder Muen and Elder Muyuan were not here only for themselves but on behalf of Zhang Taixuan.

Zhang Tie became silent. With a smile, he asked Elder Muen, "Elder Muen, who do you think hopes the most for me to return to Youzhou City and take the position of the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province at this moment?"

"All the members of Huaiyuan Palace even the head of Zhang Clan hope Elder Mushen to return to Youzhou City as fast as possible and take the position of the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province once again!" Elder Muen replied.

"Of course, I know the intention of Zhang Clan; however, the one who expects me to return to Youzhou City and take the position of the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province as soon as possible is the Gobbling Party!"

"Gobbling Party?" Elder Muen faintly frowned as if he had imagined Zhang Tie's answer.

"If I returned to Youzhou City and take the position of the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province once again, this event could only cause the face of Gobbling Party to swell; however, after a few days, it would recover. If I didn't go back, not only would it be a slap on the face of Gobbling Party but also a stab in the key part of Gobbling Party, which they would not recover from in the future. As a result, Gobbling Party would bleed at any time! If I came back to Youzhou City, the competition between Huaiyuan Palace and the Gobbling Party would be mainly on tricks even if Huaiyuan Palace took the advantage for the time being by chance. If I didn't come back to Youzhou City, the competition between Huaiyuan Palace and the Gobbling Party would be mainly on morality and Huaiyuan Palace would take the advantage forever!"

Elder Muyuan's eyes brightened up, "You mean?"

Zhang Tie then answered, "I'm a gentleman. Gentlemen are harmonious with each other although they have their unique opinions; by contrast, villains just blindly follow others' opinions yet don't seek for the true harmony!"

After hearing the first part of the answer, Elder Muen and Elder Muyuan became slightly stunned. However, when it came to the second half of the answer, they were shocked before taking in a deep breath at the same time...

...

Chapter 873: Making a Compromise

Gentlemen were in line with natural laws possessing their unique opinions while villains gathered for benefits yet being derailed by natural laws. This was the difference between gentlemen and villains.

In case of being impeached, Zhang Tie still stuck to his post and performed his duties. As a result, he inflicted heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church. After that, he resigned. All this indicated that Zhang Tie was a gentleman.

By contrast, the Gobbling Party defended those who belonged to their own faction and attacked those who didn't by instigating an imperial official in Censorate to frame Zhang Tie with a rumor. As a result, they almost dismissed Zhang Tie's position before the Heavens Reaching Church rose in revolt in Youzhou Province. This indicated that the members of Gobbling Party were villains.

The law of officials was their professional conduct.

If Zhang Tie returned, it would be a competition for tricks; if not, it would be a competition for morality and justice.

As for the first case, Huaiyuan Palace could only take the advantage for the time being; as for the second case, Huaiyuan Palace would take the advantage forever.

Zhang Tie didn't feel that he was a very good official and had a very good professional conduct; however, the winner took all. As long as he could defeat the Gobbling Party, he didn't mind bragging under the halos of the gentleman.

In one word, as long as Zhang Tie could stick to his principle, the members of Gobbling Party would become villains besides being roasted over the fire.

Additionally, there was an incantation of the golden hoop for the Gobbling Party who used to talk about mercy, righteousness and

morality. With this incantation, it would be hard for the Gobbling Party to pretend to be dignified once again. This incarnation only fitted the Gobbling Party, which could be only be manifested by villains under the influence of a gentleman.

The Gobbling Party also knew that Zhang Tie was a gentleman; therefore, even though they wanted to impeach Zhang Tie, they could only amplify Zhang Tie's dereliction on the special occasion.

The Gobbling Party didn't attack Zhang Tie's moral standing because those gentlemen who were called "would-be sages" had perfect morality. If the Gobbling Party attacked the moral standing of Zhang Tie, they were actually attacking the values and cultural system of the entire Taixia Country and rocking their own foundation.

According to the Gobbling Party, "mercy, righteousness, laws and morality" were the "four essences of the heavenly laws". If the "four essences of the heavenly laws" were not manifested, the heavenly laws would not be carried forward. Sages were free as they had gained the essences of the heavenly laws. If the Gobbling Party denied sages, they were denying the heavenly laws; if they denied the heavenly laws, they were denying themselves and their foundation.

Lately, Zhang Tie was thinking why the Gobbling Party would cause him trouble. 'Did they only find my evidence among so many elders and such a great undertaking of Huaiyuan Palace? After thinking about it for a while, Zhang Tie made a conclusion, the reason that the Gobbling Party chose me as their first target was that they were afraid of my status and influence as a gentleman. The Gobbling Party would strangle me before I could grow up with a greater influence. Because of this, the Gobbling Party couldn't wait to show their fangs and stamp me into the darkness when Huaiyuan Palace has become the first clan in Youzhou Province for less than 3 months.'

'However, the Gobbling Party could never imagine that I could

find their conspiracy by chance when I paid a visit to Youzhou City and reverse the situation by inflicting heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church only in a few days.'

As the old Hua saying went, when you made a mistake at the beginning, you would make mistakes throughout. Because of this mistake of the Gobbling Party, Zhang Tie completely reversed the situation and had a chance to defeat Gobbling Party at a higher position with a greater influence.

'I'm too stupid if I don't make use of my status as a gentleman at this moment.'

Combining all the reasons, Zhang Tie made a decision to not return to Youzhou City anymore.

"A victim who was constantly exposed to the public would have the lowest probability to be harmed once again. At this moment, it's the firmest shield that Huaiyuan Palace could use to resist the Gobbling Party by letting Huaiyuan Palace become a victim on the supreme point of morality so as to win the sympathy of the mainstream opinion and value in Taixia Country. With the protection of this shield, Huaiyuan Palace could win opportunities and time to root in and develop in Youzhou Province in case of being struck by the Gobbling Party with its full strength. I'd like to be the shield of Huaiyuan Palace!" Zhang Tie told Elder Muen and Elder Muyuan.

The two elders were moved.

"However, in this situation, all the stress that Gobbling Party brought to Huaiyuan Palace would be transferred to you. The Gobbling Party would definitely make use of all their means to put you down, ruin your reputation or kill you. It's too dangerous!" Elder Muyuan opposed.

Some elders might have considered Zhang Tie's opinion; however, nobody posed it as they didn't want to isolate Zhang Tie...

"Do you think that the Gobbling Party would be lenient in treating me if I apologized to them?" Zhang Tie asked, "So many years have passed from Lord Huaiyuan to the present, the moment Huaiyuan Palace made a bit achievement in Taixia Country, the Gobbling Party had jumped out to frame Huaiyuan Palace and me. Did they spare any chance to negotiate with us? They've been so embarrassed, we can make them even more. If we don't seize this opportunity to make the Gobbling Party fear about us and inflict heavy losses on them, the Gobbling Party will become insatiable. As for me, as long as I leave the officialdom, the Gobbling Party will have very limited means to handle me; let alone be framed by them. As long as they don't dispatch any powerhouse above earth knights to kill me, I will not be afraid of their means. If one day they dare dispatch a powerhouse to kill me blatantly, the Gobbling Party will become the target for all in Taixia Country. They are seeking for death. We don't have to worry about that!" Zhang Tie rubbed his face while revealing a bitter smile, "Honestly, I'm really not a qualified official. I've been used to be free. Officials have to take too many responsibilities and be in line with too many rules. To the utmost extent, it's my fluke to inflict heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church and the Gobbling Party this time. Without the protection of Commander Cheng, the impeachment from the Gobbling Party would have reached the imperial court. I should not always rely on the superior and fluke. If I return, I bet that the Gobbling Party would cause me trouble soon so as to win one round back. As I resign, I will stop the Gobbling Party from thinking so. They could only squat and stand in front of Huaiyuan Palace and dare not even stand up and say no loudly!"

When Elder Muyuan wanted to say something, Zhang Tie waved his hands to stop him. Zhang Tie then said in a self-mockery tone, "I'm well-known again in Taixia! It's not bad for me!"

After recalling how he persuaded Zhang Tie a few months ago, Elder Muyuan let out a sigh and became silent.

"If you don't become the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province again, who else could take it?" Elder Muen asked Zhang Tie after being silent for a while. It indicated that he had almost agreed with Zhang Tie's choice; after all, Zhang Tie was an important elder of Huaiyuan Palace. If he didn't want to do that, nobody else could force a stubborn ox to drink water.

"I like Zhang Yuanshan. Although he's not a knight; he's at least a battle spirit. Additionally, he's competent at that job based on his rich experiences and ability! After the Heavens Reaching Church is exterminated, the judicial system of Youzhou Province will not encounter another big challenge in a short period. I find he's proper." Zhang Tie revealed the plan that he had long worked out, "Additionally, even if I don't work as the dean of Provincial Court, I could also enter the judicial system of Youzhou Province like I can be a bounty hunter!"

"Bounty hunter?"

"Yes, bounty hunter!" Zhang Tie revealed a bad smile, "I'm a gentleman. Although I'm not in the position, I could also care about the security of Youzhou Province and the lives of the commoners in Youzhou Province. Additionally, I will also frighten those evil guys. I might be the first one who preferred to be a bounty hunter instead of the dean of a provincial court in Taixia. The more aggrieved I am, the more uncomfortable will the Gobbling Party be. Meanwhile, being a bounty hunter, I could directly help Zhang Yuanshan solve almost any problem in Youzhou Province. Actually, I had long thought about this when I was the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province!"

'What the hell!' Elder Muen and Elder Muyuan became speechless.

Given their expressions, Zhang Tie knew that Huaiyuan Palace had agreed to his plan. Although only two elders were negotiating with him, actually, Elder Muen and Elder Muyuan were sending messages to the other elders and Count Long Wind by the remote-

sensing crystals on their finger rings at the same time. Of course, Huaiyuan Palace could not refuse his reason.

"Alright, the head has agreed with it!" Elder Muen said.

"But there's one point that you should concern about it!" Elder Muyuan added, "It's time for Elder Mushen to fulfill the duty that you've promised the clan at the beginning!"

"What duty?" Zhang Tie asked.

"To sustain the bloodline of Zhang Clan. You've prolonged it all the way from Waii Sub-continent to Taixia Country. Now that Elder Mushen doesn't serve as the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province anymore, you will have more free time. You should think about it!"

Zhang Tie patted his forehead as he asked with a bitter smile, "How do Huaiyuan Palace usually arrange it?"

"The clan has prepared for a lot of innocent and reliable Hua girls for you. Elder Mushen, you can just select whoever you like. You can select as more concubines as you like. It's normal for a knight to have dozens even hundreds of concubines. If Elder Mushen likes someone, you could directly tell us. As long as she's single, it's negotiable!" Elder Muen said in an ordinary tone as if he was telling Zhang Tie how to buy commodities in the shop. It was too common for clan elders.

Rubbing his forehead with one finger, Zhang Tie finally made a compromise after thinking for a while, "No need to bother you. Just bring me Aimei and Aixue whom I've been familiar with in the Hurricane Corps! No need to hurry. For the sake of the domestic harmony, I'd better not select too many girls for the time being..."

...

Chapter 874: Gaya's Believer

If it were over 10 years ago in Blackhot City when his hormone was growing as luxuriantly as weeds and his young heart would become as horny as pye-dogs at night, Zhang Tie would definitely not just select 2 girls if he could have such a chance to select beauties like an emperor at home.

If not such a restlessness, he would not be indulged in the tenderness of the girls of Rose Association.

However, after promoting to a knight, although Zhang Tie secreted more hormone, his restlessness had faded away like torrents that converged into the ocean.

The ocean in Zhang Tie's heart was still surging; however, it became more inclusive to both women and his family members.

Women could not just be the procreation tool of men; especially of a strange man. No matter how good did the man treat her, very few women would feel happy on the side of such a man. Zhang Tie didn't want to hold up the youth of strange girls.

When he was in his puberty, Zhang Tie usually imagined about the cool sense brought by friction and orgasm speaking of women. However, now, Zhang Tie had understood that the affectionate ones were the most precious!

Therefore, Zhang Tie preferred to choose those two whom he had emotional underpinnings with.

Aimei and Aixue had tough experiences, Linda, Beverly and Fiona also had common family backgrounds. If the twins became Zhang's daughters-in-law, they would definitely have a common language with Linda, Beverly and Fiona. They could respect each other. Neither would Linda, Beverly and Fiona feel aggrieved. By contrast, if he selected those, especially those who had deep family backgrounds in Huaiyuan Palace, Linda, Beverly and Fiona might

feel their positions at home to be threatened.

After staying at Zhang Tie's home for less than 1 hour, Elder Muen and Elder Muyuan had left.

Zhang Tie directly accompanied them to board the airship. After that, he saw off the airship.

After recovering his freedom once again, Zhang Tie felt pretty relaxed. However, he had infuriated the Gobbling Party and became the thorn in their side; therefore, Zhang Tie faintly felt a sense of crisis.

'In the final analysis, it's a matter of battle strength. If I've already formed 4 chakras, I don't believe that the Gobbling Party would dare be presumptuous in front of me.'

'However, it takes time to improve the battle strength. It's the best time to help Zhang root in and expand their influence in Taixia Country at present.'

Standing on the side of his domestic airport, Zhang Tie watched the airship that gradually disappeared in the skyline as he was thinking about the next step.

'After becoming a bounty hunter, I could further pay attention to the news of Zhao Yuan, my master.'

'As I'm free now, besides forming my chakra, I could have a better chance to have the small tree produce more fruits. With more fruits, even if I could not form my earth chakra, for the time being, I could also improve my battle strength greatly. This is my biggest advantage compared to others. Others only have one way to improve their battle strength greatly; however, I have two ways. Therefore, I don't have to walk on one foot.'

'Besides the fruits of redemption from the gratitude of golden uangs that I set free. I could definitely find places to breed and set free earthworms. If I could improve my preliminary recovery body to medium recovery body or senior recovery body, I would

definitely have a much better viability.'

'Besides earthworms and golden uangs, I will try to set free more living beings. After all, it's not bad for me.'

'There're many fishing vessels at the Embracing Tiger Harbor which is the nearest harbor to Golden Light City. There're a lot of fresh fishes over there every day. It seems that I should take a look over there.'

'Is there anything cheaper in this world than buying a fruit at the price of a few gold coins?'

After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie gradually opened his mind to a bright future!

Feng Cangwu had appeared on his side.

"Have you negotiated with Huaiyuan Palace?" Feng Cangwu asked Zhang Tie.

Even though this young elite of Heavens Fortune Sect had been in Zhang Tie's family for over 2 weeks, his cold and arrogant qi remained unchanged.

It was Feng Cangwu's key to break his mental obstacle by staying on Zhang Tie's side; however, he felt damaging his self-esteem by staying on Zhang Tie's side without doing anything. Therefore, after settling down in Zhang Tie's manor and taking a round inside, Feng Cangwu had posed to be the teacher of Zhang family's younger generation. He wanted to survive himself by his own labor.

Although it was a waste of Feng Cangwu's talent by working as a teacher of kids, Zhang Tie's three sons and the kids of Zhang Yang had learned a lot from Feng Cangwu in only a few days. Even Zhang Tie benefited a lot from him.

Feng Cangwu was really an aristocrat among the Hua people. With a wide horizon, he had touched too many unusual things, which could shock the listeners so much.

Zhang Tie didn't tell others about the real identity of Feng Cangwu. Therefore, the other tutors in Zhang Tie's family were a bit inimical to Feng Cangwu at the beginning. They even wanted to "compete" with him on knowledge. After Feng Cangwu casually performed a perfect teaism in front of the other tutors, the other tutors had thought highly of Feng Cangwu by treating him as a god. They then started to call him Master Feng. As a result, when Feng Cangwu taught those Zhang kids, all the tutors audited on one side with a thirsty expression too.

Zhang Tie hailed inside. All the knowledge and recognition of Feng Cangwu were the educational achievements of Heavens Fortune Sect. As one of the top seven sects in Taixia Country, any disciple of the Heavens Reaching Sect could be the marshal of Norman Empire in Waii Sub-continent. Such a deep background could never be matched by commoners. When Zhang kids received the education of Feng Cangwu, it was equal to that they enjoyed the educational fruits of the Heavens Fortune Sect indirectly. Such a rare opportunity could not even be purchased in the market.

Feng Cangwu rapidly consolidated his position in the Zhang family. He lived in an independent courtyard while being served by 4 servants. Even Zhang Tie's parents respected him so much.

After coming to Taixia for a few years, Zhang Tie's parents had also gradually known more about Taixia Country. According to Zhang Tie's dad, tutors like Feng Cangwu might come by something with luck, but not by searching for it in major clans of Taixia Country. Without a compensation of hundreds of thousands gold coins a year, they could never have such a tutor. Such a figure was always a personage in a province.

Besides being able to bit Feng Cangwu to death, even Zhang Tie had to admit that he was just a rustic on many aspects compared to Feng Cangwu.

...

After hearing Feng Cangwu's question, Zhang Tie turned around and threw a glance at him. After that, he replied with a smile, "I'm afraid that the Gobbling Party will feel uncomfortable no matter where I am!"

"It's too dangerous. Although you will reap a lot, you have to pay a high price for that. When the Gobbling Party realizes that, they will fight you to death for sure. Previously, the Gobbling Party mainly targeted at Huaiyuan Palace; from then on, they would mainly target at you."

Zhang Tie waved his hands and said with a casual look, "I don't care, I believe that the God blesses the good man!"

Feng Cangwu threw a glance at Zhang Tie as he had not imagined that Zhang Tie could say this. As knights used to control their own fates; however, Zhang Tie looked like being carefree. How could he comfort himself like commoners usually did? At this moment, the arrogance that Zhang Tie displayed in the Heavens Ball 3 months ago like a mutated lion had disappeared.

'The scene that he exposed his sharp fangs, bit off my neck one piece after another and swallowed them always appeared in my dreams over the past 3 months. As a result, I always experienced the most terrifying nightmare, which was also my mental obstacle. However, this guy tells me that the God blesses the good man facing the powerful enemy?' Feng Cangwu could never believe that it was Zhang Tie's true thought.

Watching Feng Cangwu's expression, Zhang Tie knew what he was thinking about, "Aye, I've got a secret for you."

Blinking his eyes, Feng Cangwu asked, "What secret?"

With a solemn and sympathetic expression, Zhang Tie looked up and said, "When in Waii Sub-continent, I was a pious believer of Gaya, the mother of the land. I once pledged to save all the believers of Gaya who were in dangers. I believe that as long as I saved them, Gaya would save me too!"

"Are you kidding me?"

"I will do that for a long time from then on!"

Feng Cangwu gazed at Zhang Tie as he was not sure whether Zhang Tie was telling true or not...

At this moment, Zhu Dabiao the fat guy ran over here in a clumsy way while his hair and body had been covered with snow. This guy was having a snowball fight with the kids of Zhang family.

"Whoops, whoops, Zhang Tie, your sons respond so fast. They have such a great strength and precise throwing ability. Look at my head. Are knight's kids born to bully others? Mamma Mia..." When Zhu Dabiao complained to Zhang Tie, the three kids had caught up with him. With giggles, they threw three snowballs from almost 20 m away towards Zhu Dabiao's upper, middle and lower parts at the same time. Zhu Dabiao wanted to dodge; however, he could only avoid from one snowball while the other two hit onto his head and figure at the same time...

At the sight of this, Feng Cangwu's eyebrows faintly moved...

Zhang Tie knew that Feng Cangwu must have sensed something with his knight's consciousness. The three kids had already shown their amazing precise throwing ability...

After the new year festival, Zhang Chenglei, Zhang Chengting and Zhang Chengpei would be 6 years old while they would gradually activate their bloodlines and fix their dispositions. It was time for them to cultivate their battle skills and light their surging points...

Chapter 875: A New Start

On January 23rd, the airport outside Embracing Tiger City...

After coming to Embracing Tiger City once again, Zhang Tie felt relaxed!

Zhang Tie had not set free any living beings himself for a long time. Previously, he set free sand-scale fish in Hidden Dragon Island every day. Later on, he had less chance to do that. Gradually, he invited others to do that for him by paying them. He just ate fruits.

After picking the special cultivation method once again, Zhang Tie felt pleasant in an inexplicable way.

It was hard to describe this pleasure. It originated from the depth of his heart and flew across his body like a sweet spring flowing out of the wilderness. After that, Zhang Tie was immersed in a pure, pleasant state. In such a realm, Zhang Tie felt that he might always set living beings free himself from then on, even just for this pleasure.

Actually, the higher level one was, especially after one promoted to a knight, it would be harder for one to sense this pleasure, which was really a special, spiritual enjoyment.

Zhang Tie knew that Zhang Taixuan would appoint Zhang Yuanshan as the new dean of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province today. 'This might be out of the expectation of many people; however, what was more unimaginable was that I would become a bounty hunter in Taixia Country on the same day.'

Zhang Tie didn't need to register as a bounty hunter himself. The Building of Brightness in Taixia Country was a semi-governmental organization being affiliated to the local judicial agencies. He only needed to prepare his materials and submit them to the Building of Brightness in Youzhou City. 'It's none of my business as for how

others would interpret it and frame the Gobbling Party with it.'

The Gobbling Party deserved it...

'After this event, the bullsh*t imperial official in the Censorate of Xuanyuan Hill might not walk away from the shadow caused by this event for the rest of his life. He's doomed to be regarded as a villain by the public.'

That was Taixia Country!

Gentlemen seek harmony while possessing their unique opinions; villains only seek consistency with others while possessing no unique opinions. After coming to Taixia Country for almost 4 months, Zhang Tie found that he gradually fell in love with this place.

The airport in Embracing Tiger City was pretty boisterous and vigorous. Airships in different shapes and colorful coatings were coming and going in the sky above the airport, large or small. Zhang Tie felt that this common airport was even more boisterous than the airshow held in Waii Sub-continent.

The fury-level airships produced by Huaiyuan Palace ranked top in Waii Sub-continent; however, they lost their halos in Taixia Country.

Taixia Country really had a powerful manufacturing industry. Take the prefectures in Youzhou Province as an instance, the airships produced in Spiritualmaple Prefecture and Chaoyang Prefecture were competitive to that of Huaiyuan Palace while better airships manufacturing clans and enterprises existed in other provinces such as Yanzhou Province, Huizhou Province, Tongzhou Province and Chaozhou Province. The airships produced by the imperial airship manufacturing plants that were affiliated to the imperial court of Taixia Country ranked top in kind, quantity and quality.

Facing such a great stress and competition, the airship

manufacturing enterprises of Huaiyuan Palace had to reduce production scale; meanwhile, they started to employ talents from everywhere and started the project approval and technical storage of the second generation of fury-level airships.

Huaiyuan Palace would make a regular report to Clan elders about such situations; therefore, Zhang Tie knew these "trifles" pretty well.

Zhang Tie was the first one to walk out of the airship, followed by Feng Cangwu and Zhu Dabiao.

After exiting the hatch door of the airship, Zhang Tie looked up at the airships in the sky. By putting one hand over his forehead, he narrowed his eyes and sighed with emotions, "The airships here are much more varified than those in Waii Sub-continent; hmm, additionally, they seem to move faster. There're airships that fully combines the modules with the air sacs..."

Zhang Tie had been in Embracing Tiger City twice. Firstly, he passed by it; secondly, he came here to attend the clan elders' conference. As he left here so hurriedly the previous two times, he didn't even have time to look around it. Basically, he only had some aerial photographs about this city in his impression. Therefore, it was impossible for him to have a deeper understanding of this city. After adjusting his mood and time, when he came to Embracing Tiger City once again, Zhang Tie immediately felt the difference between this city and those in Waii Sub-continent. Such a tiny difference manifested the power and uniqueness of Taixia Country.

When Zhang Tie was talking about the airships, they saw a large hard-type airship painted with a blue boar pattern slowly rising up from a position in front of them. There were four Hua characters beneath the pattern—— 蓝风航空 1 .

Feng Cangwu was glassy-eyed about Zhang Tie's words; however, Zhu Dabiao burst out into laughter, "That's nothing strange. If you

take a look in the provincial city of Huizhou Province, you would find that the airship bases over there were at least dozens of times larger than this one. The Auspicious Cloud Airport in Huizhou Province occupies over 200 square miles. Tens of thousands of airships access to that airport every day. If you were there for the first time, you might even get lost!"

"Hahaha, I will take a look over there if there's a chance!" Zhang Tie also burst out into laughter.

When they talked, they arrived at the entrance of the exclusive position of their airship and went to the underground.

In Waii Sub-continent, all the airport facilities were above the ground; however, in Taixia Country, only ground crew and regular railed, steam logistics trains could move above the ground of regular airports. All the people getting off the airships had to leave the airports through professional underground tunnels. They were forbidden to leave on the ground. Almost all the airports in Taixia Country were two-floored or multi-floored. The underground buildings were far more plentiful than those on the ground. There were even huge airship and material warehouses beneath many airports. In this way, the airports could run in a higher efficiency and cause fewer accidents in normal times; in wartime, two-floored or multi-floored airports could provide the biggest protection to the airships, personnel and materials.

Besides airports, Zhang Tie knew that almost all the highways in Taixia Country could bear large war airships. All the railways in Taixia Country spared a plain and an open land for at least 10 super large airships within 200 miles.

The underground tunnel of the airport of Embracing Tiger City was dozens of meters in depth. It was spacious and bright. The surface of the underground tunnel was paved with cyan stone slabs. There were so many passers-by over there.

In the daytime, besides an air vent in each dozen of meters in the

tunnel, both walls of the tunnel were paved with one fluorescent strip. In each fixed distance, there was one fluorescent wall. Passengers could leave the airport through the underground tunnel.

There were some plants in the underground tunnel. On both sides of the tunnel were shops, hotels and complete living facilities. Passengers or crew members could live here well. Those shops were selling specialties of Youzhou Province. Some companies and stores had their offices and branches here.

"Jingling...Jingling..."

With an euphonious tinkle of bells, an odd-look vehicle drove here from behind.

Running on a rail which was narrower and smaller than the underground tunnel, that vehicle had a very low chassis. The entire vehicle was composed of 3 carriages. The full length of the vehicle was a bit greater than that of a bus. The three carriages were full of rows of seats. Each seat could hold 4 people. It even didn't have a roof. Therefore, it looked pretty simple and convenient.

The vehicle was like a simple miniature train and an amplified toy for children. Two tough Siberians were sitting in the chairs at the head of the vehicle. They were stamping this manual power device by feet like playing seesaw while holding a handle by two hands respectively.

The vehicle just moved as fast as jogging commoners. Therefore, they didn't work hard. When someone was in front of them, the tough guys just tinkled the bells by pulling the ropes to warn the passers.

Those in front of the vehicle could give a way to it or take a seat in it.

Watching some guys on his side jump into the vehicle, Zhang Tie

understood that this vehicle was an underground scheduled bus in the airport.

If it was replaced by a steam mini-train, the heavy smoke would cause a severe pollution in this relatively closed space. Therefore, they just used a manual railed mini-train. Commoners might be a bit tired to do that; however, it's no problem for a LV 2 soldier. Let alone this vehicle was matched with two "drivers".

'Such a manual mini-train could definitely match the manual airplane that I used in Selnes Theater of Operations.'

At the sight of such a mini-train, Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he felt it was very funny.

"Papa, here's the mini-train, I want to take the mini-train, I want to take the mini-train..." A kid who had just entered the underground space exclaimed. It seemed that they were waiting on the side of the rail only for taking this mini-train.

When the train passed by, the kid's dad instantly strode onto the train in an agile way together with the kid. They were sitting right in front of Zhang Tie.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the kid even made a face at him...

Chapter 876: A Quarrel

When they exited the airport, Zhang Tie waved his hand towards a green steam taxi. The taxi then parked beside them. Zhang Tie let Zhu Dabiao sit in the co-pilot seat while he and Feng Cangwu sat on the back seats.

After getting on the vehicle, Feng Cangwu started to twist his body in an uncomfortable way with a faintly stiff facial expression. By contrast, Zhu Dabiao felt pretty fresh. Zhang Tie remained unruffled.

"Where're you going?" The driver who was a bit baldheaded turned around and asked them.

"Take us to the biggest seafood trading market in Embracing Tiger City!" Zhang Tie said in Hua language.

"Ahh, the biggest seafood trading market is located in the Whitesand Gulf. It's in the south of Embracing City over 25 miles away from here. It will cost you 2 silver coins, sir!" The driver quoted. If the passengers disagreed, they had to get off.

"No problem, let's go!" Zhang Tie smiled.

After hearing Zhang Tie's answer, the driver started the car. With a slight shock, the green taxi started to run.

"Are you really going to buy seafood?" Zhu Dabiao asked Zhang Tie with a serious look.

"I've told you. I'm here to do that!" Zhang Tie explained.

Although he had mentioned it to Zhu Dabiao and Feng Cangwu before they came here, the two guys didn't believe that Zhang Tie was here for setting free sea living beings. Therefore, they followed Zhang Tie here.

"Hahaha, that's interesting..." Zhu Dabiao rolled his eyes before saying, "If it really works as you've told us, I will have a try too. I'd

like to see whether Gaya will pay special attention to me!"

"As long as you stick to it, you will see the effect!" Zhang Tie said.

"Really?"

"Practice is the sole criterion for testing the truth!" Zhang Tie replied with the most popular sentence among Hua people before the Catastrophe.

Zhu Dabiao replied with a smile before turning back. Watching the scenery outside the window, Zhu Dabiao made a comment, "Embracing Tiger City is really developing well. The population is rising here..."

"It will be better!" Zhang Tie added.

Previously, Zhu Dabiao only wanted to look around Golden Sea City after coming back from Youzhou City with Zhang Tie. After the lantern festival, he would recruit some subordinates and purchase some materials in Yanghe Prefecture before building 1 or 2 towns and settlements in the land that he had bought for the preparation of further development. It was also the regular method for Taixia Country to develop border areas.

Benefited from the convenience of sea trade, Yanghe Prefecture was very developed in human trafficking or gracefully "border economy". Those foreign population from other subcontinents or Chaosang Subcontinent which was adjacent to Taixia Country would be transported to Embracing Tiger Harbor by huge ships and become members of the contingent in the border areas of Taixia Country. Along with these people were a large number of materials, capital, valuable equipment and machines from all the other subcontinents.

After Youzhou promoted to an established lower province in Taixia Country, the "border economy" in Yanghe Prefecture became hotter. Local major clans and foreign major clans which wanted to expand their domestic territories in Youzhou Province

would demand a lot of cheap labor forces to make their cheap land "alive" or to constantly consolidate their domestic territories and population size. New border residents would also bring greater market demand and a lot of capital, which were very beneficial to a lower province which was vast and sparsely populated.

The holy war pushed all the subcontinents surrounding Taixia Country to transfer their population, capital and industries to the Eastern Continent. On this occasion, the prices of population, materials and equipment were pretty cheap in Embracing Tiger City. Those border foreign residents could have a bit dignity with the protection of the laws of Taixia Country; however, those machines and equipment that were transported from other subcontinents to Taixia Country were directly sold at the price of metal craps. Some were even sold in terms of ships. As long as they could offset their freight and bring a bit benefit to their owners, they would be constantly transported to Taixia Country from all the surrounding subcontinents. This was a grander feast for the major clans in Taixia Country.

Zhang Tie didn't know how would the holy war underwent; however, given the current situation, the holy war seemingly provided a chance for major clans in Taixia Country to exploit those subcontinents around the Eastern Continent. Due to the holy war, Taixia Country firstly grew more powerful instead of suffering a catastrophe...

Perhaps this was the rudimentary reason for Taixia Country to only interfere with the battles in the subcontinents to a certain degree at the beginning of the holy war. The demons drove the resources from all the subcontinents to Taixia Country. How could Taixia Country which flew the blood of Hua people fight for those foreigners at the cost of the strength of itself? How could it prevent these resources from flowing into its own territory by maintaining the safety and stability of those subcontinents?

Retrospecting to the history of humans, each worldwide war

provided the best development time for those safe and stable countries and continents which were far from battle flames. The power of Hua people in this age was closely related to the safety and stability of the Eastern Continent in the earlier two holy wars.

Watching the boisterous streets outside the airport, Zhang Tie realized something.

Since they got on the vehicle, Feng Cangwu had been feeling uncomfortable. In only a few minutes, Feng Cangwu's body had become stiff. His uneasiness grew each second.

After staying with Feng Cangwu for so many days, Zhang Tie also knew that this guy was not only very arrogant but also a clean freak. He would take bath two times a day and would never use items which had been used by others. However, this guy's response in the taxi really made Zhang Tie amazed. Although this taxi was not deluxe or new, it was at least okay; of course, unavoidably, hundreds even thousands of people had sat on the back seats. Although the cover of the seats didn't look dirty, its color had faded away.

"Haven't you taken a taxi before?" Zhang Tie asked Feng Cangwu.

"Not yet!" Feng Cangwu shook his head.

"Young man, you've not even taken a taxi before? It seems that you come from rural areas. Many people would have a carsickness or feel like throwing up when they took a taxi for the first time; if you feel like throwing up, please tell me in advance. I will park it on the roadside. Don't vomit it in the car. It's hard to clean!" After hearing Feng Cangwu's words, the driver started to "instruct" him. Finally, he added with a good intention, "Young man, don't just stay in the rural area. You need to look around. It only takes you a few silver coins for a ride. Don't be that frugal; otherwise, you will regret it when you're old."

After hearing this, Zhang Tie tried his best to not burst out into laughter. Even Zhu Dabiao's shoulders kept quivering. Only Feng

Cangwu's face turned black at once...

When they came to Embracing Tiger City, at Zhang Tie's request, all of them had changed a set of very common clothes. Therefore, others could barely identify their statuses; otherwise, if they loitered in the seafood market in expensive boa-silk clothes, they would look very strange and would send a signal to those sellers that they were here to be ripped off, not to mention potential troubles...

Zhang Tie knew the living conditions and thoughts of the small figures at the bottom of the society pretty well.

Feng Cangwu wanted to say something; however, he finally stopped because he didn't think that he had deteriorated to quarrel with a taxi driver. Nevertheless, after swallowing his words, Feng Cangwu felt like swallowing dozens of balloons as he felt pretty inflated...

In less than one hour, the driver had taken them to the Whitesand Gulf in the south of Embracing Tiger City along the coastline.

Being miles away from the Whitesand Gulf, they had smelt a special fishy sense from the sea wind that blew from there.

Compared to the Embracing Tiger Harbor which was anchored with huge passenger liners, the Whitesand Gulf was anchored with a lot of fishing boats, which varied from dozens of tons to tens of thousands of tons.

There was a fishery processing plant covering several square miles being close to the Whitesand Gulf. Right between the processing plant and the docks, they saw the biggest seafood market in Yanghe Prefecture.

Soon after they entered there had they seen many workers in black rubber water-proof pants busy unloading seafood and big fishes from big ships by crane...

"Here we are, did you see the place with blue steel tiles in front of us? That's the biggest seafood market in the Embracing Tiger City. The seafood market here is very large, it divides into many regions. If you want to buy something more fresh, you could go to the docks and directly buy them from those fishing boats. However, those seafood on fishing boats are only sold in terms of ship or wholesale!"

After parking the car, the driver made an explanation to his passengers kindly. Zhang Tie then fumbled 3 silver coins out of his pocket and gave them to the driver. After that, he pulled open the door of the vehicle and got off the car with Feng Cangwu and Zhu Dabiao.

"I've not taken a taxi before; however, I'm not from the rural area!"

Before getting off, Feng Cangwu finally poured out the words that he had been standing so much on the vehicle. As a result, the driver threw a glance at him like watching a lunatic. At the same time, Zhang Tie and Zhu Dabiao burst into laughter.

After the driver drove away, the three guys stood nearby a region of the seafood market. Smelling the stimulative fishy and bloody smell, Feng Cangwu turned his face once again.

Watching them still exchanging glances with each other, a slightly shorter guy ran over from afar immediately. The moment he arrived in front of them, he had nodded and bowed towards them very politely, "Welcome, do you need any help?"

His Hua language sounded a bit weird; however, he looked similar to Hua people; besides, his humble smile made people feel good.

"You're...from Chaosang Subcontinent?" Zhang Tie asked after throwing a glance at him given the knowledge that he had learned.

"I'm Haruki Murakami. I'm from Chaosang Subcontinent. I can

provide you with the information about fish trade in Whitesand Gulf. Please give me your concern!" As this man replied to them, he made another deep bow towards Zhang Tie. His head could almost touch his knees.

"My guests, if you're new here, Park Yong Tai hopes to serve you!" Another guy ran over here with a big smile.

Compared to the guy called Haruki Murakami, this guy had a big round face and small eyes, which looked a bit ridiculous but impressive...

Haruki Murakami immediately threw a glare at Park Yong Tai; Park Young Tai also glared at Haruki Murakami, being not to be outdone...

After throwing another glare at each other, they turned around and watched Zhang Tie, Zhu Dabiao and Feng Cangwu at the same time.

"If you want to learn the fish trading information in Whitesand Gulf or buy something, this humble man is glad to serve you three and will never let you down!" Haruki Murakami said.

"If he could do it, I could do it too; additionally, I only need half of his premium!" Pak Young Tai immediately made a response.

'F*ck, I've not imagined that I could see two human races in Chaosang Subcontinents quarrel with each other in front of us the moment we come here...' Zhang Tie swore inside.

<form class="cha-score" data-cid="30545860391662386" data-report-eid="qi_Do6" data-bid="6838665602002505" data-report-bid="6838665602002505" data-report-cid="30545860391662386">
</form>

Chapter 877: Locking the Targets

The Fusang people and Xinluo people in Chaosang Subcontinent were always opponents. Although living in the same subcontinent, the two people had their own countries, which were incompatible as fire and water. They used to fight each other from time to time. In the almost 1 millennium from the age before the Catastrophe to the present, the two human races had never been in peaceful co-existence. Even though Zhang Tie didn't know the reason.

Except for one commonplace, namely, the two people always called themselves the descendants of Hua people in Taixia Country even though they belittled and attacked each other. They both wanted to return to Taixia Country to gain the official approval of Taixia Country.

A lot of Xinluo people and Fusang people were living in Youzhou Province, except for some of them came to Taixia Country legally, most of them arrived there by secret ferry. Many Gaoli People and Fusang People even voluntarily sold themselves to be border residents in Taixia Country. For major clans of Taixia Country, the servants of the two peoples were extremely diligent and docile; especially Fusang people, female Fusang people were very obedient while male Fusang people could usually be trained as domestic dare-to-die warriors.

Haruki Murakami and Pak Yong Tai were all in the line of fish trading information provision in Whitesand Gulf. Both of them were small figures at the bottom of the society. However, they didn't forget about being hostile against each other; instead, they even became more antagonistic against the opponent. As long as they could destroy the others' good plan, they would definitely surge forward.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could meet two people from Chaosang Subcontinent here. However, he was really shocked by the performances of them. Therefore, Zhang Tie had some special

thought.

'Besides setting living beings free, I need two able men to do that for me in Golden Sea City. After all, I could not stay in Golden Sea City forever.'

'As a clan elder, if I mobilized the strength of the clan to set living beings free, it might arouse big troubles and various guesses. If so, the karma might be destroyed. Finally, I might not be able to get any fruit at all.'

'Therefore, I'd better be low-key.'

'After promoting to a knight, it's extremely hard to form the earth chakra, this kind of fruit which could constantly improve the battle strength actually becomes more precious.' Zhang Tie determined to pay special attention to this thing.

'Actually, I've not developed the fruit of redemption very well. I could set free a lot of animals. However, as of now, I have only taken a couple of fruits of redemption.'

"Are you familiar with the situation here?"

"Of course, I've lived in Embracing Tiger City for one decade. I'm very familiar with the situation here; unlike someone who has just been here for a couple of years!" Pak Yong Tai hurriedly replied.

Given the orthodox Hua language, Zhang Tie knew that this guy must have lived longer here.

After throwing a glare at Pak Yong Tai, Haruki Murakami explained in a calm yet aggressive tone, "All my guests are returning customers. I have the best reputation here; unlike someone. As a fishery agent, I'm intelligent and concentrative to save money and create the most value for my customers!"

"That's fine, I will employ both of you today. Besides your fixed compensation, the one with better performance could enjoy a bonus!" Zhang Tie said with a confident look.

After throwing another glare at each other, Haruki Murakami and Pak Yong Tai uttered in unison while bowing deeply towards Zhang Tie, "Glad to serve you, sir!"

"Alright, show me around the market first. I want to learn about the fresh aquatic products. You can give me an introduction about them!" Zhang Tie pointed at the boisterous steel shelter which was closest to him.

Haruki Murakami and Pak Young Tai then led them towards the trading market.

"Sorry for my rudeness, what do I call you three?"

Haruki Murakami was indeed wiser and politer than Pak Yong Tai. The moment they moved, he had asked Zhang Tie such a question meticulously.

"My surname is Zhang, the two are my friends!" Zhang Tie told Haruki Murakami that he was the main buyer.

"Ahh, in the Hua people of Taixia Country, Zhang's ancestors were the direct descendants of Emperor Xuanyuan and the creator of the human battle bow. It's a great, honorable family name!" Haruki Murakami said while flickering his eyes. Meanwhile, he expressed his obvious admiration to the family name Zhang, "Through study, the two family names Shenmu and Shangmu in our Fushang people are all branches of Zhang Clan. The so-called Shenmu and Shangmu are all raw materials of bows. The two family names carry our admiration and memory about the family name Zhang."

"F*rt!" Pak Yong Tai couldn't stand to spring up from the ground, "Our Xinluo people's ancestors were the direct descendants of Far-ancient Hua people. Therefore, our surnames are as same as that of Hua people. You Fusang people are just monkeys and barbarians living on isles!"

"You Xinluo people are all pickpocketers and actors. Before the

Catastrophe, you even said the God was Xinluo people and shared the same surname as you. Of course, you are pickpocketers!" Haruki Murakami instantly answered back sarcastically.

Pak Yong Tai went berserk...

"If you say any nonsense, please leave us. I'm not here to listen to you quarrel with each other!" Zhang Tie opened his mouth in a distant tone.

The moment they heard Zhang Tie's voice, Haruki Murakami's and Pak Yong Tai's hearts raced as they shut up immediately.

...

The fresh seafood trading market was very huge, which was at least hundreds of times larger than that trading market in Hidden Dragon Island. Of course, the seafood products here were more varified in greater quantity.

The entire fresh seafood trading market across Whitesand Gulf was full of human voices. The ground was covered with fishy and bloody water stains. Besides smelly crew members and workers holding big scoops, those pedlars were bargaining with customers and slaughtering marine living beings, causing bloody guts everywhere...

After entering here for less than half a minute, Feng Cangwu's face had turned pale. His trouser legs were sprayed with stinky mud, which was caused by some crew members who were passing by with some water tanks. On such an occasion, even knights could not avoid from such an embarrassing thing unless they flew off or used their protective battle qi.

Besides taking a taxi for the first time, it might be the first time for this elite apprentice of Heavens Fortune Sect to visit this place.

Feng Cangwu could not think it through why Zhang Tie could be as cool as a cucumber in such a dirty place.

Besides walking and looking around, Zhang Tie even bargained

with those pedlars and inquired information from those crew members as if he were a fishmonger.

Not only Feng Cangwu, even Zhu Dabiao had a new recognition of Zhang Tie.

Given Zhang Tie's current look, nobody could imagine that he was the very Lion of Youzhou Province and the former dean of Provincial Court.

Zhang Tie's horizon was greatly widened by so many fresh seafoods in the market including shrimps, crabs, fishes, shellfishes, conches, sea cucumbers and echinus. There were over 10 kinds of shrimps, 7-8 kinds of crabs and over 20 fishes. Abalone, fan shell, echinus, golden crab, saury, Spanish Mackerel, opium fish, flatfish, turbot, small-mouth fish, red porgy, blackfish, yellow-fin tuna, shark, yellow croaker, sea snail, triumphant star turban, emperor snail, Mantis shrimp, prawn, lobster, north sea shellfish and oyster were most popular.

It took them over 1 hour to take a round in the market. Zhang Tie also worked out a plan.

If Zhang Tie were the God, he only needed to wave his hands to let everything run according to his will and he must choose to set free all the animals at this moment; however, he wasn't. Therefore, he could only follow the principle of pragmatism and utilitarianism.

The animals that he was going to release should not be as rare as marine animals were always expensive and could not be constantly set free. It was very difficult for Zhang Tie to take one fruit of redemption from such rare animals.

Instead, the animals that Zhang Tie was going to set free should be numerous in quantity and could be released all the year round so that he could get fruits one after another. Secondly, such an animal should be cheap so that he could maximize the value of his fund. 'The value of life could not be measured by gold coins;

therefore, the value of seafood could not be measured by gold coins. I've already learned it from earthworms.' Thirdly, Zhang Tie insisted to not release hot seafood; he preferred common marine animals so that nobody else would like to compete with him and his behavior would not arouse the attention of others.

After inspecting and learning something from Haruki Murakami and Pak Yong Tai, Zhang Tie finally targeted at two common seafood: One was a tiny shrimp with a thick shell called gulf shrimp whose price was 45 copper coins per kg in Whitesand Gulf. It was very cheap. All the fishing boats would carry a lot of such gulf shrimps. The other one was a shellfish called hairy shellfish, which was numerous in quantity in Whitesand Gulf at a lower price. Each kg of hairy shellfish was only worth about 18 copper coins. The flesh of such a kind of shellfish tasted average; occasionally, people could get pearls from them; however, as hairy shellfish could produce very few pearls, which were always average, nobody paid attention to them.

When Zhang Tie told Haruki Murakami and Pak Yong Tai to rent a big fishing boat, to buy all the gulf shrimps and hairy shellfish in the market today and to set free all of them in the ocean, Haruki Murakami and Pak Yong Tai were a bit dumbfounded. Until Zhang Tie handed a gold check whose par value was 500 gold coins to each other did they realize that Zhang Tie was not kidding...

Actually, Zhang Tie also wondered what kind of fruits would he gain by setting free the two animals!

Chapter 878: Making an Arrangement in Whitesand Gulf

A steam, smoking fishing vessel whose water discharge was about 100 tons appeared on the open water over 7 miles away from Whitesand Gulf in the south with its crew and cases of seafood, making a sound of "tutututu".

The fishing vessel was just a bit bumpy on the sea.

As it was afternoon, people could see the limpid and blue sea water under the sunlight.

This open water was relatively tranquil. Additionally, fewer vessels were fishing here.

After arriving at the destination, the boat head walked out of the cabin and came to the deck of the fore before noticing his passengers who had chartered the boat.

The deck of the fore was filled with cases of fresh gulf shrimps and hairy shellfish while a group of people was talking about something over there.

When the boat head drew closer to them, he heard a young man of about 16 years of age talking about something.

"The God of Protection Church is very famous in Western Continent. They're very excelled at driving animals. According to the doctrine of this church, human awareness is the most mysterious realm in the universe. When we pay attention to the wild beast that we see, we're actually telling ourselves that its body is different than ours; therefore, it's different than us. However, if you stick to such a thought, you're actually preventing yourself from communicating with these animals. Because you treat the physical differences as the obstacle of your exchanges, you could not reach their inner hearts. Whereas, these animals are all created by Gaya. They are on equal footing with us! Actually, you could

ignore the physical differences between them and yourself and try to communicate with them using your awareness..."

Zhang Tie continued to pretend to be a priest jerk. Based on his acknowledge about the God of Protection Church; especially that he had learned from Krell, he was absolutely qualified to be disguised to be a pious believer of the God of Protection Church.

Even Feng Cangwu who had always been dubious about Zhang Tie's talent started to believe that Zhang Tie was a pious believer of the God of Patron Church. At least, Zhang Tie adopted the theory of the God of Patron Church. It might be strange if a Hua knight who had been living in Taixia Country was interested in foreign religions; however, it was understandable for Zhang Tie who grew up in a subcontinent to be interested in the God of Protection Church.

When Zhang Tie talked about the religion, Haruki Murakami and Pak Tai Yong both watched him with an admirable expression whether being real or not.

"You mean, you could communicate with these maritime animals?" Zhu Dabiao asked Zhang Tie with a dubious look.

Zhang Tie revealed a modest smile as he continued to fabricate a bigger lie so as to lay a foundation for explaining some of his abilities which were benefited from cultivating "the Great Wilderness Sutra" in Taixia Country. 'If someone finds out that I could drive animals, I hope they're not too shocked; as this is the secret skill that I've learned from the God of Protection Church.' "Based on my ability, I could indeed make simple exchanges with these maritime animals. I've also slightly learned how to drive animals. It was taught by a wild patron when I was in Waii Subcontinent!"

"Show us, hurry, show us..." Zhu Dabiao's curiosity was raised as he couldn't wait to urge Zhang Tie, "My grandpa also has an animal controller; however, that old guy is too arrogant. Besides

treating my grandpa respectfully, he just ignores me..."

After hearing their talk, the boat head became quiet. He had also heard about animal controller; however, he could never imagine that there was an animal controller in his boat. As for these guys who survived on their labor force, the world of animal controllers was too far away from their world.

There was a huge iron-sheet water tank in front of them, which was filled with gulf shrimps.

Under the gaze of the others, Zhang Tie walked to the huge water tank and stretched out his hand, "Come on, show us three of you!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, 3 gulf shrimps obediently climbed onto Zhang Tie's hand and stood in a line tidily.

"Raise your right hand!"

The three gulf shrimps raised high their right pincers at the same time...

"Put it down!"

The three gulf shrimps put down their right pincers at the same time...

"Raise your left hand!"

The three gulf shrimps raised their left pincers at the same time...

"Put it down!"

The three gulf shrimps put down their left pincers at the same time...

"Raise both your hands up..."

In a split second, 6 pincers were raised up at the same time...

Except for Feng Cangwu, all the others at present were shocked, including the boat head. They were not in a circus; instead, a young guy was displaying his skill to control animals. Although

they were just three tiny gulf shrimps, their performance was marvelous!

"Well done, go back to your water tank now. Tell your brothers and sisters that they're going back home soon!"

The three gulf shrimps then climbed back into the water tank. Only after a few seconds, all the gulf shrimps in the water tank in front of Zhang Tie became restless as they were clipping their pincers, making a sound "Kakakaka". Soon after that, all the gulf shrimps across the fishing boat became restless as if they had received the news. As a result, the sound "Kakakaka" was drifted from all the water tanks across the boat like drum beats. As a result, all the boatmen became stunned...

At this moment, Haruki Murakami and Pak Tai Yong were watching Zhang Tie with full awe-stricken expressions.

When Zhu Dabiao said that his grandpa had an animal controller, the two fishing information agents had realized that Zhang Tie's status was special. After watching Zhang Tie's performance, they behaved in a more modest way.

The boat head was also stunned as he had not seen this after fishing dozens of years. After swallowing his saliva, he told them with a respectful voice, "Here we are..."

"Stop the vessel and help these living beings return to the ocean then!" Zhang Tie issued the order. Closely after that, he put his palms together devoutly and closed his eyes before muttering the prayer of the God of Protection Church like a priest jerk...

"The mother of the land which carries all the living beings, please open your mind and welcome me and your living beings so that they could return to your infinite bosom and integrate with you in the light of your love..."

When Zhang Tie was muttering the solemn prayer, all the people in the ship started to pour tanks of gulf shrimps into the sea while

the exit of the water storehouse at the bottom of the ship was opened, discharging the hairy shellfish...

This time, Zhang Tie bought over 3,000 kg's gulf shrimps and 4,600 kg's hairy shellfish. However, plus the rent of this ship, the total price was less than 25 gold coins.

Only in a few minutes, after Zhang Tie finished his prayer, all the gulf shrimps and hairy shellfish had returned to the ocean.

When those gulf shrimps and hairy shellfish got rid of their death destiny and gained their rebirth and freedom, Zhang Tie faintly felt an invisible energy of gratitude gathering in his body, making him pleasant all over. He felt everything was bright and nice.

'Living beings really have their souls!'

After setting free the maritime animals, the fishing boat turned around and returned to the Whitesand Gulf.

...

After paying off the balance payment to the boat head, Haruki Murakami and Pak Tai Yong gave the remaining gold coins and gold checks back to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie promised 1 gold coin to each of them. According to the income of the fishing information agents, their minimal service fee was 50 copper coins. In block trading, the commission would not exceed 1% of the trading volume. Therefore, 1 gold coin was already a fat return for each of them. Generally, they might not gain 1 gold coin in half a month. During bad luck, they might not even gain 1 gold coin in one month.

Zhang Tie didn't take the gold coins and gold checks from them; instead, he asked, "How much could you make in one year in this line?"

"7 to 20 gold coins!" Haruki Murakami replied.

Pak Yong Tai nodded. This might be the sole tacit deed between

them since the beginning. The income in this line varied greatly. However, It depended.

"I need two people to help me set free maritime animals in Whitesand Gulf every day. I will pay you 50 gold coins a year. Would you like to serve me?"

Haruki Murakami immediately bowed deeply as his head could almost touch his knees, "Haruki Murakami will definitely live up to your expectation!"

Closely followed by Pak Young Tai.

This was undoubtedly good for them.

Zhang Tie watched them as he continued, "You can take this money first as your first year's compensation. As for the remaining payment, Haruki Murakami will take charge of buying gulf shrimps and setting them free in Whitesand Gulf every day, Pak Yong Tai will take charge of buying hairy shellfish and setting them free. I don't care how you spend it. You need to supervise each other; however, you cannot cause the other one any trouble. In the future, I might only employ one of you. Therefore, it depends on your performance. After a few days, I will dispatch a man called Paul to find you. He will be your head. You can report any problem to him. If you use up your money, remember to ask from him."

Zhang Tie was not worried that any one of them dared escape away with his payment. On the premise of having a high compensation, if any one of them really would like to be a criminal in Taixia Country only for hundreds of gold coins, Zhang Tie would not make any comment about him. After all, Zhang Tie had not felt about losing such a bit of money. However, if they didn't escape away with his payment, it was a good way to have them supervise and compete with each other, which would be a stable source of fruits. Therefore, Zhang Tie wouldn't suffer a loss from this trade.

This was also a way to use talented people. Wisdom lay in details.

Soon after they went ashore, Zhang Tie had received the message from his elder brother through remote-sensing crystal——Huaiyuan Palace has sent Aimei and Aixue home, dad and mom like them very much...

Chapter 879: Excessive

After making an arrangement in setting free maritime animals in Embracing Tiger City, Zhang Tie received Zhang Yang's message. Therefore, Zhang Tie soon returned to Golden Light City by airship from the airport in Embracing Tiger City.

After spending one day with Zhang Tie in Whitesand Gulf, Zhu Dabiao and Feng Cangwu both had a new recognition of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie also reached his target.

Of course, Zhang Tie was not coming back hurriedly to make love with Aimei and Aixue; he always respected them. No matter what, after asking for the two girls from Huaiyuan Palace, he would be their husband from then on. Therefore, he had to treasure them.

When Zhang Tie was going back to his berth cabin to absorb earth-elements crystals, he was stopped by Zhu Dabiao. Rubbing his hands, Zhu Dabiao flickered his eyes.

"If I always buy maritime animals and set them free, will I also cultivate the animal controlling skill like you?"

'What is this guy thinking about?' Zhang Tie became speechless. 'If animal controllers could be bought, they would never be so rare in the world.' "You want to be an animal controller?" Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhu Dabiao.

"Of course, your performance today was so cool. If I could also master this skill, I could accost girls in this way!"

'F*ck, you want to learn animal controlling skill only to accost girls?' Zhang Tie swore inside, 'If this guy wants to learn from other animal controllers, for this reason, he might be beaten to death.'

"The animal controlling skill relies on your realization. Listen to me, you can buy a pet and stay with it. One day, if you find that you could communicate with it even being silent, it indicates that

you have the potential to be an animal controller. Otherwise, it wouldn't work no matter how many animals you set free. However, according to the God of Protection Church, the more you set free, the luckier you will be. You will get the protection of Gaya, the mother of land!" Zhang Tie explained patiently like it was real. He didn't want to disappoint Zhu Dabiao.

"Is that real?"

"Yup!"

"Well, I will find a cat or dog to test whether do I have the potential to be an animal controller after coming back!" Zhu Dabiao said as he walked towards his room as he made a hand gesture in the air out of excitement...

Seeing Zhu Dabiao off, Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile before coming back to his own cabin. After that, he closed the door and took out one earth-element crystal from Castle of Black Iron in order to absorb it.

Through the master artisan in Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie's nanobead had become a mithril finger ring in only 2 days. The finger ring looked square and slightly big and coarse, making it plain. Additionally, it carried a rune effect of recovering one's physical strength by 11%. Nobody could see the nanobead embedded in the finger ring.

With this item as a cover, nobody would doubt that when Zhang Tie took items out of Castle of Black Iron. The space of the nanobead was like a private safe. Besides Zhang Tie, nobody else would know what he had stored inside it.

...

Golden Light City was only 250 miles away from Embracing Tiger City. The airship would arrive at Golden Light City in about 2 hours, during which period, Zhang Tie could rightly absorb one earth-element crystal.

When the airship landed in Zhang family's manor, Zhang Tie had almost absorbed one earth-element crystal. The dusk had just fallen when the lamps in the courtyard of Zhang family's manor had just been lit up.

When he was getting off the airship, Feng Cangwu was still tightly frowning his eyebrows as if he was concerning about something. Being simulated by Zhang Tie's performance in the daytime, after telling Zhang Tie about his intention, he had hurriedly returned to his own courtyard. Although it was late, Zhu Dabiao still let a guard of Zhang Tie's family lead him to a pet trading market in Golden Light City for selecting a pet.

Zhang Tie rapidly entered the main mansion as he knew that his family members must be waiting for him to eat supper due to the arrival of Aimei and Aixue.

Feng Cangwu and Zhu Dabiao had finished their supper in the airship. In normal times, Feng Cangwu used to eat in his own courtyard; however, Zhu Dabiao ate everywhere; he used to eat outside. Occasionally, he would eat with Zhang Tie's family members in the main mansion without feeling bashful at all.

...

When he caught sight of Aimei and Aixue, he found they were sitting on Linda's side and talking with his family members.

Today, Aimei and Aixue both wore a beautiful longuette, which looked elegant and graceful. Watching Zhang Tie entering, Zhang Tie's family members instantly threw their glances at him.

"Uncle has new wives..." Zhang Chengze and Zhang Shiyu applauded as they exclaimed.

Aimei and Aixue's faces blushed. Only after throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, they had moved their eyes away rapidly. Zhang Tie also felt his face hot. 'Although Aimei and Aixue were arranged by Huaiyuan Palace, they might be very satisfied to be here. However,

as I asked for them from Huaiyuan Palace, I feel like being a villain in the village who forcibly occupies beautiful girls of some family.'

"Ahem...ahem...you're all here. Come on, let's start the dinner..." Zhang Tie walked to his chair, pulling it out and taking a seat in a calm way.

"Come on, eat..." Zhang Tie's dad uttered while all the family members started to move their chopsticks.

Although it was just a simple dinner, it indicated that Aimei and Aixue would become members of Zhang Tie's family from today on.

It was a bumper dinner. Zhang Tie nipped dishes for Aixue, Aimei and Linda by chopsticks.

Gradually Aimei and Aixue became relaxed.

After supper, Zhang Tie's mom gifted one pair of her bracelets to Aimei and Aixue respectively. Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law and wives also presented gifts to Aimei and Aixue. Zhang Tie's dad warned Zhang Tie with a "solemn" look to not bully Aixue and Aimei from then on.

When the kids of Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang seriously queued up to call Aimei and Aixue aunts, the sisters' eyes turned red.

As two girls who had become orphans since childhood and could not sense the warmth of family, they felt like dreaming about everything in Zhang Tie's family.

Before coming to Zhang Tie's family, although the two sisters were surprised about being selected by Zhang Tie, they were afraid of being not able to get along with his family members. Therefore, they felt restless and pretty meticulous. However, after coming to Zhang Tie's family, they were really shocked by the harmonious and warm atmosphere in Zhang Tie's family. Even Linda, Beverly and Fiona were pretty kind to them, not to mention Zhang Tie's dad and mom. Therefore, Aimei and Aixue felt reassured.

...

After the reunion, Zhang Tie's dad and mom said they were going to bed, the other family members then returned to their own bedrooms too.

Linda, Beverly and Fiona led Aimei and Aixue to Zhang Tie's private mansion; showing them around the mansion and introducing their servants to them.

The bedrooms of Aimei and Aixue were newly furnished, which were spacious, luxurious and jubilant.

"We will hand him to you tonight. You'd better prepare well for that. I'm afraid that he will not let you sleep well tonight!" Don't let your elder sisters-in-law laugh at you if you cannot get up early the next morning." Fiona joked as she threw an "enchanted" glance at Zhang Tie.

After hearing Fiona's words, Aimei and Aixue blushed at once. Zhang Tie also felt a bit bashful as he threw a "threatening" glance at Fiona.

"Fiona, don't scare Aimei and Aixue anymore. Zhang Tie will care about their feelings!" Beverly smiled.

"Well, let's go back. It's too late!" Linda said in a tolerant tone.

"Thanks for your care, three elder sisters!" Aimei and Aixue threw a glance at each other before crossing their hands and putting them on the left side of their waists before bowing their bodies towards Linda, Beverly and Fiona with Chinese characteristic.

"Ahh, I almost forgot that our bedrooms are soundproof. You can exclaim as loudly as you can, nobody else could hear that!" Fiona added...

"Pah!" Zhang Tie, who couldn't stand her anymore, patted Fiona's plump butt...

...

Linda, Beverly and Fiona then left the room, leaving Zhang Tie, Aimei and Aixue inside.

Watching the pair of beautiful sisters, Zhang Tie's heart started to race crazily.

"Ahem...ahem...it's too late. I will take a bath. Then, we will take a rest!" Zhang Tie said with a "solemn" look.

After exchanging a glance with each other, Aimei and Aixue moved close to him with rosy cheeks before saying in a low voice like mosquitoes' buzz, "Hubby, let us take off clothes for you!"

They then started to undo Zhang Tie's waistband with their quivering hands...

...

This night, Zhang Tie was immersed in the gentle and soft dreamland with two Hua girls for the first time...

...

However, Xuanyuan Hill, a mysterious place being far away from Youzhou Province which was admired by all the people in the world was also not tranquil over this night...

An urgent message sent from Youzhou Province through remote-sensing crystal only contained a few words. After being deciphered, they were recorded on a secret piece of paper before being placed in a sealed metal cylinder. After being posted with an urgent symbol, the cylinder was finally presented to a dignified man with a yellowish face in the shortest period after passing some checks through some postmen.

The man uncorked the metal cylinder and took out that secret piece of paper. After spreading it on the desk, he saw a line of words——

——Zhang Taixuan appointed Zhang Yuanshan as the new dean

of the Provincial Court of Youzhou Province; Zhang Mushen resigned and became a bounty hunter!

"Excessive! You're seeking for death!"

The man just replied with a cold harrumph while the secret piece of paper, the metal cylinder and the desk had become powders in a split second after being twisted...

Chapter 880: Settling Down

It soon came to the February of the 900th year of Black Iron Calendar...

Although there were constantly unstable factors outside, Zhang Tie's family was still peaceful...

After Aimei and Aixue came to Zhang Tie's family for two weeks, Zhang Yang finally accomplished his authentication as an orange robe pharmacist in the Pharmacists Union in Youzhou City.

This news aroused a shock in a certain region although it was not that shocking compared to when Zhang Tie competed for the provincial governor for Zhang Clan in Youzhou City.

By now, Zhang Tie was a knight and a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace as a cultivation talent in Zhang Clan who would not be encountered in 100 years and the lion of Youzhou Province; Zhang Yang was a pharmacist talent who had promoted to an orange robe pharmacist at his 30s and became influential in the circle of pharmacists in Youzhou Province. In the opinions of the public, Zhang Tie's family had started to enter a wholly new rising track while its potential to be a major clan had gradually manifested.

The rudimentary reason that Zhang Yang chose to promote to an orange robe pharmacist at this moment and reveal his trump card was that he sensed the great stress facing Zhang Clan and Huaiyuan Palace. Under this great stress, Zhang Clan must have a greater influence and root deeper in Taixia so as to be stable and unswerving. Therefore, after negotiating with Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang revealed his trump card a few years earlier than that in their former plan, which indicated that Zhang Tie's family contained a knight and a pharmacist. Besides, Zhang Tie's family could borrow the strength from the circle of pharmacists.

When Zhang Yang promoted to an orange robe pharmacist, Jinwu Shipyard had silently merged the domestic shipyard being

affiliated to Huaiyuan Palace. After that, the new Jinwu Shipyard became the largest shipyard in Youzhou Province and monopolized over 60% of market shares of the shipbuilding industry in Youzhou Province.

In the same February, soon after the snow melt, a construction brigade of almost 100,000 people had left for the land that Zhang Tie had just bought and made preparations for the construction of Jinwu City, such as prospecting, site selection, road construction and erecting railways. Soon after these preparations were accomplished, constant materials, equipment and workers would enter that wilderland and build Jinwu City at the fastest speed.

This time, Zhang Tie didn't show them the blueprints of Jinwu City. When he showed the blueprints of the capital city of Sacred Iceland Kingdom to the public, he could owe them to Huaiyuan Palace; however, now, he would have no reason to explain it. 'It's very easy for Agan and Aziz. They would like to do that very much if I showed them the blueprints; however, I would arouse their doubts for sure.'

His elder brother was a pharmacist genius, he was a cultivation genius, if he was also a construction master who learned it himself, what would others think about his family?

'I'm already famous enough.' Zhang Tie really didn't want to make trouble anymore at this critical moment.

Thankfully, Taixia Country didn't lack experts and masters in city construction. Taixia ranked top in construction in the world. Zhang Tie just told them about Agan's opinions and hand it to professionals.

The February was bustling. With the smell of early spring, everything looked vigorous.

On February 13th, the group of members of God's Will Brotherhood came to Golden Light City.

This time, it took them much less time from Anping Prefecture of Guizhou Province to Youzhou Province by the fury-level airship that Zhang Tie had dispatched for them.

Only 11 of the 28 members of the God's Will Brotherhood would like to "have a big go at it from the scratch" with Zhang Tie in Youzhou Province.

After going back, according to Zhang Tie's request, Barley didn't tell others about Zhang Tie's current situation. He only told them that Zhang Tie was still alive and had already arrived at Taixia Country, who expected members of the God's Will Brotherhood to help him.

Zhang Tie's reputation as the Lion of Youzhou Province had not spread to Guizhou Province yet. Even if the news that Zhang Mushen the dean of Provincial Court of Youzhou Province inflicted heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church spread to Guizhou Province in the future, they could not imagine that Zhang Mushen was Zhang Tie. Even if they were told that Zhang Mushen's original name was Zhang Tie, they would never link it with the Zhang Tie they knew in Blackhot City. Because the name Zhang Tie was too common in Taixia Country. Even Barley's group didn't believe that he could become a knight at the beginning, not to mention others.

Finally, besides Barley, Doug, Sharwin, Hista, Leit, Bagdad, after receiving the news of Zhang Tie, Potter, Wood, Gandi, Jones and Franca came here without any hesitation. All the others had gotten married and had a family, who had settled down in Guizhou Province. As for those who came here, Wood had already been the father of two kids. Gandi and Jones had gotten married respectively although having no kids for the time being. All the others were still single by far.

Zhang Tie was already satisfied when he was told that over 1/3 of members of the God's Will Brotherhood that he founded in Blackhot City would still like to follow him after separating for so

many years. As for those who didn't come, Zhang Tie didn't blame them as they all had families and hoped to have steady lives. Zhang Tie could completely understand and respect their choice; additionally, he hoped for them to live happily.

Finally, the hotels and some properties of God's Will Brotherhood in Anping Prefecture of Guizhou Province were left to those who didn't come. They had an amicable parting and maintained their friendship in hearts. As of now, the God's Will Brotherhood gradually became an association of fellow provincials or townsmen from Blackhot City in Waii Subcontinent. However, a more united team came into being on Zhang Tie's side.

As the old proverb went, great waves swept away sand. This was also a test to the God's Will Brotherhood.

Not until they came to Golden Light City did Potter, Wood, Gandi, Jones and Franca know about Zhang Tie's current situation. They were all shocked after knowing that Zhang Tie had promoted to a knight.

Zhang Tie signed with complex emotions about being able to reunite with his friends and brothers whom he recognized in Blackhot City in Golden Light City, besides laughter and tears...

After living in Golden Light City for 2 days, they had left for Youzhou City.

Zhang Tie transferred all the properties that he had gained from "Master Jiang" to them, which was dozens of times more valuable than their properties in Guizhou Province. "Master Jiang" had a lot of properties in Youzhou City, most of which were in the prime land sections in Youzhou City. Besides the Jiang Mansion which occupied a wide area of land in Youzhou City, the rent of "Master Jiang" in the Artisan Street in Youzhou City would be over 400,000 gold coins a year.

After a slight renovation, the Jiang Mansion would become the first high-end deluxe courtyard hotel in Youzhou Province. The

rent of the Artisan Street could provide stable cash flow for them. Therefore, Barley and the other guys were ready for their great undertaking.

This was Zhang Tie's reward to his friends and brothers who trusted him.

After the arrival of the members of God's Will Brotherhood, Linda, Beverly and Fiona were also thrilled. Anyone would feel pleasant if they could reunite with their previous friends in Taixia Country.

Barley's group left Golden Sea City on February 15th; only after 3 days, namely on February 18th, Paul who had left Zhang Tie a few months had come back.

Although Paul didn't reach Zhang Tie's target, he still made a great achievement—From this March, a pharmacist clan which bred uangs would distribute one time more golden uangs to Paul, which meant that the number of fruits of redemption from the gratitude of golden uangs would increase two times in the same period, namely about 1 fruit per week. Therefore, Zhang Tie's strength would increase rapidly and steadily.

As long as he thought that he could have over 70 kg's strength after taking each fruit of redemption from the gratitude of golden uangs, Zhang Tie would be satisfied.

The main reason that Paul failed to meet Zhang Tie's target was that the demand for medicament in Taixia Country started to grow. As an important raw material for the medicament, the provision for golden uangs also started to be urgent; therefore, Paul failed to gain golden uangs by great batches.

Paul also came back with a good news. He learned that someone was breeding earthworms in the rural areas of some prefectures of Tongzhou Province, which were all used for feeding animals just like what Zhang Tie saw in Chevli Village.

Zhang Tie told Paul that he would be responsible for supervising Haruki Murakami and Pak Yong Tai when they set free gulf shrimps and hairy shellfish in Whitesand Gulf; additionally, Zhang Tie dispatched 4 Spirits people to Paul as his subordinates. From then on, Paul became Zhang Tie's "Redemption Steward". With 500,000 gold coins a year, he would ensure that Zhang Tie could eat fruits of redemption all the year round.

Given this point, Zhang Tie felt that Paul was like his employed farmer in his own farmland; however, this employed farmer didn't plow and sow common fields; neither did he reap common seeds. Paul was plowing and sowing the land of good fortune, yet reaping fruits of redemption for Zhang Tie.

The fruits of redemption from the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree were the only fruits that could be purchased with the highest cost performance. Therefore, Zhang Tie was very satisfied with them.

...

Zhang Tie passed the entire February in such a bustling atmosphere. When Zhang Tie enjoyed the great fortunes, his human relationships also became smooth; by now, Zhang Tie finally felt having settled down in Taixia Country completely.

At the end of February, Zhang Tie made a further breakthrough in his cultivation base when the 12th dragon scale on his knight's crystal plate was lit on.

On the last day of February, after finishing supper, Zhang Tie's mom pulled Zhang Tie to one side and told him, "You should go to Yingzhou Province, don't forget that you've one more wife there. Fan Clan has already been urging us..."

Chapter 881: Family Strategy (I)

On March 1st, the all-purpose medicament base of Jinwu Business Group in Golden Light City...

The base was built in a heavily guarded fortress. Its security system could match that of vaults in banks. After Zhang Clan and Jinwu Business Group moved to Youzhou Province, this place had become the largest all-purpose medicament plant and metallurgy plant of Jinwu Business Group.

On one floor of the basement of this base, there were 500 huge half-sealed terrines, each of which was higher than 1 m just like a huge water vat.

As these terrines were placed so tidily, they were standing in lines from every perspective. When one stood on the stages above this floor and watched them, one would feel like reviewing troops.

This basement was designed very specially. There was a huge piece of crystal weighing dozens of kilograms on the ground in each fixed distance. The special energy field brought by these huge pieces of crystals would mix with the looming fragrance of the super enzyme in this space; after taking a breath of it, one would feel refreshed and spirited.

Some workers in white dustproof suits, hats and masks were walking among those huge terrines. They would stop occasionally so as to check the fermentation.

Even workers should pass 5 safety checks before entering this basement.

Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang, Zhu Dabiao and Feng Cangwu in white dustproof suits had just entered it and were standing on the steps at the entrance of this floor.

"Here's the base of all-purpose medicament!" Zhang Yang introduced it to Zhu Dabiao and Feng Cangwu.

After hearing Zhang Yang's words, Zhu Dabiao widely opened his eyes, "All of them?"

"All of them!" Zhang Yang nodded.

After being shocked for a few seconds, Zhu Dabiao forcefully swallowed his saliva before asking in a terrified way, "What's the value of these all-purpose medicaments?"

The ex-works price of these all-purpose medicaments is 20,000 gold coins per vat. As there're 500 vats in front of us, they are worth at least 10 million gold coins. Based on the market quotation, their terminal retail price might be above 15 million gold coins."

Even though Feng Cangwu was always distant, after hearing that the items in these vats were worth about 15 million gold coins, he also raised his eyebrows.

Even in Taixia Country, this was also a big figure for many people.

"How many vials of all-purpose medicament could Jinwu Business Group produce each year?"

"This year, we plan to produce 15 million vials of all-purpose medicament. The total sales volume would break the upper limit of 100 million gold coins!"

When they talked about that, they went downstairs and traveled across those huge vats.

Walking through those terrines, the fragrance of all-purpose medicament grew dense.

Each terrine was marked with an exclusive number. There were a production date and a fermentation date under each number. There was even a log sheet beside each number, which contained the signature of the director of each procedure. Each link of the production process was under strict control. Therefore, the quality of these all-purpose medicaments was guaranteed.

Previously, Jinwu Business Group needed to purchase vials for all-purpose medicament from outside; now, Jinwu Business Group could produce vials for their all-purpose medicament themselves; additionally, they had over 10 orchards where they planted various fruits in Yanghe Prefecture. They could realize self-sufficiency. That was to say, nobody could influence the production of Jinwu Business Group.

"What are these crystal generators used for?" Zhu Dabiao asked out of curiosity as he watched those huge pieces of crystals.

"Through the test, we found that huge pieces of high-quality crystals could improve the quality and activity of all-purpose medicament!"

After wandering here for a short while, Zhang Yang opened a sealed terrine and scooped out some cups of a well-fermented all-purpose medicament for Zhu Dabiao and Feng Cangwu.

After drinking the all-purpose medicament and tasting it for a short while, Zhu Dabiao forcefully patted his thigh, "Good, I will deal with you..." After saying that, Zhu Dabiao threw an embarrassed glance at Zhang Tie, "But I do not have enough money. The bit of money that my grandpa gifted me was spent on the patch of land that I've bought. Therefore, I could not purchase too much this time!"

"Jinwu Business Group could gift you 1 million vials. After you open the market in Yanzhou Province, if you want to order more, you can pay us then!" Zhang Tie said, which meant that he gifted over 10 million gold coins to Zhu Dabiao.

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, Zhu Dabiao's eyes turned red at once. After sniffing twice, he forcefully patted onto Zhang Tie's shoulder and said, "That's my brother!"

...

Yesterday, Youzhou City had already purchased 200,000 vials of

all-purpose medicament from Jinwu Business Group as the storage of the six warehouses in Youzhou City. It was the first time for Zhang Tie's all-purpose medicament to enter the six warehouses of a Class A city in Taixia Country. Although it was not too many in the local purchase storage contents for six warehouses storage in a Class A city in Taixia Country, it possessed a historical significance for Zhang Tie's family.

If Zhang Tie's all-purpose medicament could enter the nationwide purchase storage contents for six warehouses storage of Class A cities and be stored as a strategic material by each Class A city in Taixia Country one day, even though the Gobbling Party had a great influence in Taixia Country, Zhang Clan and Huaiyuan Palace could still maintain their force in Taixia Country, which could not be rocked by any people or any force unless the Gobbling Party wanted to rise in revolt.

The power of the Gobbling Party lay in that they bound themselves with the crown prince and the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele. As long as all-purpose medicament could enter the standard six warehouses storage of all the Class A cities in Taixia Country, Zhang Tie would almost bind it with the entire Taixia Country and all the Hua people in the world. As a result, Zhang Clan's foundation would reach each corner and nook of Taixia Country and be as steady as Mount Tai.

Now that the Gobbling Party knew the power of binding, Zhang brothers knew that too.

After a hot discussion, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang realized that the target and strategy that they would push all-purpose medicament into the nationwide purchase storage contents for six warehouses storage in all the Class A cities in Taixia Country was closely related to the rise of Zhang Clan in the next hundreds of years and became the most important mission for them in the future.

The reason that Zhang Tie gifted 1 million vials of all-purpose

medicament to Zhu Dabiao lay in that he wanted Zhu Dabiao to push all-purpose medicament into the local purchase storage contents of the Class A cities in Yanzhou Province. As a grandson of the Provincial Governor of Yanzhou Province, Zhu Dabiao had a great advantage in doing this job legally.

Compared to the target of Zhang family, 1 million vials of all-purpose medicament meant nothing at all...

Chapter 882: Family Strategy (II)

A few years ago, all-purpose medicament was not as popular as it was now; It was not even as hot as that in Waii Subcontinent. When Jinwu Business Group started to sell it in Taixia Country, it was even let out in cold. Until now, all-purpose medicament gradually became widely accepted by people in Taixia Country.

Taixia Country was too powerful and prosperous.

The main function of all-purpose medicament was that it could be used to replace many low-end medicaments. After the holy war broke out in Waii Subcontinent, many low-end medicaments were in shortage; from then on, all-purpose medicament became more prominent and precious in Waii Subcontinent.

By contrast, at least so far, other low-end medicaments were in sufficient provision in Taixia Country; therefore, the all-purpose medicament could not win its position in Taixia Country.

Additionally, all-purpose medicament had a great effect on healthcare and curing many diseases. In Taixia Country, traditional Hua medicine ranked top; over 99% of Hua people would choose to take traditional Hua medicine when they were sick. However, given the treatments adopted by traditional Hua doctors, few of them would recommend vials of medicaments to their patients; especially this medicament was much more expensive than the other traditional herbal medicines.

Whereas, these were not the biggest problem facing all-purpose medicament.

The biggest problem that all-purpose medicament faced at the beginning was that very few people across Taixia Country believed that it could be produced in Waii Subcontinent.

In this age, the most powerful pharmacists were in Taixia Country, even the headquarter of Human Pharmacists Union was

located in Taixia Country. It could be said that Taixia Country was the source of the profession human pharmacist. Even the pharmacists in Taixia Country could not make it, how come a pharmacist in Waii Subcontinent made it, not to mention all-purpose medicament. Only idiots would believe in you!

The Hua people in Taixia Country were too proud of their talents; therefore, the salesmen and personnel of Jinwu Business Group who attempted to promote sales of all-purpose medicament in Taixia Country at the beginning were usually taken as liars and sent to yamuns in Taixia Country.

The situation that all-purpose medicament was widely accepted in Taixia Country in only a few years could never just be awaited at home but benefited from the efforts of Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang.

With the efforts of Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang, plus the unusual effect of the all-purpose medicament, the sales volume of all-purpose medicament finally registered a blowout growth in Taixia Country until two years ago, namely, the latter half of the 898th year of Black Iron Calendar through the gradual accumulation of public praise. From then on, the all-purpose medicament produced by Jinwu Business Group had been out of stock or in urgent demand.

In Taixia Country, those who first realized the marvelous effects of all-purpose medicament and started to purchase and hoard all-purpose medicament by great batches were those major Hua clans who moved to Taixia Country from Jinyun Country and Qilan Country. These clans were the first batch of loyal customers of Jinwu Business Group who opened the market for all-purpose medicament in Taixia Country.

The production of 15 million vials of all-purpose medicament this year could never meet the demand of the extremely large population and market in Taixia Country,

Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang both knew that a family had to rely

on something in Taixia Country so as to lay a solid foundation over there.

They didn't rely on Zhang Tie's battle strength—at least now, as a black iron knight, even if he promoted to an earth knight in the near future, Zhang Tie could only be a local overlord in a province at most. However, in front of the powerful opponent Gobbling Party, an earth knight was far from enough.

Compared to Zhang Tie's battle strength or the background of Jinwu Shipyard and Huaiyuan Palace, only all-purpose medicament could work as the firmest foundation of Zhang Tie's family in Taixia Country.

As early as two years ago, Zhang Yang had thought about pushing all-purpose medicament into the six warehouses storage of Class A cities in Taixia Country. The encounters that Zhang Tie faced in a short period after coming to Taixia Country accelerated the process.

The strategic materials in the six warehouses storage of Class A cities in Taixia Country all referred to the nationwide and local purchase storage contents in Taixia Country.

Nationwide six warehouses purchase storage contents were the hard targets that Taixia Country made to all the Class A cities. All the materials and their quantities entering this contents had to be met by all the Class A cities in Taixia Country. By contrast, local purchase storage contents, as soft targets, were established on the basis of the nationwide six warehouses purchase storage contents, which could be determined by local magistrates and agencies according to local features.

Take Class A cities in the north as an instance, they could add some cold-resistant clothes and equipment in local purchase storage contents as they would. Similarly, Class A cities in the south; especially those coastal cities could add some weapons or equipment that could be used to respond to the threats from the

sea in the local purchase storage contents as they would. If Class A cities had rich plant resources in their surroundings, they could add some specific plant seeds in their local purchase storage contents; similarly, those Class A cities neighboring rich resource sources could add some special rare metals in their local purchase storage contents.

Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang were targeting at the nationwide six warehouses purchase storage contents in Taixia Country. However, it was very difficult for the all-purpose medicament to enter this contents. Because the nationwide six warehouses purchase storage contents in Taixia Country was determined by the top three chancellors of Taixia Country and approved by Emperor Xuanyuan. Even a screw in the nationwide six warehouses purchase storage contents would mean a great trade volume across all the Class A cities in Taixia Country.

Therefore, they had to adopt the proper strategies and coordinate with the general trend of the society step by step.

In a short-term, Zhang family aimed to have the all-purpose medicament enter the local purchase storage contents of Youzhou Province, Gaozhou Province, Mozhou Province, Tongzhou Province, Qiongzhou Province, Yanzhou Province, Huizhou Province and Chaozhou Province within the northeast military region.

In Zhang Yang's words, if Zhang Tie and he could accomplish this plan, they would make their ancestors illustrious and die with satisfaction no matter how many years they would spend.

As they were in Youzhou Province, which only had one Class A city——Youzhou City, with the support of Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Yang, Zhang Tie had already conquered it. Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang planned to have it blossom in the middle of northeast military region. If they could conquer Yanzhou Province, the core of northeast military region, the other provinces in the northeast military region would learn from Yanzhou Province. Gradually,

they would conquer the entire northeast military region.

When the all-purpose medicament entered the local purchase storage contents, the general trend would come into being; gradually, all-purpose medicament would enter the nationwide purchase storage contents.

Zhang Tie was going to leave Youzhou Province for Yingzhou tomorrow to pick up another wife whom he had not even seen yet. Zhu Dabiao was also going to leave Golden Light City tomorrow. Therefore, before leaving, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang showed Zhu Dabiao around the all-purpose medicament base of Jinwu Business Group and fixed the cooperation between them. Being legal, through this cooperation, they could realize a win-win situation to the satisfaction of all.

Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang were both full of confidence about this plan.

After becoming a pharmacist, Zhang Yang had put the greater part of his study on the "cold extraction technology" of all-purpose medicament.

Now that the essential energy aura yeast that Zhang Tie gifted to Zhang Yang could convert common fruits into the super enzyme, it should also convert herbal medicines into the super enzyme; because herbal medicines were essentially similar to fruits.

In the past, people mainly extracted the useful ingredients from herbal medicines by fire; many traditional Hua doctors and many pharmacists made the decoction of medicinal ingredients or pills in this way.

However, the essential energy aura yeast that Zhang Tie gifted to Zhang Yang reminded Zhang Yang of an utterly different thought. He chose to extract the essence of those herbal medicines through fermentation in normal or low temperature, which was called "cold extraction".

Through "cold extraction" technology, the essences of herbal medicines could be maintained at utmost. It could completely avoid damages and losses in useful ingredients and aura caused by traditional "heat extraction".

At the beginning, Zhang Yang was just thinking about it. However, after becoming a pharmacist, through constant tests, he made a great breakthrough and turned it into reality.

This year, Jinwu Business Group's series of all-purpose medicament increased from 1 to 3. It was the first time for the family of manjusaka all-purpose medicament to welcome their new members; the product line of the all-purpose medicament of Zhang family would be further verified in order to push the series of the all-purpose medicament of Zhang family to the entire market of Taixia Country and satisfy the demand of the greater population.

The first type of all-purpose medicament was standard, which was an old type and was completely fermented by various fruits. Its effects remained unchanged.

The second type of all-purpose medicament was called Rose Beauty. Besides containing the essences of all sorts of fruits in the standard type, it also contained the essences of peach blossoms, rose blossoms, red jujubes and polygonum multiflorum and job's tears. It was developed in cold extraction technology. The second type of all-purpose medicament was the marvelous product for women to maintain their beauty and youth. Compared to the standard type, this one was more effective.

The third type of all-purpose medicament was called Evergreen. Rose Beauty was targeted at women; evergreen was targeted at men. Like Rose Beauty, besides containing the essences of various fruits in standard type, Evergreen also contained the essences of medlar, angelica, Cistanche deserticola, longan, cornel, yam and Poria cocos and was developed in cold extraction technology. Besides maintaining all the features of the standard type, it also had a prominent effect in strengthening the essence and marrow of

men. As long as men tried it, they would know its effects.

Now that Taixia Country didn't lack substitutes of low-end medicaments, Zhang Yang directly developed a unique all-purpose medicament to make it irreplaceable...

Among the 1 million vials of all-purpose medicament that Jinwu Business Group gifted to Zhu Dabiao, there were 3,000 vials of Rose Beauty and Evergreen. The three kinds of medicaments were sharply different on packages; especially the latter two kinds. As Rose Beauty and Evergreen were targeted at high-end customers, they were sold in sets. Each set of Rose Beauty and Evergreen contained 30 vials respectively as one course of treatment at the price of about 500 gold coin. Although it was a high price for commoners, in Taixia Country, many consumers considered 500 gold coins as 5 copper coins. Therefore, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang didn't need to worry about their sales...

Chapter 883: Re-entering Castle of Black Iron

On the early morning of March 2nd, Zhang Manor...

Right in the airport of Zhang Manor, the servants had already filled the warehouse of a fury-level airship with vials of various all-purpose medicaments. This time, Zhang Tie brought 200,000 vials of all-purpose medicaments to Fan family in Yingzhou Province...

Zhang Tie's parents, Linda, Beverly, Fiona, Aimei and Aixue were all here to bid a farewell to Zhang Tie.

Compared to the reality that most of the knights in Taixia Country had dozens even hundreds of wives and concubines, Zhang Tie was a devoted husband with only 5 women on his side. Additionally, this marriage was agreed by his parents; therefore, Linda, Beverly, Fiona, Aimei and Aixue were not jealous about that.

These days, Linda, Beverly, Fiona had been getting along well with Aimei and Aixue. Zhang Tie was also indulged in the living that he had been dreaming of.

"Well, dad and mom, you can go back now. I will bring her back from Yingzhou Province this time!" Zhang Tie told his dad and mom.

Zhang Tie's dad and mom then nodded towards him.

"Brother Cangwu, thank you for protecting the manor after I leave!" Zhang Tie told Feng Cangwu in a secret way.

Feng Cangwu nodded in a distant way.

As it was Zhang Tie's private affair to pick his wife in Yingzhou Province, if Feng Cangwu followed him there, he would become Zhang Tie's subordinate; therefore, Feng Cangwu just stayed in Zhang Manor and continued to be the special lecturer of Zhang

kids. By now, Zhang Tie's parents, elder brother and wives had already known that Feng Cangwu was a knight and came from the Heavens Fortune Sect. Therefore, the entire Zhang family respected Feng Cangwu very much. As a result, Feng Cangwu gained a mental balance in Zhang family.

Similarly, in Taixia Country, it was impolite for a man to pick up his new concubine, followed by his wife and concubines. Without this concern, Zhang Tie really wanted to take his wives and concubines there for a honeymoon.

After bidding a farewell to his wives and concubines, Zhang Tie cradled his three kids and kissed them one after another. After that, he turned around and entered the airship...

...

When the fury-level airship gradually lifted off, Zhang Tie wove his hands towards his family members on the deck. Until the airship arrived at 1,000 m in height and his family members left did Zhang Tie enter his berth cabin.

The crow-fly distance between Yingzhou Province and Youzhou Province was over 80,000 miles. Even if he had a smooth ride by airship, it would also take him at least 2 months on the way. It was already early enough if he could come back by July.

By contrast, it would only take him 2 weeks for a round trip by airboat.

When he thought about the advantage of an airboat, Zhang Tie only let out a sigh.

Although fury-level airship was good, it was nothing compared to airboat.

If not being afraid of exposing his flying ability, Zhang Tie could directly fly towards there himself while the all-purpose medicaments could be stored in his nanobead. However, it was not wise for him to expose his ability to the public at this moment;

besides, he would suffer from a series of troubles later on. Therefore, Zhang Tie could only go there by airship.

The marriage was fixed by Zhang Tie's parents in Fuhai City. At that moment, Zhang Tie didn't have a Hua woman yet; therefore, his parents promised this marriage to the household register director whose surname was Fan. According to his mom, that Fan's daughter was good-looking; besides, she was highly cultured and steeped in propriety. Given her look, she could definitely manage domestic affairs and give birth to healthy babies. Additionally, Fan family was fulfilling the appointment and having their daughter wait for Zhang Tie these years. As their daughter gradually grew mature, Zhang Tie legitimately should go pick her up.

"During this flight, I will cultivate quietly in my room. No need to prepare the food and drinks for me. If I need them, I will go get them. Don't bother me unless there's an emergency!" Zhang Tie told the captain before entering his room and shutting the door.

Having been in Taixia Country for a few months, Zhang Tie felt pretty good to enter such a free and single state once again.

With a smile, Zhang Tie took a round in the room before entering the cultivation. After sitting on a cattail hassock with crossed legs, Zhang Tie took out an earth-elements crystal from Castle of Black Iron and started to absorb the earth elements by 18 spiritual hands at the same time...

After 2 hours, he had completely used up the golden earth-elements crystal and threw it back into Castle of Black Iron. After that, he got a new one and continued his cultivation...

...

Zhang Tie used up 30 earth-elements crystals constantly. When he opened his eyes, it was already 2 days later.

Zhang Tie then picked himself up from the ground and moved his limbs before exiting the berth cabin.

"Where are we?"

"We're above Yangui Mountain Range. After flying over Yangui Mountain Range, we will exit the air territory of Youzhou Province!" A bodyguard answered respectfully.

Yangui Mountain Range was a barrier in the south of Youzhou Province.

Zhang Tie then came to the deck.

Zhang Tie's robe sounded in the spring wind. Zhang Tie looked down and saw an undulating, lofty mountain range over 10,000 square miles. The mountain slope had been covered with tender grasses. The more southward it was, the greener it would be. In the sunglow, the land and mountain range was plated with a glow, which was especially splendid.

Flocks of wild geese and migrant birds were flying below in the form of herringbone and rested in Yangui Mountain Range, bringing endless vitality to the land downside there...

When the spring arrived, the wild geese and migrant birds flew back from south where they tided over in winter...

Mountain Range was definitely more splendid than Kalay Mountain Range in Waii Subcontinent.

Watching such a splendid landscape in the sky, Zhang Tie felt broad-minded and refreshed all over.

'What's immortal is the tens of thousands of miles landscape that breed billions of living beings and the flowing clouds which share brilliance with the sun and the moons and dance with the stars. Those b*stards of Gobbling Party want to abduct the natural laws and verify its immortality with one Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele? How ridiculous they are!'

Standing on the deck, Zhang Tie appreciated the scenery downside there. Until 1.5 hours later when it turned dark did he let out a long sigh and return to the cabin.

After knowing that Zhang Tie had exited his berth cabin, all the cooks started to prepare for the supper for him. As it was the dinner time, Zhang Tie ate supper together with his crew in the dining hall. After joking with the crew casually, he returned to his private berth cabin.

When he recalled that he had not entered Castle of Black Iron for a long time, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. In the next second, he had disappeared into the room and appeared in the palace tree in Castle of Black Iron...

"Welcome back, Castle Lord!" Heller and the other three servants were waiting for Zhang Tie there as if they had known that Zhang Tie was coming back.

Before Zhang Tie uttered had he seen Edward gazing at that finger ring being embedded with the nanobead with an aggrieved look just like how an unrivaled powerhouse was dispatched to be a watchdog of a hotel...

Of course, Zhang Tie was clear what Edward was thinking about. After scratching his head in an embarrassed way, Zhang Tie hurriedly comforted Edward, "Erm...this was a special situation. If I handed the nanobead to you, I could not have explained it to others. Next time, next time, I will definitely hand the goods item to you!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Edward's aggrieved look gradually faded away. However, he still let out a sigh with a pitiful look, "Actually, there's a better design for the combination of this nanobead and finger ring. What a pity! What a pity..."

Rubbing his face, Zhang Tie asked Heller, "Is everything going well in the castle lately?"

"All is well. But those residents in the castle have one thing for your consent..."

"What's that?"

"They've prepared some innocent and beautiful young girls and want to send them to serve you on the immortal mountain, Castle Lord!" Heller said with a meaningful smile.

'Innocent and beautiful young girls?' Zhang Tie patted his forehead, 'Those guys are really generous. I've already taken their articles of tribute last time; how could they contribute young female to me? Do they really think that I will take everything that they offer?

"I can take articles, but not female. Those young girls should fall in love with some handsome boys; marry them and deliver babies. What do they go up the mountain for? I don't want to delay their youth!" Zhang Tie shook his head.

"Actually, it's not bad to have some young girls here. The palace tree is too large. With a few more people, it would be more vigorous. Castle Lord, when you come back, you could have someone look after you. They don't have to stay in the mountain for the rest of their lives; only after staying here for a few years, they could go down the mountain; marry men and deliver babies too. It's a great honor and confirmation for those residents in the castle to go up the immortal mountain. Castle Lord, If you could accept them, all the residents in the castle would be greatly inspired! Castle Lord, you must know that you're their celestial being and creator. They just want to express their sincerity and respect to their own celestial being and creator. Castle Lord, If you refused them, you might discourage them greatly." Heller explained...

<form class="cha-score" data-cid="30615253087732902" data-report-eid="qi_Do6" data-bid="6838665602002505" data-report-bid="6838665602002505" data-report-cid="30615253087732902">
</form>

Chapter 884: New Fruits

Heller's words immediately reminded Zhang Tie of how those residents in the castle worshipped his statue.

As for those residents, since they were brought into Castle of Black Iron from the dilemma, they had taken belief as a necessary element and pillar in their lives.

Heller's words were reasonable. Therefore, Zhang Tie reconsidered it.

"How old are those girls?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"Those girls entered Castle of Black Iron at a very young age. After so many years, they are now 16 years old!"

After considering it for a short while, Zhang Tie finally nodded, "Well, just let those girls live in the palace tree for a few years. It's indeed like a huge playground here and a bit pitiful if there's nobody here in normal times. Just leave a nice memory to them!" After saying that, Zhang Tie saw a big smile on Heller's face. Zhang Tie then added, "However, each batch should not surpass 10 young girls; 4 years a shift. Besides young girls, young boys of the same age could also go up the mountains. They can go down the mountain when they are 20 years old. In normal times, these young boys and girls could take care of the affairs in the palace tree and learn skills from Agan, Edward and Aziz so that they could apply them when they go down the mountain..."

Zhang Tie was not worried whether these young girls and boys would cause any trouble in the palace tree. As the core of the palace tree, the small tree was in the sacrificial altar, which could only be accessed to by Zhang Tie, not to mention that everything in Castle of Black Iron was within Heller's control.

When the small tree occurred to his mind, Zhang Tie couldn't stand throwing a glance at that small tree. At the sight of those

fruits hanging over the small tree, Zhang Tie revealed a smile...

'Just find some apprentices for Agan, Aziz and Edward.' Zhang Tie thought, 'Perhaps, those girls and boys could fall in love with each other after staying here for 4 years.'

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Agan, Aziz and Edward chested out immediately.

"Now that Castle Lord has agreed with that, they might arrive here in 3 days!" Heller said while he found Zhang Tie had moved his eyes onto the small tree. Therefore, he also revealed a smile and told Agan, Aziz and Edward to leave.

"You should pay more attention to this affair. Don't let them think that these young girls and boys are destined to sacrifice themselves to the celestial being or be virgins for the rest of their lives. Don't arouse any tragedy! Now that they treat me as a celestial being, let them know that I actually just want them to live happily. No matter what, don't hurt anyone." Zhang Tie urged Heller as he walked towards the small tree and went upstairs onto the sacrificial altar one step after another.

...

Zhang Tie realized that he had not entered Castle of Black Iron for half a year since he came to Taixia Country in last September. It was the longest period for him to leave Castle of Black Iron.

Just like Zhang Tie's old friend, the small tree was waiting for Zhang Tie quietly whenever Zhang Tie came back.

This old friend had never let Zhang Tie down.

For over 6 months, fruits had been hanging over the small tree.

27 ripe leakless fruits;

2 iron-body fruits;

1 fruit of redemption from the gratitude of golden uangs, which was set free last September. As the market was running out of

golden uangs between the end of September and Mid-March, Paul couldn't help him set free golden uangs during this period.

Additionally, there was a fruit of brilliance, which contained the spiritual energy of Zhu Liang the poisonous wolf whom Zhang Tie killed on a wild island in the open water of Qiongzhou Province.

The more advanced the fruit of judgment was, the more "contributions" were needed to form it. Therefore, as Zhang Tie had imagined, he didn't gain a fruit of judgment after killing Zhu Liang.

Of course, the most eye-catching fruit was the red glittering and translucent fruit—— the fruit of plunder.

This was the reward for killing "Master Jiang". After taking it, a healthy commoner could immediately become a master artisan and get all the talents of "Master Jiang". This was the only fruit that could be taken out of Castle of Black Iron by far. Outsiders might never imagine about its function; however, it just appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

After circling halfway around the small tree, Zhang Tie finally caught sight of two wholly new fruits, one looked like a tiny gulf shrimp, the other looked like a shell.

At the sight of the two fruits, Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

Zhang Tie then placed one hand on the gulf shrimp-shaped fruit.

——Fruit of Redemption——Gratitude from gulf shrimps. The Fruit of Redemption has become ripe. Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——This fruit could improve the healing and recovering ability of Castle Lord by 1.5% and your bearing ability by 0.7% in the oxygen-deficient state.

If not the words "your bearing ability by 0.7% in the oxygen-

deficient state" in the latter, Zhang Tie thought that he was touching the fruit of redemption from the gratitude of earthworms.

Zhang Tie was stunned, 'Why does it carry the same effect as setting free earthworms by setting free gulf shrimps?'

"Castle Lord, actually, besides earthworms, many shrimps, especially the gulf shrimps that you've set free have a powerful ability of regeneration and recovery. Even if these animals lost their limbs, they could also regenerate them. Shrimps, crabs, geckoes and earthworms, all of them have such a great ability! These animals share the same gene segments." Heller's voice sounded on one side, "Therefore, by setting free gulf shrimps, you could also activate the relevant genes in your body. Additionally, gulf shrimps have a great viability in the oxygen-deficient state. Therefore, the fruit carries one more function!"

Zhang Tie understood it right away. Previously, he held that only by setting free earthworms could he gain such a great ability of regeneration and recovery. It was really out of his imagination that he could also gain the same ability by setting free gulf shrimps.

"You mean, I could also promote to medium recovery body by setting free gulf shrimps?"

"Yup!" Heller nodded, "Castle Lord, you only need to take a look at the advancing process of the fruit towards medium recovery body on the small tree!"

The fruit of advancement towards medium recovery body had been hanging there for a few years. Zhang Tie had not checked it since Hanna's family left that village before the holy war. Being reminded by Heller, Zhang Tie walked to the other side of the small tree and checked the fruit which had almost been forgotten.

Fruit of advancement towards medium recovery body—it's not ripe yet.

The energy of this fruit originates from the gratitude from earthworms. It's the continuity of the fruit of redemption.

By setting free gulf shrimps, you can make this fruit ripe faster.

It requires you to set free 160,000,000 earthworms or gulf shrimps to advance to medium recovery body from preliminary recovery body.

The current advancing progress is: 4,318,879/160,000,000.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter when he found the fruit of advancement towards medium recovery body was growing again, 'How lucky I am!'

'Good men always have good returns!'

After moving to the other side of the small tree, Zhang Tie put one hand onto that shell-shaped fruit.

——Fruit of Redemption——from the gratitude of the hairy shellfish. The Fruit of Redemption has become ripe. Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——This fruit could increase Castle Lord's defensive and anti-resistance capability by 0.1%.

The function of this fruit was also out of Zhang Tie's imagination. When he recalled the hard shell of hairy shellfish, Zhang Tie understood it at once.

'Precious, it's too precious!' Zhang Tie became thrilled once again. The improvement in defensive and anti-strike capability meant that he could have a greater battle strength in close combat. Although the increase of 0.1% in defensive capability was not too much, it was not easy for Zhang Tie to realize it as he had already got a very great defensive capability. Additionally, as long as he could gain such a fruit constantly, he would definitely make an essential breakthrough in his defensive capability.

Compared to iron-body fruits which could increase the "base" of his defensive and anti-strike capability overall, this fruit could increase his defensive and anti-strike capability overall by 0.1% in a split second.

'What a coincidence! The two new fruits today could both strengthen my capability to cope with harms and defend strikes.'

Watching these fruits, Zhang Tie had long been drooling...

Zhang Tie then sat under the small tree and started to engulf fruits.

He ate leakless fruits first. As he picked them off, he put them into his mouth, one after another. Each leakless fruit turned into a strand of hot flow and entered the void of the qi sea in Zhang Tie's lower abdomen, where they would lubricate the sun of battle qi...

It only took Zhang Tie a couple of minutes to eat all the leakless fruits. Closely after that, he stretched his hands towards the iron-body fruits...

Chapter 885: Master Artisan

Leakless fruits, iron-body fruits, the fruit of brilliance and two fruits of redemption...

As he engulfed those fruits one after another, Zhang Tie's battle strength gradually increased.

Leakless fruits lubricated and strengthened his battle qi; iron-body fruits strengthened his defensive and anti-strike capability; Zhang Tie's spiritual energy increased a bit after he took all the spiritual energy of Zhu Liang the fierce wolf; the two kinds of fruits of redemption further improved Zhang Tie's anti-strike and recovery capabilities.

That was how a knight gradually reached its heyday.

It took Zhang Tie 4 hours to digest all the fruits.

Eating fruits was the coolest and most effective way to improve his power. Zhang Tie enjoyed this process very much. After taking these fruits, Zhang Tie could obviously feel the pleasant, subtle changes in his body during the past 2 hours.

After the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province and drinking the dragon-marrow liquor, Zhang Tie had lit two more dragon scales on his knight's crystal plate. After eating so many fruits, Zhang Tie felt that his battle strength had evidently increased than when he participated in the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province.

Zhang Tie felt much better.

The last fruit on the small tree was the fruit of plunder.

At the sight of that fruit, Zhang Tie hesitated for a second, 'Should I take it now?'

'My current hidden profession is a very senior animal controller; I've reached the 15th floor of the All-spirits Pagoda and could even

easily control a double-headed parent worm. The profession of rune equipment's master seems to be not meaningful to me for the time being. As a knight, I should pay special attention to improve my battle strength and form my chakras. No matter how much efforts do I make in these professions, it will never match the effect of forming one more chakra.'

'Additionally, I have Edward, Aziz and Agan in Castle of Black Iron and master artisans in Huaiyuan Palace. Will it play its utmost role? Perhaps, I could leave this precious fruit of plunder to one of my kids.' Zhang Tie thought.

All of a sudden, the look of Gorath occurred in Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie's heart raced as his eyes turned firm at once. He then stretched out his hand and picked off that fruit of plunder. Closely after that, he sat below the small tree with crossed legs and took it...

'Skill is no burden. As the pillar of Zhang family, I should be more and more powerful so that Zhang family could have a bright future. If I collapsed, Zhang family would collapse too. Therefore, I don't need to leave this fruit to the younger generation of Zhang family at all. If I and my elder brother could not help the family to tide over difficulties, not to mention the younger generation. If I could become more powerful, I would provide better resources and conditions to the next generation of Zhang family. Therefore, I don't need to wait until this precious fruit plays its role over 10 years later; otherwise, it would be a great waste. Who knows what will happen in the decade?'

'Additionally, there's more than one shadow demon. If I met one in the future, I might gain another fruit of plunder.'

'What counts most now is to improve my battle strength to the utmost facing the stress of the Gobbling Party.'

'If I become a master artisan, I will have greater possibilities, which means more hopes and more freedom.'

After these thoughts flashed by Zhang Tie's mind, the fruit of plunder had been broken while an exotic energy directly scattered in Zhang Tie's mind. In a split second, numerous knowledge, skills and experiences about runes started to deepen into Zhang Tie's brain cells, awareness and physical neural reflex chains and became Zhang Tie's talents and gifts...

Zhang Tie felt that he gradually promoted from artisan apprentice to artisan, copper hammer artisan, silver hammer artisan, gold hammer artisan, mithril artisan, secret rune artisan and master artisan in a very short period as his experiences and knowledge gradually increased...

All the experiences and talents of "Master Jiang" in his whole life had been transferred to Zhang Tie through the fruit of plunder.

Sitting under the small tree with crossed legs, Zhang Tie closed his eyes although his eyelids were quivering. After a while, Zhang Tie opened his eyes and picked himself up from the ground.

During this period, Zhang Tie felt that he had spent as long as hundreds of years and as short as a couple of minutes...

After this contradictory feeling gradually faded away, Zhang Tie raised his hands and put them in front of his eyes.

Although the pair of hands remained unchanged superficially, Zhang Tie knew that they had already changed. Previously, they belonged to a knight as they could tear apart a powerful enemy in a destructive way; by contrast, they belonged to a master artisan; besides destruction, they were granted with one more ability—creation!

This pair of hands mastered the 27 metal smelting technologies and 39 forging skills...

This pair of hands could turn ores into metals and metals into machines or equipment of fighters. It was a pair of hands full of magical creativity.

In the stage of copper hammer artisan, this pair of hands could turn iron and bronze scraps into a complete set of sophisticated steam engine, various machinery parts and common swords, sabers, helmets and armors.

In the stage of silver hammer artisan, this pair of hands could turn the ores in the wilderness into the preliminary production chain of the human steam industry.

In the stage of gold hammer artisan, this pair of hands could make the most sophisticated steam turbines and almost all the machinery parts. The manual processing precision of the flat file could reach 1‰ of the thickness of a hair. This was already the precision of senior steam processing machine tools. The weapons, helmets and armors made by this pair of hands were all of top quality.

In the stage of mithril artisan, this pair of hands could forge rune equipment with precious mithril. After reaching the peak of metal processing in the steam age, it entered a more mysterious and magnificent realm...

After getting hang of the structures, micro plating, fine seal, secret expedition and shape building of at least 48 runes, the pair of hands promoted to be that of secret runes artisan.

After the rune equipment made by secret runes artisan could completely break the bottleneck of black iron effect and could work on knights, the pair of hands promoted to be that of a master artisan. From then on, the owner of this pair of hands would win awe and veneration wherever they were. In any subcontinent, the owner of this pair of hands would be qualified to found a sect.

'Are they my hands?' Zhang Tie watched his hands.

Besides this pair of hands, when he moved his eyes onto the finger ring, Zhang Tie had an utterly different feeling, 'In the opinion of a master artisan, that finger ring made of nanobead is indeed not bad; however, being limited to time, it was a bit coarse

and could not be further improved.'

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt that his manipulative ability had improved too much. He felt that he could make a lot of items from inferior to senior as long as he had raw materials. As long as he was free, he could produce a Faerie-dragon T9 sports car with the all the materials and conditions available in Castle of Black Iron.

"Congratulations, Castle Lord, you've become a master artisan and have one more talent!" Heller's voice woke Zhang Tie up from the thrill.

'What a funny world! Previously, I wanted to be an alchemist master; however, I became an animal controller and a rune equipment master consecutively instead. My weird master Zhao Yuan is a No. 1 criminal in Taixia Country, who will arouse great shocks the moment he appears.'

'If I changed my face and continued to live in Taixia Country as a master artisan, I'm sure that nobody could identify me.'

...

Time flew on the airship. Zhang Tie calculated time with earth-elements crystals instead of a clock.

In concentrative cultivation, Zhang Tie could absorb 10 earth-elements crystals everyday; as for the remaining 4 hours of the day, he would sleep 2 hours and eat or comprehend his fighting skills 2 hours.

Compared to the cultivation in the tower of time, such a intensity was just so-so. He felt pretty relaxed.

After almost 30 days, the 13th dragon scale on his knight's crystal plate was lit. On the second day, Zhang Tie left the room and breathed fresh air on the deck.

This time, he didn't see wilderness anymore, but a prosperous urban agglomeration. Among the urban agglomeration, he could see 100-storey skyscrapers everywhere. There were numerous

airships in the sky. Zhang Tie even caught sight of some rare airboats. Some airboats directly landed on the roofs of those skyscrapers in a very domineering way.

It was evening. Expensive top-quality fluorites were installed on the crystal lens lamp holders whose diameter was over 1 m on the roof of the skyscrapers while light beams shot into the sky, making the sky colorful...

Zhang Tie asked the captain where they were. The captain told him that they've already arrived at Haozhou Province, one of the top 36 upper provinces in Taixia Country...

The prosperous Haozhou Province made Taixia Country more impressive in Zhang Tie's mind.

After then, Zhang Tie re-entered his room...

After about another 27 days, when Zhang Tie almost lit the 14th dragon scale, the captain knocked at Zhang Tie's hatch door for the first time.

"Elder Mushen, we're in Fuhai City, Yingzhou Province..."

The two months flashed in the blink of an eye...

Chapter 886: Arriving at Yingzhou Province

After getting off the airship, Zhang Tie looked at the surroundings and found that this airport was not large. It was more like a private airport...

The airport was surrounded by mountains which were covered with green trees and colorful blossoms, revealing a strong sense of spring. Some delicate buildings and courtyards were looming in the woods not far away.

They were outside the city.

A black sedan was waiting for Zhang Tie at the entrance of the airship base while the driver and a round-face middle-aged man were standing there with solemn looks.

"Elder Mushen, I'm Zhang Cheng, the CEO of Jinwu Business Group in Yingzhou Province!"

Before Zhang Tie opened his mouth, that middle-aged man had introduced himself.

Zhang Tie nodded. He didn't see this man before. However, now that his surname was also Zhang and was a CEO of Jinwu Business Group in Yingzhou Province, he probably originated from Huaiyuan Palace.

Being conservative or feudal, according to the facts in the past almost 1,000 years from the Catastrophe to the present, those of the same clan would be more reliable than outsiders. Therefore, many key positions in Jinwu Business Group or all the major clans in Taixia Country were taken by their own clan members. The so-called professional managers (professional CEOs) were usually cultured by the large clans and business groups themselves. Those with greater abilities would have a broader channel promotion while those with poorer abilities would not be wasted either.

Given that Zhang Cheng was shrewd and cunning in his eyes,

Zhang Tie knew that Zhang Cheng should be a professional CEO of Jinwu Business Group.

"Where are we?"

"We're in the branch of Jinwu Business Group outside Yingzhou Province. The hotel has been arranged. As Elder Mushen must be fatigued by such a long journey, you'd better take a rest today. I will send your visiting notice to Fan Mansion tonight so that Fan family could make preparations for that. Elder Mushen could pay a visit to Fan Mansion tomorrow!" Zhang Cheng briefed the schedule and details of Zhang Tie in Yingzhou Province.

Zhang Tie directly walked to a door of the sedan while the driver in uniform pulled open the door for him. Zhang Tie sat on the back seat while Zhang Cheng sat in the co-pilot seat.

With a slight quiver, the sedan had driven out of the airport...

The highway outside the residence of the branch of Jinwu Business Group was spacious and plain. The middle and both sides of the two-way six-lane highway were fixed with green belts. As it was outside the city, there were not too many cars on the road. Zhang Tie could see a wide area of farmlands, villages and towns outside those green belts. Most of the houses in the villages and towns here were tidy and beautiful being featured by independent small courtyards. Given this point, Zhang Tie knew that the economic development level and living standard of Yingzhou Province as an upper province were far greater than that of Youzhou Province which had just promoted to a lower province.

Zhang Tie had been to a lot of places in Waii Subcontinent; especially after he disguised as Gorath when he almost traveled across the entire Waii Subcontinent. To be honest, none of the rural areas and towns outside cities in Waii Subcontinent could match that of here.

After hundreds of years of peaceful development, a place could make a shocking achievement; especially Hua people were diligent,

wise and creative. Therefore, the prosperity of many places across big provinces and upper provinces in Taixia Country had been out of the imagination of many people coming from subcontinents.

Just like how Zhang Tie was shocked by the prosperity of Haozhou Province last month when he was still in the airship.

"It's a nice place!" Zhang Tie watched the scenery outside the window as he chatted with Zhang Cheng. Zhang Tie never put on airs in front of these commoners. Therefore, Zhang Cheng felt that he was an easygoing man.

"Huaiyuan City is even better!" Zhang Cheng immediately turned around and replied to Zhang Tie, leaving half of his butt on the seat.

Although Elder Mushen was genial, his subordinate had to keep etiquette in mind at all times.

"It's said that Huaiyuan City is also a Class A city?"

"Yup!" Zhang Cheng replied with a bit of pride, "Yingzhou Province has 137 Class A cities; Huaiyuan City is one of them. Over these years, with the reputation of Huaiyuan Palace, Jinwu Business Group would win the trust of others at the fastest speed in case of a lot of troubles as long as we told them that Huaiyuan City and Jinwu Business Group belonged to our Zhang Clan!"

Zhang Cheng's words implied the significance of "domestic influence" and "the influence of a Class A city" in Taixia Country.

People were usually identified by face. As for large business groups, the city being affiliated to their clan was their face.

After hearing Zhang Cheng's words, Zhang Tie longed for taking a look at Huaiyuan City at once. 'I remember that Huaiyuan City is only over 2,000 miles away from Fuhai City. After handling the affairs in Fuhai City, I could take a look over there on the way back. It won't take me too much time.'

At the beginning, Lord Huaiyuan was forced to leave Taixia

Country; however, Lord Huaiyuan's posterity dreamed about coming back everyday. Huaiyuan City was a nail that Huaiyuan Palace had firmly knocked in Taixia Country.

"Does Jinwu Business Group have a good business this year?"

"After clan head took the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, the business of Jinwu Business Group and Long Wind Business Group has grown much better!" Zhang Cheng said implicitly.

This should be another face of Jinwu Business Group, which could hardly be described. Besides bringing profits to both parties, the so-called business had a greater function, namely, striking up an acquaintance with someone. Many business groups in Taixia Country expected to scrape acquaintance with the business group of the provincial governor of a province. Even though such a relationship and influence was useless for the time being, nobody could ensure that they would not use it in the future. This point remained unchanged from the ancient times to the present and from the barren lands in Taixia Country to the Western Continent. The background of the ruling class would never be underestimated no matter where it was.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile and became silent...

Zhang Cheng still wanted to say something; however, after finding that Zhang Tie became silent, he swallowed his words.

"What do you want to say?" Zhang Tie asked.

"The Gobbling Party has a great influence in Yingzhou Province. Besides Huaiyuan City, they have established Morality Associations in all the other 136 Class A cities. Although Fuhai City is not a Class A city, it also has a Morality Association. The Morality Associations of the Gobbling Party could communicate with each other through remote-sensing crystals. They're well-informed. Many members of major clans in Yingzhou Province have joined the Morality Associations. The greater part of

commoners has joined them too. Many commoners even voluntarily donated money and goods to the Morality Associations. Morality Associations have a very deep foundation in Yingzhou Province. The resentment between Elder Mushen and the Gobbling Party has long been known by the Gobbling Party here. Previously, the Morality Associations in Youzhou Province were destroyed and the power of the Gobbling Party was almost eliminated across Youzhou Province. Therefore, the Morality Associations in Yingzhou Province were terrified for quite a while. Some of them even urged to submit memorials to Xuanyuan Hill. Elder Mushen, you'd better watch out those backbones of the Gobbling Party in the Morality Associations in Yingzhou Province. They might cause you troubles!"

After hearing these words, Zhang Tie's face turned solemn. To be honest, when in Youzhou Province, he had not sensed the influence of the Gobbling Party and the Morality Associations among commoners; however, the situation reversed in Yingzhou Province.

The deep influence of the Gobbling Party in Taixia Country was really terrifying.

After hearing Zhang Cheng's words, Zhang Tie's heart raced.

However, after thinking about it for short while, Zhang Tie became reassured. 'As those guys have just lost an around-the-clock imperial supervisor, how will they dare to cause me trouble when I'm not an official anymore?'

'If so, don't blame me for my ruthlessness!'

...

Of course, Jinwu Business Group arranged the best hotel for Zhang Tie.

The hotel was called Landscape Viewing. Right in the coastal area being not far from Fuhai City, it had beautiful scenery in the

surroundings.

In Waii Subcontinent, most of the prosperous lands and deluxe hotels were in cities being protected by the high city walls. However, in Taixia Country, out of confidence or having not been baptized by the battle flames for hundreds of years, some places outside city walls were even more prosperous than that within the city walls due to rapid development before the expansion of the cities.

It indicated a terrifying high cost if these prosperous lands were included in the city walls. Additionally, it was a very tricky problem in urban planning. Therefore, such a phenomenon gradually came into being.

Zhang Tie's suite was on an artificial hillside. It was Heavens No. 7 suite. The Heavens suites in the hotels of Taixia Country were similar to presidential suites in other continents. Zhang Tie's suite covered over 3,000 square meters, which was matched with all the facilities and functions. The furnishings in the suite was extremely luxurious. This suite contained 3 swimming pools, large or small. Two outdoors on the balcony and the hillside where he could enjoy the seascape, one indoors where was linked to the main bedroom.

The price of this suite was 24 gold coins a day. Of course, this was a very high price for commoners; however, it was nothing for Jinwu Business Group and Zhang Tie.

Actually, Zhang Tie did not have a strict requirement on daily goods. However, he was really fascinated by the seascape and the surrounding environment. Therefore, he just lived in here.

Zhang Cheng even arranged one exclusive vehicle and two bodyguards of the business group for Zhang Tie. After Zhang Tie settled down, Zhang Cheng sent a visiting card of Zhang Tie to Fan Mansion in Fuhai City...

Almost the moment Zhang Cheng left, an uninvited guest had arrived...

Chapter 887: An Uninvited Guest

The uninvited guest was Yang Yushan, the head of the Morality Association in Fuhai City.

The moment Zhang Tie settled down in the hotel, he had been told that a guy was paying a visit to him. Therefore, Zhang Tie was amazed, 'The moment I arrived at Fuhai City, the Gobbling Party have already known that. It indicates that the Gobbling Party had been following me up. The Gobbling Party must have dispatched a lackey here to frighten me.'

With a sneer inside, Zhang Tie issued the order, "Go tell the head of Morality Association. I'm a bit fatigued after a long flight. I'm taking a bath right now. After taking a bath, I will rest. I've got no time to meet him. If he wants to see me, let him wait outside there!"

After issuing the order, Zhang Tie really took a cozy hot shower slowly. After that, he fetched a senior massage technician for a massage. Closely after that, he ordered a supper and had it sent into his suite.

It took him over 3 hours to finish the entire process while it gradually turned dark. After relaxing himself, Zhang Tie felt that all the fatigueness which was caused by over 2 months of constant cultivation finally disappeared.

However, the head of the Morality Association in Fuhai City was still waiting for him. He even asked to meet him once again. After thinking about it for a while, Zhang Tie sent someone to bring Yang Yushan in. He wanted to figure out the Gobbling Party's intention.

In the parlor of the suite, Zhang Tie met Yang Yushan, the head of the Morality Association in Fuhai City.

He was a middle-aged man with 3 wisps of a long beard and a

good look in a set of a white robe.

Although with a good look, after being treated coldly for a few hours, Yang Yushan's face had turned completely dark. Yang Yushan might not have encountered such a cold treatment over these years. Benefited from the deep influence of the Gobbling Party in Yingzhou Province, Yang Yushan as the head of Morality Association in Fuhai City would always win people's respect wherever he was. It was definitely out of his imagination that he was coldly treated by Zhang Tie this time.

During the past 3 hours, watching the massage technician and dining car entering Zhang Tie's suite, of course, Yang Yushan knew what Zhang Tie was doing in his suite—taking a bath, massage, having food. Finally, when it was his turn, Yang Yushan had been driven extremely furious inside.

In a loose night robe, Zhang Tie was leaning against the sofa and sipping the tea while waiting for Yang Yushan.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's look, Yang Yushan's face almost turned purple.

Standing in the room, he watched Zhang Tie with a sneer, "I've long heard that Zhang Mushen the lion of Youzhou Province is frivolous and unstrained at a young age. At the sight of you, I found you're far excessive than that. It seems that Huaiyuan Palace has been living in the wilderness for so long that you've even forgotten about the basic courtesy to a customer!"

After a shrewd light flashed by, Zhang Tie sneered as he picked his ears by finger and blew off the earwax, "If there's indeed a guest, I will definitely treat him passionately; however, it's unnecessary for me to treat a guy on an errand so politely. I've already shown my respect to you by meeting you. Well, my time is very expensive, 1 second for hundreds of thousands of gold coins. If the Gobbling Party wants you to pass any message to me, hurry up, don't waste my time! If not for passing the message to me on behalf

of the Gobbling Party, I think that you would never wait for me outside for a few hours. Am I right?"

Yang Yushan changed his face right away. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie could put it so straightforwardly. As a result, Yang Yushan even had no chance to continue to disguise; he then put it straight too.

If it were someone else in front of him, Yang Yushan would directly turn around and leave. Before leaving, he might even condemn that person; however, he was facing Zhang Tie. When he remembered the mission allocated by his superior, he had to control his anger.

"Because of the impeachment a few months ago, there's some misunderstanding between the Gobbling Party and Huaiyuan Palace. Now, there's a chance for us to resolve it!"

"Huh?" Zhang Tie raised his upper eyelids and replied with a smile, "How?"

Yang Yushan also revealed a smile as if he had regained his confidence at once, "It's simple. As long as you join the Gobbling Party and take charge of rebuilding the Morality Associations in Youzhou Province, you will be the new head of the Morality Associations in Youzhou Province!"

'What the hell? Are they dreaming that Huaiyuan Palace and I could surrender to the Gobbling Party by sacrificing our self-esteem?'

"This condition is too sophisticated. Additionally, it has a slow effect. Actually, there's one simpler and faster way to resolve the conflict between the Gobbling Party and Huaiyuan Palace. I'm sure it could take effect right away!" Zhang Tie said with a solemn look.

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Yang Yushan became stunned for a second before asking, "What's that?"

"Let the leaders of the Gobbling Party kowtow three times loudly

before the memorial tablet of Lord Huaiyuan and admit their mistake loudly before disbanding the Gobbling Party!"

"Don't be too excessive!" Yang Yushan was driven furious at once.

"Don't give up your treatment. Hurry up, go back home to take medicine. If you don't have money, take it from me!" Zhang Tie wove his hand like fanning away a fly.

As the old saying went, 'When the conversation got disagreeable, to say one word more is a waste of breath.' Yang Yushan replied with a cold harrumph before turning around and leaving. After a few steps, he turned around and said, "The Morality Associations in Taixia Country are based on the heavenly laws and morality stele, have you thought about the outcome to be against the heavens laws? You're in Yingzhou Province, not Youzhou Province..."

Zhang Tie also sneered, "Speaking of mercy, righteousness, heavenly laws and morality, why not talk about it in the territory of demons? After moving demons with the so-called mercy, righteousness, heavenly laws and morality, you can talk about them to me. As demons are also in the universe and restrained by the heavenly laws, if you couldn't persuade demons, why do you insist on that?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's irony, Yang Yushan replied with a cold harrumph. After that, he forcefully swung his arms and left...

Watching Yang Yushan's back, Zhang Tie slightly frowned, 'After refusing the olive branch from the Gobbling Party, it seems that I have to stand on the opposite side of the Gobbling Party from then on.'

'You're in Yingzhou Province, not in Youzhou Province.' Zhang Tie doubted that Yingzhou Province would cause him some trouble when he recalled the warning of Yang Yushan.

Zhang Tie's premonition was right. After Yang Yushan left,

Zhang Tie had sensed the deep influence of the Gobbling Party in Yingzhou Province.

...

Standing in front of Zhang Tie with a bashful look, Zhang Cheng told Zhang Tie what he encountered when he sent Zhang Tie's visiting card to the Fan Mansion in Fuhai City.

"I've sent the visiting card to Fan Mansion. However, the household register director said that he felt uncomfortable lately and was inconvenient for receiving guest tomorrow...he wants...wants Elder Mushen to pay a visit there two days later!"

According to the etiquette in Taixia Country, the new son-in-law should pay a visit to the family of his father-in-law on the second day after he arrived at the city of his father-in-law...it's impolite for him to pay a visit there 2 days later...

If Zhang Tie paid a visit to Fan Mansion tomorrow, he was still a son-in-law; however, if he went there 2 days later, his status as a son-in-law would fade away...

Chapter 888: Breaking off the Engagement

Because the household register director Fan didn't "feel good", Zhang Tie lived one more day in the hotel. Until the third day since he came to Fuhai City, namely the afternoon of April 29th did he "pay a visit" to Fan Mansion.

Fan mansion was in a tranquil place in Fuhai City which was surrounded by high gates and large courtyards.

There were two stone lions at the gate of Fan mansion, which indicated the deep family background of an official in Taixia Country.

When Zhang Tie got off the vehicle, he saw an old steward of Fan mansion waiting for him at the vermeil gate. The steward moved forward to welcome Zhang Tie; Zhang Cheng handed Zhang Tie's gift to a servant of Fan mansion.

"Does Director Fan feel better today?" Zhang Tie asked the steward of Fan mansion in a calm tone.

With a bit bashful look, the steward stammered, "Master...master is much better!"

Zhang Tie found that everyone in Fan mansion was polite, including the servants. However, they lacked passion.

Zhang Tie sighed inside as he had not imagined such a situation in Yingzhou Province. However, now that Fan mansion had made the choice, he would coordinate with them to finish this performance given that Director Fan's daughter had been waiting for him a few years.

'Even though we cannot establish a marital relationship, we'd better depart in a kind way.'

'It's the Gobbling Party in Yingzhou Province that makes me embarrassed instead of Fan mansion. Therefore, I could only revenge the Gobbling Party if I want.'

'Given the current situation, I should have taken Linda, Beverly and Fiona here for a honeymoon.' Zhang Tie thought inside.

Steward Fan invited Zhang Tie into the parlor of Fan mansion.

Director Fan was sitting in the main seat in the parlor and waiting for Zhang Tie. Right behind Director Fan, there were a photo of green pines under the red sun and a couplet on two sides of it.

The one on the left side was——Green pines, verdant bamboos, the vast land exists forever!

The one on the right side was——Green willow leaves, red blossoms, the Hua land is always brilliant.

The horizontal scroll was——Everything looks fresh and gay.

This couplet in the parlor of Fan mansion really matched the position of Director Fan in Fuhai City.

It was also Director Fan's first time to see Zhang Tie. At the sight of Zhang Tie's young age and brilliance, Director Fan's eyes sparkled at once. However, closely after that, his sparkling eye lights faded away.

After Zhang Tie took a seat that was specially set for a guest, a female servant served a cup of tea for Zhang Tie. The male servant who had gotten Zhang Tie's gift put the gift on Director Fan's table. Closely after that, Director Fan waved his hands. All the servants then left the parlor.

Director Fan then let out a long sigh.

"Director Fan, why do you sigh?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Now that nephew has guessed it, no need to ask me about that anymore!" Director Fan watched Zhang Tie with a bitter smile, "I just feel regretful that my daughter could not marry such an excellent son-in-law. My daughter is really unfortunate. On this event, it's Fan family's fault, we broke our promise and became a

laughingstock! I've lost my face too. If I were alone, I'd not be afraid of losing my position. In the worst scenario, I will sell liquor on the roadside. I will enjoy such a life. However, I'm just a member of Fan Clan. Sometimes, I could not just care about my own interest while ignoring the overall interests of the clan. As a big clan in Yingzhou Province, our population is not fewer than that of Huaiyuan Palace. Therefore, I have to consider all aspects. If nephew feels angry and embarrassed, you could beat me up. I would never report it to the criminal agency even if I was beaten to death, not to mention that I would cause Huaiyuan Palace trouble..."

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Director Fan was so frank and admitted his fault at the beginning instead of being hypocritical at all. Therefore, Zhang Tie had a good impression on Director Fan.

Through Director Fan's words, Zhang Tie had already known the result which was as same as what he had guessed. By putting pressure on Fan Clan in Yingzhou Province, the Gobbling Party forced Director Fan to break his promise. As Fan Clan had a great undertaking in Yingzhou Province, they would never go against the Gobbling Party in Yingzhou Province in a round manner only for marrying a common woman.

'Fan Clan should have long known the resentment between Huaiyuan Palace and the Gobbling Party. What Fan Clan has not imagined is that the contradiction between the Gobbling Party and I have escalated so much. If the Gobbling Party really follow the mercy, righteousness, heavenly laws and morality as they advocate, such a contradiction between gentlemen is reasonable; pitifully, there're few gentlemen in this world. Therefore, Fan Clan have to break off the engagement.'

This was also where Zhang Tie despised the Gobbling Party; because they usually asked others to follow mercy, righteousness, heavenly laws and morality; instead of themselves.

"The resentment between Huaiyuan Palace and the Gobbling

Party started from Lord Huaiyuan. As an offspring of Huaiyuan Palace, I have the blood of Lord Huaiyuan; of course, I should shoulder the resentment between Huaiyuan Palace and the Gobbling Party. However, I've not imagined that even Fan Clan would be involved in it. Because of me, your daughter's best years are delayed. I'm really sorry about that!" Zhang Tie slightly bowed towards Director Fan. Director Fan also hurriedly bowed towards Zhang Tie with a bit shameful look.

After Director Fan took a seat, Zhang Tie continued, "This event was aroused by the Gobbling Party. I understand the concerns of Director Fan and Fan Clan pretty well. I will not vent my anger on Fan Clan. The cooperation between Fan Clan and Jinwu Business Group would not be influenced at all. From today on, the engagement between your daughter and I will be canceled. I hope your daughter could find her Mr. Right as soon as possible and live a happy life! Director Fan doesn't need to think too much about that..."

'I've not imagined that Zhang Tie is such an understanding man.' Watching Zhang Tie, Director Fan felt like losing a good son-in-law. In a complex mood, his lips quivered, "Nephew..."

Zhang Tie had already stood up and put it straight, "It's okay. I will leave. As my parents are concerned about me, I will leave for Youzhou Province by airship today!"

"Nephew, the gift..." Director Fan pointed at the gift and wanted Zhang Tie to take it away with a bashful look.

"I was told that Director Fan liked liquor; therefore, I prepared some "Early Sunshine after Light Snow" for you. This liquor is the best specialty in Youzhou Province. It has been put in ice cubes on the way here. Director Fan should taste. Additionally, my mother prepared some specialties of Huaiyuan Palace for Madam Fan and your daughter. It carries our good intention. Although it's not valuable, please take it, Director Fan."

Before leaving, Zhang Tie threw a glance at the room behind the parlor...

...

Director Fan accompanied Zhang Tie all the way to the gate of Fan mansion until Zhang Tie got on the vehicle. After that, he let out a long sigh with a complex mood before returning to the parlor.

Another old man at his 60s was standing in the parlor at this moment.

At the sight of this old man, Director Fan felt like seeing nothing as he directly threw himself onto his seat like being cramped. At the same time, he shook his head and muttered, "What a son-in-law...what a son-in-law..."

That old man was checking Zhang Tie's gift. After finding no dangerous items among them, he became reassured.

"This son is indeed excellent; alas, what a pity..." That old man also sighed.

"More than that..." Director Fan raised his head and threw a glance at that old man before sighing once again, "A 20-odd year knight is already an elite even in the top seven sects in Taixia Country...It's told that this son has been fighting demons in Waii Subcontinent before and has rich battle experiences. In the beginning, I didn't believe that. During the past months, he had been well-known across Youzhou Province after helping Zhang Taixuan get the position of the provincial governor; after he promoted to the dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province, he even inflicted heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church and became famous across Taixia Country. Even in the competition with the Gobbling Party, he's still brave and wise. It's said that he's filial obedient to his mom, respect the old and love the young at home. Given his deed today, he's really a gentleman. As I've seen so many people, I know that this son would be at least

a provincial governor in the future..."

"If not, how could the Gobbling Party be so scared about him and want to suppress him in all means?" That old man shook his head.

"Pitifully, Zhu'er's best days were wasted..."

"Zhu'er is docile and understanding. After this event, we could find a good husband for her. Fan Clan won't maltreat her!"

After hearing these words, Director Fan became reassured. However, he couldn't stand pouring another concern. Picking himself up suddenly, Director Fan gazed at that old man, "Elder, our Fan Clan should not just be bullied by them in Yingzhou Province in this way. No matter how powerful is the Gobbling Party, they were not that unrivaled. Why would we make a compromise to the Gobbling Party this time and waste this good chance to launch a counter-attack against them? If we wait a few more years..."

The old man became silent for a few seconds before replying slowly, "I've got the message from Xuanyuan Hill...the East Palace...would act as regent within this year!"

Director Fan stood still for a short while before throwing himself onto the chair in a frustrated way...

Now that the East Palace was going to act as regent, it indicated that the one who led the Gobbling Party would soon become one of the top three chancellors in Taixia Country, perhaps in a few years or one decade at most...

Although Fan Clan had a deep influence in Yingzhou Province, they were not qualified to compete with the top three chancellors in Taixia Country. Over these years, Zhang Tie was still Zhang Tie; however, the Gobbling Party might not be the Gobbling Party anymore...

"You mean His Majesty has..."

"Watch out your words!" The old man raised his voice to

interrupt Director Fan as his face turned solemn at once.

Chapter 889: The Vengeance of Gentleman

"Take me to the Morality Association in Fuhai City!" Zhang Tie told the driver the moment he left Fan mansion.

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie's glassy-eyed look, Zhang Cheng got really scared.

Although Zhang Cheng had not followed Zhang Tie in Fan mansion, as a shrewd man, given the clues lately and Zhang Tie's deed after leaving Fan mansion, Zhang Cheng had realized that the engagement between Zhang Tie and Fan Clan might have been broken off.

Being affected by the Morality Association in Fuhai City, the engagement between Zhang Tie and Fan family was broken off. Zhang Tie's face was smacked in Fuhai City.

Zhang Cheng was afraid that Zhang Tie would lose his mind in Morality Association in Fuhai City.

'Lately, Yang Yushan the head of the Morality Association in Fuhai City gathers a lot of backbones there and criticize Zhang Tie everyday. Besides, they keep spreading gossips about Zhang Tie across Fuhai City. Even many members of Morality Associations in the surrounding prefectures and cities have arrived. They are waiting to make fun of Elder Mushen.'

'If Elder Mushen was driven mad today, give his battle strength as a black-iron knight, he might cause big trouble. If so, Huaiyuan Palace would not protect him.'

"Elder Mushen, besides Yang Yushan, many other backbones of Morality Associations are over there; many of them are disciples from major clans in Yingzhou Province, including a grandson of the head of Qin Clan. You're going to the Morality Association for..." Zhang Cheng reminded Zhang Tie meticulously.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhang Tie, "Don't worry, I just want

to take a look over there. I know those guys are waiting to make fun of me. I will go there to vent my anger so as to shut them up. I won't use any force!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Zhang Cheng became reassured. However, Zhang Cheng could not understand how Zhang Tie would "vent his anger" and "shut them up" without using any force.

Zhang Tie indeed feel a bit depressed; however, he didn't feel being humiliated.

'This time, Fan family's choice is out of external stress instead of their original intention. Additionally, it was Fan Clan who proposed the engagement first; therefore, besides losing my face slightly, it's not a big deal. Additionally, in Yingzhou Province, Fan Clan indeed could not match Huaiyuan Palace in influence.'

What was more, Zhang Tie had not seen that girl in Fan family since the beginning. They had not even talked with each other; therefore, they had no emotional underpinnings. As he was here at the request of his parents, he didn't pay too much attention to it. Therefore, he didn't suffer a loss emotionally.

However, these b*stards of the Gobbling Party made him bashful and caused his parents some mental troubles. He could not stand those guys making fun of him and watching him return to Youzhou Province in an embarrassed way.

Gentlemen had to revenge villains who had caused him trouble. Of course, Zhang Tie couldn't wait to revenge the b*stards in the Morality Association.

It took Zhang Tie less than 20 minutes to arrive at the other place in Fuhai City from the avenue where the Fan mansion was located.

It was beside a park in Fuhai City with a nice scenery in the surroundings. There was a bamboo grove in the place. Travelers were walking in the park. A magnificent Hua pavilion with green

tiles, red pillars, raising eaves and dougong was sitting on one side of the park.

Zhang Tie directly had the driver park at the front gate of the pavilion.

After getting off the vehicle, Zhang Tie looked up and saw the three huge Hua characters——道德社 1 on a gold broad hanging over the 2nd floor of the 3-storey pavilion.

The Hua characters on the board were like dragons flying and phoenixes dancing, which seemed to be the work of a famous calligrapher.

'These b*stards of Morality Association really chose a good place.' Zhang Tie muttered as he looked around.

Zhang Cheng also got off the vehicle and followed after Zhang Tie tightly.

There were two sentries on the stages outside the gate of the Morality Association. After noticing the unusual looks of Zhang Tie and Zhang Cheng and their limo, one of the sentries instantly walked towards them with a big smile.

"Are you going to formally visit the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele in the Morality Association?"

Zhang Tie blinked his eyes, "Isn't the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele in the Gobbling Province? Why do you have one here?"

"Of course the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele is in the Gobbling Province. However, the scriptures on the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele have been copied according to a certain scale in the Morality Associations of all the cities and provinces so that people could formally visit them and learn them!"

"Ha, it turns out that this is a counterfeit Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele in the Morality Association!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "However, by bowing towards a stele everyday, you really look like honoring the memory of the dead ancestor at a

grave. How strange you are! I'm afraid that you're even more pious than treating your ancestors in this way. No wonder I felt this building's gloomy with a bad fengshui the moment I caught sight of it!"

Closely after hearing Zhang Tie's words had the sentry changed his face, "Who're you?"

"Zhang Mushen from Youzhou Province!"

After hearing the name, the other sentry's heart pounded at once as he hurriedly rushed into the Morality Association. Only after a few seconds, with a sound "shua", dozens of people had poured out of the pavilion, old and young. Even workers had come out. However, given their clothes and looks, most of them were not average.

Their head was Yang Yushan.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Yang Yushan's eyes flickered as he sneered, "Oh my god, it's our Zhang Mushen from Youzhou Province. I was told that you were going to propose a marriage to the Fan mansion today. Was it smooth or not?"

Zhang Tie sighed, "It should be a good marital relationship; however, it's ruined by a rat's sh*t. How many rats' sh*t have destroyed this marriage?"

Previously, Yang Yushan wanted to continue to satire Zhang Tie; however, he was almost driven mad by Zhang Tie.

"Shut up!" A young man in a purple robe stood out with an arrogant look before Yang Yushan uttered, "How dare you talk nonsense in front of the Morality Association? Hurry up! Kowtow 300 times loudly in front of the Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele!"

Zhang Tie just gazed at the youth in the purple robe. Although he didn't move, his qi had covered towards that youth like a mountain.

Previously, the youth in the purple robe still looked arrogant;

however, all of a sudden, he felt a mountain descending towards him. Being dwarfed by the mountain, he was as weak as an ant or a withered leaf.

The face of the youth in the purple robe turned pale in a split second. He instantly knelt down towards Zhang Tie as if his tendons had been pulled out by someone else.

The moment his knees touched the ground, a hand had been stretched out from aside to support him. With the help of that hand, he gradually stood up. Closely after that, an average-look old man stood up in front of him and blocked Zhang Tie's qi.

Zhang Tie then watched that old man with narrowed eyes, causing his muscles to grow tense all over.

Zhang Tie just gazed at the old man for almost 10 seconds silently. Gradually, that old man's forehead oozed fine sweat drops.

That old man was also a knight. However, at this moment, nobody else at present knew the feeling of the old man——A strong wild wolf was pressed onto the ground by the sharp and strong claws of a fierce tiger. Watching the fierce tiger opening its bloody mouth with full killing intent and exposing its sharp fangs towards him, although the wild wolf could launch a counter-attack by its own claws, he was destined to be killed.

A sweat drop rolled down from the old man's forehead and was shattered on the step in front of him.

Zhang Tie then stopped releasing his qi while his battle intention which was as aggressive as volcanic eruption disappeared at once. Zhang Tie smiled, "Who're you?"

"Qin Wu from Qin Clan, Yingzhou Province!" The old man uttered in a hoarse voice, "Elder Mushen, my younger master was a bit rude just now, please forgive him!"

Qin Wu called Zhang Tie according to his status as a clan elder of

Huaiyuan Palace and a knight and asked Zhang Tie to forgive his young master, it meant that he warned Zhang Tie to not bully the weak.

Zhang Tie then threw a disdainful glance at that glassy-eyed youth. After being silent for a second, he said, "Several years ago, when I got a son in Yingzhou Province, Qin Clan even sent a gift to me. Given that you're a member of Qin Clan, I will forgive you today. Across Taixia Country, except for Emperor Xuanyuan, who else dare order a knight to kneel down? However, given your manner of speaking, you must take yourself as Emperor Xuanyuan. Who made you so audacious? Do you believe that I dare chop off your head and impeach that your Qin Clan is going to rise in revolt because of your words? If you could apply 1/10 of your shrewdness into the human relationship instead of taking advantage of someone and causing Qin Clan trouble, you will deserve your life!"

The youth started to quiver all over as he tried his best to control his fear. Nobody else dared utter at this moment. Although the confront between Zhang Tie and Qin Wu was not short, the invisible collision between two knights' qis made those at present feel that they were like insects at the crater. As long as the crater was going to erupt, they would vanish at once.

"Elder Mushen, are you here to presume on your power to intimate others?" Yang Yushan asked while straightening his neck, "Our Morality Association also have knights!"

Although Zhang Tie was a knight, Yang Yushan believed that Zhang Tie would never dare hurt him in the public as long as Zhang Tie didn't get any evidence about him that could get a hold in lawsuits or arguments.

"Hahaha..." Zhang Tie burst into laughter, "When I came to Fuhai City, I heard that the Morality Association was donated and built by the common people in the city. As I'm going to leave today, I especially came here to review whether someone is cheating on work and cutting down on materials in case you carry out a jerry-

built project and put the donation into your own purse. There are a lot of such villains in the world. At the sight of your Morality Association, I feel that your building might be a jerry-built project!" As Zhang Tie said this, he stomped thrice on the ground, "Although it looks firm now, it might have been a dilapidated building. You'd better have someone check it; otherwise, it might collapse!"

Yang Yushan sneered, "It's none of your business!"

"Faithful words grate upon the ear!" Zhang Tie sighed, "Alright, I will mind my own business!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie called Zhang Cheng and left.

Until Zhang Tie left did those guys in Morality Association exchange glances with each other, "He just left? Did he really come here to take a look at the Morality Association?"

"The Lion of Youzhou Province is so-so!"

They then sneered.

"The news that Zhang Mushen's engagement with Fan Clan was broken off has to be spread to all the Morality Associations at the fastest speed. I will let Zhang Mushen never lift his head wherever he is!" Yang Yushan said mercilessly before calling the backbones back into the pavilion.

At this moment, they heard a sudden cracking sound from the pavilion. They then lifted their heads at the same time.

"Watch out!" Qin Wu immediately caught the young master of Qin Clan to retreat...

"Boom...", the pavilion of the Morality Association in Fuzhou City collapsed in a split second while broken logs and tiles flew in all directions. A tile directly hit Yang Yushan's head and made him bleed. Those members of the Morality Association hurriedly dodged away in an embarrassed way...

After a few minutes, when the dust had fallen onto the ground, although nobody was killed, the entire pavilion had become debris.

At this moment, most of the backbones and personnel in the Morality Association were covered with dust in a pretty embarrassed way. Many heads were bleeding...

Being disheveled and covered with blood on his face, Yang Yushan's figure appeared in the dust as he shouted, "Zhang Mushen...you b*stard!"

Although his sound was hysterical, it revealed his weakness due to the fear deep in his heart...

Zhang Tie could ruin the pavilion of the Morality Association in the public silently without being discovered and observed. If Zhang Tie wanted to kill someone...

When they thought about this, everyone felt chilly inside.

'How could a knight humiliate so easily?'

Even though everyone knew that it was done by Zhang Tie, they could not accuse him as they had no evidence...

Qin Wu also turned his face completely. Even though he didn't know how Zhang Tie did it. He only felt that Zhang Tie's stomps were unusual. However, if Zhang Tie could pass his battle qi to this pavilion through his feet silently and ruin the pavilion, it meant that he could precisely control his powerful battle qi. Only 1 of 100 black iron knights could do it.

...

After leaving the Morality Association for about 0.7 miles, Zhang Cheng saw the dust caused by the pavilion through the rearview mirror. At the same time, he faintly heard a loud sound.

Zhang Cheng was also stunned as an awe-stricken feeling rose in his heart.

Zhang Tie didn't use his hand in the entire process.

Chapter 890: The Grim Monster

In a deep night, the moon was bright while the stars were few...

In a pavilion of the garden of Fan mansion, Director Fan was drinking too much that he had become drunk after knowing that Zhan Tie had left Fuhai City by airship at dusk while the pear blossoms were falling like snow in the surroundings.

"Early sunshine after light snow" was indeed the top drink in Youzhou Province. Anyone with a good capacity for liquor would become drunk after drinking common drinks too much; however, no matter how much "early sunshine after light snow" did they drink, people would always be in a half-drunken state and never lose their mind.

For people who liked liquor, this was the most ideal state. Just like an immortal in liquor, with one bit less, it would taste lighter; with one bit more, it would be delirious.

After breaking off the engagement with Zhang Clan, the elder of Fan Clan left Fan mansion. Director felt depressed and started to swig in his own garden.

After Zhang Tie left Fan mansion, he directly went to the Morality Association in Fuhai City. Closely after that, the pavilion of the Morality Association collapsed. According to the marvelous gossip, Zhang Tie stomped a few times outside the gate of the Morality Association. After he left, the pavilion of the Morality Association collapsed itself.

A dumb person took a dose of bitter medicine——suffering humiliation. The members of the Morality Association couldn't even find a reason to accuse Zhang Tie. Because none of them found that Zhang Tie had launched an attack. Zhang Tie just stayed outside the pavilion of the Morality Association for a short while; he didn't even enter the territory of the Morality Association. Therefore, they could not find a reason to accuse him.

After the news had spread across the city, all the commoners in the city started to doubt whether someone had grafted the donation of the pavilion and made a jerry-built project. Otherwise, how could it collapse only after someone stomped a couple of times on the ground tiles outside the pavilion?

'After taking a round in Fuhai City, the Lion of Youzhou Province stomped a couple of times on the ground before leaving, which shocked the entire Fuhai City.'

'Such a figure should have been my son-in-law, I've not imagined that...'

Director Fan grew more and more depressed as he picked the "early sunshine after light snow" gifted by Zhang Tie and drown his "worries" in the drink.

After midnight, Madam Fan and his daughter came here to persuade Director Fan to drink less. Later on, the butler of Fan mansion also came here to persuade Director Fan twice and prepared to carry him into his bedroom if he was drunk...

Gradually, although Director Fan drunk more and more, he was not fully drunk. As it was too late, Madam Fan and his daughter went to bed. In the end, the butler and his servants had disappeared. Even the insects in the garden of Fan mansion had stopped chirping.

As a result, Fan mansion was pretty silent.

Being half-drunk, Director Fan didn't notice anything abnormal in the mansion.

At this moment, a nightwatchman passed by the street outside the mansion, causing some muffled, wooden knocks reverberating in the air. Feeling a bit chilly, Director Fan picked himself up in a groggy way. Under the dim lamplight in the courtyard, he wobbly left for his bedroom.

The garden of Fan mansion was close to the western courtyard.

When Director Fan passed by an arch door in the winding corridor of the western courtyard, he suddenly slipped onto the ground.

Director Fan stepped into a puddle on the ground. When he fell down, his hands touched the puddle.

"The servants are really excessive. They don't even clean the water on the ground..." Director made a burp as he picked himself up wobbly and muttered, "Hopefully, it's not the pee of a pye-dog who slid in through the doghole...urgh..."

After walking another a couple of steps forward, Director Fan suddenly felt his hands were a bit glutinous. It didn't feel like water. Under the dim lamplight, he raised his hands and threw a drunk glance at it...

Terrifyingly, Director Fan caught sight of a pair of bloody palms.

His hands were covered with blood just like coming out of a basin full of blood.

At this moment, a chill flashed across Director Fan's spine. After quivering all over, Director Fan almost woke up. He turned around immediately and widely opened his eyes. He then saw a black frame lying in the grass at the foot of the wall where he had just slipped down.

Director Fan walked over there and turned over that black figure.

It was the corpse of a LV 10 guard in Fan mansion, only half of his head was linked to his neck. What a tragic death! He slipped onto the blood that flew off from the neck of this corpse just now.

Director Fan became fully awake at once. Until then did he realize that the entire Fan mansion was especially quiet, except for the faintly, strange sound from his daughter's room in the west courtyard.

Director Fan felt his heart burning as he rushed towards his daughter's room.

The servant girls outside her daughter's bedroom became breathless too. Hearing the strange sound from his daughter's bedroom, Director Fan immediately burst open his daughter's bedroom.

His daughter was grabbed by the neck and pressed onto the bed by a naked man. Being covered with wounds, her mouth corners were spilling out blood. She had been too weak to ask for help.

Director's eyes almost popped out as he instantly picked a vase and threw it towards the man's back. At the same time, he exclaimed hysterically, "Let go of my daughter..."

After hitting the man, the vase broke apart. The man turned around and Director Fan saw a familiar face—"Zhang Tie".

However, "Zhang Tie" looked grim and berserk. With red eyes, he was like a mad mutated beast...

"Zhang Tie, you son of a b*tch, I will fight you to death!" Director Fan clenched his fist and rushed towards "Zhang Tie" while gritting his teeth even though he knew that he could not defeat "Zhang Tie".

After Director Fan rushed two steps forward, "Zhang Tie" had raised his finger and shot out a sharp battle qi, which directly penetrated through Director Fan's heart on the left chest...

Director Fan lay on the ground while his blood tinted the floor red...

"Zhang Tie" directly broke the neck of Director Fan's daughter before getting off the bed. After that, he looked around the room with red eyes. Closely after that, he disappeared.

The Fan mansion in Fuhai City became completely quiet...

However, "Zhang Tie" who had "left" Fan mansion hurriedly didn't notice that Director Fan's finger moved a bit.

Director Fan's heart was on the right chest. Few people knew this

secret...

...

After a few minutes, in a private mansion in Fuhai City...

All the backbones of the Morality Association in Fuhai City had been transferred here in an embarrassed way.

The Morality Association had been ruined. Therefore, this place became the temporary venue of the Morality Association in Fuhai City.

With the effect of the recovery medicament, the wounded ones had been basically recovered. However, this strike made the backbones of the Morality Association in Fuhai City depressed.

In this age, the difference between knights and those below knights made people disappointed.

"I've already noticed the headquarter. Our Morality Association has to find the face back. We cannot suffer such a loss. Zhang Mushen is too excessive..." Yang Yushan gritted his teeth with a layer of gauze over his head so as to pluck up courage for these backbones.

"After coming back home, I will definitely have my grandpa ban Jinwu Business Group. As long as our Qin Clan is in Yingzhou Province, we will definitely forbid every item of Jinwu Business Group to enter the trading channels of Qin Clan!" The young master of Qin Clan turned solemn too. When he heard Zhang Tie's warning, he was scared. However, after Zhang Tie left, this young master of Qin Clan felt being extremely humiliated while his heart felt like burning. He almost knelt down in front of that guy who looked younger than him. Later on, he was reprimanded like a kid. He hadn't experienced this since he was born. Qin Clan was called 100-city Qin in Yingzhou Province; even the provincial governor of Yingzhou Province would be polite to Qin Clan. Who was Zhang Tie? How dared he reprimand the young master of Qin Clan?

"We can blow upon him through newspaper and media!" Another person uttered, "Our clan has some paper agencies. Even though we cannot accuse Zhang Mushen, we will humiliate him by the news that he collapsed the Morality Pavilion..."

Losers would gather together to improve their morale with animosity; therefore, Yang Yushan summoned these guys who suffered a loss in the daytime.

They then made opinions or reaffirmed their resolve to revenge Zhang Tie one after another...

They were really excited as if they had already stomped Zhang Tie under their feet.

Qin Wu's sound drifted from outside, "Who's that?"

Closely after Qin Wu's voice, the gate of the private mansion had been shattered with a boom. At the same time, a figure in black mask with bloody eyes had broken in...

All the members of the Morality Association in Fuhai City were shocked...

"Young master, run!" Qin Wu shouted from outside while his knight's battle qi shot into the sky like a big blazing torch in the evening of Fuhai City, which shocked numerous people in a split second.

After breaking in, with one punch, his sharp battle qi had reverberated in the room. In a split second, thousands of blades had cut through the entire room, blowing up the limbs and heads of all the dumbfounded backbones and the furnishings in the room at once...

"Zhang Tie!" Qin Wu roared as he rushed in like a mad lion.

Although that guy was wearing a black mask, Qin Wu could still recognize the face under the mask based on his figure and eyebrows.

The sharp qi carried by that punch was as same as the effect of the metallic battle qi in the "Five-element Earth-look Sutra" cultivated by Zhang Tie...

Qin Wu's battle qi had shocked the entire Fuhai City while two more meteors had rushed towards here when Qin Wu's battle qi shot into the sky.

After fighting Qin Wu for two rounds rapidly, the one in black mask flew towards the north like a meteor...

Closely followed by 3 more meteors...

Chapter 891: The Crisis

Zhang Tie left Fuhai City by airship at evening.

There was nothing to recall with nostalgia in this city; he had said what he should say and done what he should do. Therefore, Zhang Tie chose to leave right away.

The fury-level airship left for Huaiyuan City.

Huaiyuan City was over 2,000 miles away in the northwest of Fuhai City. It was a bit derailed from the route towards Youzhou Province; however, it was not a long distance. It was just a couple of days by airship, which was nothing compared to the months of travel.

Honestly, Zhang Tie let out a sigh after Fan Clan broke off the engagement. When he was young, he was frivolous and could kill time with those girls of Rose Association. However, he felt a bit awkward to marry a woman whom he had not met before and had a baby with her. Although affection could be slowly cultivated, Zhang Tie still felt a bit embarrassed about this.

'I could not disobey my parents' intention; however, if Fan Clan breaks off the engagement themselves, it will not be my fault.'

It was too normal for a black iron knight to be humiliated by powerful opponents such as Gobbling Party in a foreign land. However, Zhang Tie didn't care about it at all; not to mention that he had slapped the face of Gobbling Party before he left Fuhai City.

Zhang Tie was open-minded; therefore, he felt pretty relaxed when he left Fuhai City.

As for those medicaments that he brought here, he handed them to the branch of Jinwu Business Group in Fuhai City. After that, Zhang Tie left there with a relaxed mood.

After boarding the airship, Zhang Tie contacted his elder brother using the remote-sensing crystal. He had Zhang Yang tell their

parents that Fan Clan had broken off the engagement due to the threat of the Gobbling Party and that he was going to come back soon. After that, Zhang Tie entered his room and started to absorb earth-elements crystals.

After a few days, Zhang Tie would light the 14th dragon scale on his knight's crystal plate...

Knight's road of cultivation should be paved one step by another, which should never be optimistic.

The night gradually deepened...

Zhang Tie had just absorbed 3 earth-elements crystals. When he was absorbing the 4th one with crossed legs in his room, his spiritual energy became disordered as he opened his eyes at once.

When absorbing earth-elements crystals, although he had put the most of his spiritual energy in the elements realm, he still maintained the most basic perceptions and feelings about the outside world with his powerful knight's consciousness. It was also a basic skill of knights. As a knight, one should be sensitive to his surroundings at any time.

A porthole of Zhang Tie's room slid off silently. Closely after that, Zhang Tie came to the outside of the airship silently. After that, he silently closed the porthole by his battle qi.

...

The fury-level airship was flying steadily at over 2,000 m high. In the night, red fluorite lamps were flickering over the air sac on the top of the airship, which reminded other aircraft that there was a large airship here.

Facing the heavy wind, a person in black clothes was silently attaching to the hard air sac within a dead angle of observation like a gecko.

"It's windy. If you want a hitchhike, you need to come to the cabin with me. No need to hide there!" Zhang Tie had appeared on

that guy's side silently.

After hearing Zhang Tie's sound, that guy was amazed as he immediately turned around.

Zhang Tie saw a pair of eyes with weird eye lights under the black mask.

Zhang Tie directly stretched out his hand and intended to grab his neck. However, that guy instantly slid over 10 m down along the air sac and dodged from Zhang Tie's first strike.

Zhang Tie was shocked inside as such a weird and flexible movement was rarely seen even among black iron knights.

After dodging Zhang Tie's first strike, that guy raised his hand while three sparkling stars were shot towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie barely dodged from them. That guy then sprung up and appeared over 100 m away in a split second. Closely after that, he flashed towards the south.

Zhang Tie just intended to let him leave the airship by launching a punch at him; otherwise, if this guy made destructions, though Zhang Tie would be safe, this airship might be destroyed. For a knight, to shoot down an airship was as easy as piercing a balloon by a needle. If the airship fell off, at least half of the crew would be killed.

Realizing that stealthy guy was going to escape, how could Zhang Tie let him go so easily? Therefore, Zhang Tie accelerated at once and chased after him.

Zhang Tie was shocked once again. Since he promoted to a black iron knight, he had not met anyone of the same level who could match him in speed in the sky, except for this guy. Additionally, that guy's movement was very weird. After fighting with him for two rounds, Zhang Tie realized that he had met a master in using hidden weapons, whose skill was far better than common black iron knights...

However, that guy's battle qi was a bit weaker than his. Otherwise, Zhang Tie almost thought that he met a powerhouse on the level of the demon general.

'Who's this guy? Is he from the Heavens Reaching Church or the Gobbling Party?'

A question occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. Therefore, Zhang Tie kept chasing after him...

...

Fan Clan, Fuhai City...

The Fan Clan had been brightly lit at this moment while numerous torches were blazing fiercely in the night. A lot of criminal hunters, officials and powerhouses were gathering here from the Provincial Court of Fuhai City. Even the streets outside the mansion were blocked.

It was a guard of a mansion being close to Fan Clan who found something abnormal in Fan Clan.

Being neighbors, they usually had exchanges in normal times. As there was only one wall between the two mansions, the guards of the two mansions were familiar with each other. Tonight, that guard was on duty in his mansion; however, he found that Fan mansion was pretty quiet. He didn't even see the guards who were usually on duty in Fan mansion. Feeling something abnormal, that guard shouted towards Fan mansion; whereas, he received no response. Therefore, he climbed over the wall and found nobody was alive in Fan mansion. He was so scared that he hurriedly reported it to the local judicial agency...

Director Fan was an official in Fuhai City. After such a tragedy happened in an official's mansion, the entire Fuhai City was frightened.

After receiving the news, even the mayor of Fuhai City had hurriedly come to Fan Clan. Watching the miserable condition, the

face of the mayor of Fuhai City turned purple; even his mustache started to quiver.

'Who dare kill the whole family of an official of Taixia Country in such a cruel manner? Even the daughter of director Fan was raped before killed. Such a pernicious case is rarely seen in Taixia Country. It's going against all the officials in Taixia Country!'

The mayor stood in the parlor of Fan Clan in a gloomy manner. Watching the drawing of green pines and red sun and that pair of couplets, he was waiting for his subordinates' reports.

At this moment, a guy in the official uniform of court hurriedly entered the parlor and said, "Sir, Director Fan has woken up after the treatment..."

"Director Fan is still alive?" The mayor's eyes flickered.

"Director Fan's heart is on his right chest; therefore, he survived..."

"Hurry, take me there!"

...

Watching the mayor of Fuhai City, Director Fan's eyes flew out bloody tears as he tightly caught the hand of the mayor and quivered all over, "I saw it...it's...it's Zhang Tie...Zhang Mushen...the son of a b*tch...in my daughter's room...and intended to kill me...that b*stard has been possessed by the devil...please help me, mayor..."

In the legend of Western Continent, angels could degenerate; while in Eastern Continent, gentlemen could be possessed by the devil!

After hearing that it was done by Zhang Tie, the mayor of Fuhai City was shocked. Right then, another one ran into the room and whispered to the mayor.

The mayor of Fuhai City changed his face once again. Closely

after that, he gritted his teeth and issued an order, "Notice the Provincial Court and Cheji General's Mansion in Yingzhou Province. Zhang Tie has made a heinous crime. He killed the whole family of Director Fan in Fuhai City and the head and members of the Morality Association in Fuhai City. He has had heavy blood debts. Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen should be listed as wanted and arrested. He's forbidden to leave Yingzhou Province, alive or not!"

...

In over 1 hour, Zhang Tie had chased that guy deep into the wilderness.

During the process, they had fought two rounds. That guy was wounded by Zhang Tie. Additionally, Zhang Tie had attached a tracing feather to that guy's body. Zhang Tie wondered where this guy was heading for.

Gradually, that guy had entered the woods in the valley from the sky. Zhang Tie followed him in without any fear.

After entering the woods for a few minutes, that man in black clothes suddenly stopped in a place.

Zhang Tie stood still over 20 m away from him, "Who're you?"

"You don't need to know who I am. You only need to know that I'm going to kill you. Brat, you better close your eyes before being killed by me!" That man uttered in a very weird voice.

'F*ck, you should be the one who closes eyes.' Zhang Tie frowned before revealing a smile, "You want to kill me? Don't dream!"

"I could've killed you easily. However, it was not fun and would bring me trouble. Now, it's the best time..." that man burst out weird laughter. At the same time, another shadow flashed towards that man like a shadow.

Watching the man darting towards him, Zhang Tie almost thought that he had a blurred vision. Because that man was as same as him from the height, figure, look, even clothes.

Right in Zhang Tie's eyes, the two people collided with each other. Closely after that, a weird black flame rose up from their bodies at the same time.

Being so weird, even though the flame was far away, Zhang Tie could still feel its terrifyingly high temperature and energy. What was more strange was that the black flame didn't burn anything next to them.

In a few seconds, the two people had burned into ashes in front of Zhang Tie, leaving nothing.

That was too weird, just like a dream.

Zhang Tie didn't know what happened. He just felt something was wrong while being extremely alert...

The moment Zhang Tie intended to leave, he had seen 3 meteors descending and rushing towards him at the same time...

Chapter 892: Being Lunatic

Three extremely dazzling knights' battle qis shot into the sky. Even in the wilderness, they could still be seen by people within hundreds of square miles.

Besides indicating that the knight was making his full effort in combat, the knight's battle qi could also summon other knights just like whistling. As long as the other knights on his side caught sight of his battle qi, they would know that their partner was fighting...

Watching the one who looked as same as him burning and vanishing together with that man in black clothes who induced him here and bearing the fierce strike from three knights, Zhang Tie knew that he must have fallen into a terrifying trap. The purpose of that guy in black clothes was to induce him here.

Zhang Tie wondered why the two living knights could burn into ashes in the black flame all of a sudden.

'Who's that one who looks as same as me? What did he do? Why Qin Wu and the other two knights were chasing after him?' Zhang Tie wondered.

Zhang Tie didn't know why would the three knights attack him the moment they caught sight of him.

After combining these doubts and weird scenes, Zhang Tie knew that he was trapped in a murder, 'The three knights are not attacking me but the one who has burned into ashes. After that person vanishes, I become the very person being chased by them.'

'Besides looking as same as me, that person even shared the same clothes and the same hairstyle as me. This was a disguise based on my look.'

'The terror and rigor of this murder are completely out of my imagination.'

'This is a conspiracy.'

The three knights appeared so fast and abruptly, leaving no time for Zhang Tie to make any preparation and response.

Like a fully mad lion, Qin Wu intended to fight Zhang Tie to death by implementing a close combat with Zhang Tie. As for the other two knights, one was a middle-aged literati in cyan clothes with a flute in hand; the other was a 30-year old knight with a longsword in hand. Compared to Qin Wu's crazy strike, the other two knights were relatively mild, who just wanted to block Zhang Tie.

What made Zhang Tie depressed was that he didn't even know the other two knights' names until now.

'What the hell?'

Zhang Tie wanted to leave; however, being besieged by three knights of the same level, how could he leave easily?

Zhang Tie could be able to make a breakthrough by force; however, he might cause casualties.

Zhang Tie didn't want to fight in vain and become enmity with other knights before knowing their backgrounds, especially after knowing that this was a trap.

"Qin Wu, weren't you in Fuhai City? Why are you here? Why did you three attack me the moment you saw me?" Zhang Tie asked as he dodged and blocked the attacks of the three knights; meanwhile, he attempted to make an explanation.

'It would be better than being confused if I could learn something from Qin Wu.'

Qin Wu gritted his teeth and kept attacking Zhang Tie. He didn't respond to Zhang Tie's question at all.

"We've been chasing after you all the way from Fuhai City. Don't you know what you've done? How dare you pretend to be

innocent? I've not imagined that Zhang Mushen the Lion of Youzhou Province is such an asshole..." The middle-aged literati uttered as he shook his head. It seemed that he was very disappointed with Zhang Tie. Meanwhile, he drew a green network of battle qi and intended to entangle Zhang Tie.

'F*ck, what did this father do?' Zhang Tie became extremely puzzled.

Another knight's longsword was also very sharp. Being coordinated by Qin Wu, each of his movement was lethal to Zhang Tie.

On this occasion, Zhang Tie could not even stop; he could only fight them.

"I was induced here from the airship just now..." Zhang Tie attempted to make an explanation.

"If we did not chase you all the way here, we might have been cheated by you!" The one with longsword sneered.

They didn't stop their attack as they had treated all the words of Zhang Tie as lies and quibbles...

After fighting the three knights for over 10 minutes, Zhang Tie intended to retreat based on his advantage in speed and movement; however, he could not fully get rid of their chase at all. Zhang Tie knew that he would be increasingly disadvantageous if he kept going like this. 'What counts most is to get rid of the three knights' chase. If being entangled by the three knights, I could do nothing else at all. This combat is too confusing. Additionally, it seems that the three knights have completely confirmed that I've done something bad. Therefore, I could not clarify myself only by speaking at all.'

Facing the attack of the three knights, even though Zhang Tie was just defending himself at the beginning, gradually, he exerted his efforts. On this occasion, Zhang Tie was fighting the three

knights while facing a great stress. Being attacked by knights' battle intentions and qis, how could he become relaxed.

Although the other two knights were mainly blocking Zhang Tie, they were still a bit shocked that Zhang Tie as a black iron knight was not fully disadvantageous while fighting three knights.

When they were fighting, an airboat arrived here with full killing intent. The moment it arrived, Qin Wu started to attack Zhang Tie in a fiercer way.

At this moment, a powerful figure descended from the airboat as fast as a lightning bolt.

Zhang Tie was shocked inside, 'Earth knight...'

"Pay me my young master's life..." Qin Wu suddenly roared and broke into Zhang Tie's defense. At the same time, he covered Zhang Tie's temples and heart with his battle qi as sharp as chisels.

As a result, Zhang Tie's protective battle qi exploded due to high pressure.

Zhang Tie radiated a furious eye light as he kicked off the sharp sword qi; at the same time, he twisted his body and dodged Qin Wu's attack towards his head. Meanwhile, he blocked Qin Wu's chisel onto his heart by one hand and punched Qin Wu by his right hand, causing a thunder.

Honestly, although Zhang Tie's punch was very powerful, he didn't mean to kill Qin Wu; instead, he just wanted to repulse Qin Wu. At this moment, Qin Wu's protective battle qi had not been fully collapsed. Therefore, it was very difficult for Zhang Tie to kill him. In the worst scenario, Qin Wu's innards would be slightly wounded.

However, the reality was out of Zhang Tie's expectation once again.

In a split second, Qin Wu shouted as his battle qi suddenly boiled. It seemed that Qin Wu had run his battle qi to the utmost as his

battle qi covered both Zhang Tie and himself. However, before Zhang Tie's punch touched Qin Wu's protective battle qi, the last anti-strike ability of Qin Wu had disappeared.

Zhang Tie was confused by such a sudden change once again. Because he could never imagine that Qin Wu who had fought him for such a long while could "commit suicide" at this moment...

As a result, Zhang Tie's punch struck onto Qin Wu's body in a split second smoothly.

Heart racing, Zhang Tie immediately reduced his striking capability by 80%...

Of course, although Zhang Tie knew that Qin Wu was committing suicide, he also knew that the others must think that Qin Wu was killed by his protective battle qi. Additionally, the sudden boiling battle qi of Qin Wu also blurred the other two knights' visions.

At the final moment, Qin Wu revealed an extremely weird ridicule. After that, before Zhang Tie punched more, Qin Wu had uttered a shrill cry; at the same time, Qin Wu's body had exploded, spreading his flesh in all directions...

In the eyes of the others, it was Zhang Tie who shattered Qin Wu into pieces. However, only Zhang Tie knew what happened just now.

The weird ridicule and his suicide strike of Qin Wu froze Zhang Tie's heart...

In a split second, Zhang Tie had realized that he had been a real murder maniac even though he had done nothing bad. It was an unforgivable crime by killing the employed elder of Qin Clan in Yingzhou Province in the public; however, this was what Zhang Tie was trying to avoid even before figuring out what happened...

The moment this thought flashed by Zhang Tie's mind, he had heard a dignified and furious sound, "Stop..."

Closely after that voice was a fire dragon that shot towards Zhang Tie.

It was a fire dragon of battle qi as long as 100 m. It was fierce, grim, destructive and powerful.

It was a furious blow of an earth knight, which covered 100 square meters around Zhang Tie.

Before the fire dragon touched Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie had become stiff all over like having fallen into a fire pit. After being targeted by the fire dragon, the air surrounding Zhang Tie was compressed while the woods and weeds on one side were soon burned by the terrifying temperature of the fire dragon...

Facing this blow, the other two knights who were besieging Zhang Tie hurriedly dodged away as fast as lightning bolts...

Since he promoted to a knight, Zhang Tie had not met such an awe-inspiring and powerful strike.

Earth knights were overwhelming in front of black iron knights.

In this life and death situation, Zhang Tie found it was useless to make any explanation. He just roared while his battle qi boiled for the first time. Meanwhile, he punched the fire dragon which wanted to devour him from above down...

In the thunderous booms, the ground quaked, causing a huge pit as deep as 5 m with a diameter of 10 m around Zhang Tie.

Kneeling down at the bottom of the pit on one knee, Zhang Tie spilled out blood from his mouth corners while his clothes were scorched all over. He looked up and watched the tall men in armor standing in the air over 200 m high with a firm look...

Only with one blow, Zhang Tie had been severely wounded.

"Hmm, you're indeed unusual. No wonder you dared play the gangster in Fuhai City and killed people in front of me..." The man in armor watched Zhang Tie who was kneeling in the huge pit

while his eyes gradually turned colder, "Lord Huaiyuan must be humiliated even though he's in the heaven. I will help Lord Huaiyuan clean up his unworthy descendant, go die..."

Soon after the man uttered the words "go die", he had pressed down his hands and locked Zhang Tie once again while two thicker intertwined fire dragons darted towards Zhang Tie.

When the fire dragons reappeared, Zhang Tie clenched his hands. He had not imagined that he had to expose his trump card on the occasion of life and death when facing a Hua earth knight...

'Today, I could not stay in Taixia Country anymore whether I win or not.'

At this moment, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy in his mind sea had started to spin rapidly like a rainstorm caused by a hurricane. Although bowing his body, his facial expression grew firmer and more persistent as he gazed at the figure in the sky and the fire dragons...

Zhang Tie entered the ubiquitous state once again...

In the blink of an eye, two grim intertwining fire dragons had flown 100 m downwards and opened their huge mouths towards Zhang Tie, exposing their fangs.

When Zhang Tie was going to expose his trump card...

"Close your eyes..." A strange yet familiar sound suddenly appeared on Zhang Tie's side.

Like making an acquired reflex, the moment Zhang Tie heard the sound, he had closed his eyes. Although he had closed his eyes, he could still sense a dazzling sun rising from his side...

In the thunderous boom, the space became ghastly pale. Even Zhang Tie's powerful knight's consciousness and perception interfered with the white light...

Zhang Tie felt that his wrist was caught by a person. Closely after

that, he heard a strong wind passing by while the space beside him was changing rapidly like the change of seasons...

The moment he became relaxed spiritually, Zhang Tie spurted out a mouth of blood due to the furious blow of the earth knight just now.

Faintly, Zhang Tie felt an extremely surging, irresistible hot flow slowly swimming across his innards. His pains then became greatly relieved at once while that hot flow dispersed greatly. He felt pretty comfortable. Closely after that, with a light rock, the hot flow spread across his full body. Zhang Tie felt dark all over as he fell asleep...

"You will be recovered when you wake up..." Before trance, Zhang Tie heard a sound faintly.

...

In the wilderness, when the three knights who were in intensive self-defense state recovered their visions and consciousnesses of knights after over 10 minutes from the great shock and confusion, they found that Zhang Tie had disappeared...

At the same time, they found that all the plants within hundreds of meters around that huge pit had become translucent, snowy white. It looked pretty strange...

'It's the effect of the explosive light bomb, which is more precious than common alchemist' bombs.'

Explosive light bombs were also the products of alchemist masters. Its effect was not as destructive as a powerful alchemist's bomb; however, explosive light bombs would not explode. Precisely, it was a special alchemist's item which could let everyone at present lose their vision and perceptive capability. Under the threat of an explosive light bomb, without any precaution, even knights would become deaf and dumb for a short while. Even knights' consciousness and senses would be fully

disturbed, not to mention commoners.

'I've not imagined that Zhang Mushen could carry such a despicable weapon. I was told that he had gained a nanobead when he inflicted heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church. He must've hidden the explosive light bomb in his nanobead.

Facing such a result, the three knights didn't look good; especially the one standing in the air, who looked pale.

"Notice all the armies in Yingzhou Province. Arrest Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen. As long as they catch sight of him, directly kill him..." The man in armor roared...

...

After his engagement was broken off by Fan Clan, Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen was greatly stimulated and made a lunatic crime in Fuhai City as a murdering maniac...

When the dawn fell, Zhang Tie's name shocked the entire country once again. However, this time, compared to the good reputation that was praised by people when he inflicted heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church, Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen completely degenerated to the other extreme...

Chapter 893: The Reappearance of Zhao Yuan

Zhang Tie didn't know how long had he slept.

When Zhang Tie opened his eyes once again, he found that he was lying in a mountain cave in the same shabby clothes. However, as his wound caused by the furious blow of the earth knight had recovered, all of his physical functions had reached their heyday once again while his battle qi was running smoother.

After recovering his consciousness, Zhang Tie felt that whatever happened before was like a dream.

Zhang Tie didn't know why he had deteriorated to such a situation until now. He couldn't think through why a Hua earth knight wanted to kill him with the reason of cleaning up the unworthy descendant for Lord Huaiyuan.

'F*ck!'

At this moment, Zhang Tie caught sight of sunlight outside the mountain cave, which indicated that it was daytime.

Zhang Tie picked himself up and looked around this mountain cave seriously.

There was a stone bed, a stone chair, a stone table, a stone bowl and a human skeleton which was sitting with crossed legs in the mountain cave. Besides, there was a bright and spotless jade case on the table, which had been covered with dust.

After looking around this place, Zhang Tie didn't touch anything here; instead, he directly exited the mountain cave.

The moment he exited the mountain cave, he had seen the rolling white clouds and looming mountain peaks underfoot. This mountain cave was on a very high mountain peak. However, due to the bulgy rocks and cliffs on both sides of the mountain cave and

some pines surrounding it, this mountain cave looked pretty covert. Even if someone flew by the mountain cave, he might also miss it if he did not pay special attention to it.

The splendid scenery made Zhang Tie breathless.

A man in the black robe was standing on the edge of one cliff outside the mountain cave with crossed hands on his back and watching the rolling clouds underfoot quietly.

Given his back, although he was a bit emaciated with grey hair, he revealed a lonely yet dignified powerful qi in the world.

When Zhang Tie caught sight of this lonely yet tall and straight figure and recalled the lake in the location of Master Abyan's Manor outside Blackhot City, Zhang Tie couldn't help dropping off tears.

"Master!" Zhang Tie uttered in a low voice.

After letting out a sigh, the figure turned around. He was the very Zhao Yuan whom Zhang Tie had not seen for many years.

Plus those years that Zhang Tie had stayed in the tower of time, Zhang Tie had not met Zhao Yuan for dozens of years.

"Why are you crying? I've not cried yet!" Zhao Yuan watched Zhang Tie before letting out a sigh once again, "I always think that I'm unrivaled in the world and will end the resentment as soon as I want. My nickname alchemist demon is well-known among both humans and demons. I only have one apprentice in my life; however, that apprentice is always chased by people like a pye-dog at the risk of his life whenever I see him. Which one should cry, you or me?"

After hearing Zhao Yuan's words, Zhang Tie's face blushed. He started to recall what happened whenever he met Zhao Yuan from when he was chased by the b*stard of Zhen Clan from Heavens Cold City to the present. He also found that he was indeed in dilemmas whenever he met or might meet Zhao Yuan, for

instance, when he fought Master Abyan to death in Blackhot City; this time, it was more inexplicable. If he was killed by them, he might not even know the reason.

Zhang Tie felt pretty stupid when he found that his master could still live so well even though he had occupied the first place in the wanted list in the supreme court in Taixia Country so many years and was wanted by the top seven sects in Taixia Country with the reward of 100 cities.

Zhang Tie lowered his head bashfully.

"Well, it's indeed out of my imagination that you've already promoted to a knight after these years. It seems that you also have some opportunities. When in Blackhot City in Waii Subcontinent, after feeling that your soul crystal had broken apart and your qi had vanished, I went to look for you; however, I didn't find you. I thought you were dead. But you're still alive. What happened?" Zhao Yuan put it straight.

Zhang Tie poured out the resentment between him and Abyan. He even revealed that Abyan was a shadow demon. Except for Castle of Black Iron, he told Zhao Yuan everything that he knew. As Zhang Tie didn't mention Castle of Black Iron, he slightly polished the process of this event. Although he delayed the origin the gold-eaten boa, he had almost made himself clear.

In a hidden place left by Master Abyan, he killed Abyan with the teeth of the gold-eaten boa in the final moment and gained Abyan's energy. As a result, he slept a few years in a special state and lit a lot of surging points. Besides advancing to higher levels, he also activated his pupil color changing bloodline.

After describing what happened in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie told Zhao Yuan how he fought demons in Waii Subcontinent, how he met and cultivated in the tower of time underground Kalay Mountain Range and how he promoted to a knight.

Even Zhao Yuan was surprised by Zhang Tie's wonderful

experiences.

"Do you have the teeth of gold-eaten boa with you?"

Zhang Tie directly took the teeth of gold-eaten boa out of the space of his finger ring. Since he got this finger ring, Zhang Tie had transferred many utilities such as medicaments, weapons and jewelry from the space of Castle of Black Iron into the space of this finger ring. On this occasion, Zhao Yuan could not imagine that Zhang Tie had another space-teleportation equipment besides this finger ring.

After touching the teeth of the gold-eaten boa carefully, Zhao Yuan nodded inside. As the alchemist demon, of course, Zhao Yuan could sense the trace of faintly back-flow of energy in the teeth of gold-eaten boa, which verified Zhang Tie's words.

"This teeth of an adult gold-eaten boa is exotic. However, its shape is a bit coarse. Well, now that I've seen it, I will help you process it!" After saying that, Zhao Yuan ran his qi while Zhang Tie felt a great energy flowing towards Zhao Yuan from the elements realm. It was a bit similar to the appearance of silver secret weapons out of the void. At the same time, the teeth of gold-eaten boa turned red and started to radiate red lights...

Holding the teeth of gold-eaten boa, Zhao Yuan moved his hands quickly. Even with his sharp observation ability, Zhang Tie could barely identify Zhao Yuan's movements.

Along with Zhao Yuan's movements, the teeth which were radiating glow gradually changed its shape. Only after a few minutes, Zhao Yuan stopped his movements. The teeth had vanished; instead, a grim, chilling three-edge dagger appeared. Zhang Yuan threw the dagger to Zhang Tie.

"Knights could also use it. It's much better than common rune weapons. As long as you inject your battle qi into it, you could pierce through most equipment and most protective battle qis of black iron knights except for silver secret items and very few

special equipment. Additionally, it could devour and transfer a few parts of qi, blood and energy from the living beings that you've pierced through to you and help you recover your physical strength, qi and blood very fast. If you fight your enemy in the dilemma, you could even stand longer with it!"

Watching the tri-edged dagger which was barely similar to the teeth of gold-eaten boa and hearing Zhao Yuan's words, Zhang Tie was really in awe of his master. Such a marvelous talent for making an alchemist item by hand was completely out of Zhang Tie's imagination.

"Thank you. Master, you're great!" Zhang Tie praised Zhao Yuan sincerely.

After hearing Zhang Tie's praise, Zhao Yuan revealed a faint smile. Zhao Yuan had heard too many praises in his life; however, it was his first time to hear a praise from his apprentice. The word "great" really made Zhao Yuan satisfied.

"I've returned to Taixia Country a few years ago. Previously, I thought you were dead. When I heard that you inflicted heavy losses on the Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou Province a few days ago, I was not sure that it was really you. However, with a glimmer of hope, I came to Youzhou Province to investigate it. Then, I learned that you were still alive. After that, I was told that you had been in Fuhai City in Yingzhou Province for engagement. Therefore, I came to Yingzhou Province to meet you. Weren't you engaged in Yingzhou Province? Then, why were you besieged by people? Even the Cheji General in Yingzhou Province wanted to kill you. What happened?"

After hearing Zhao Yuan's words, Zhang Tie understood that the earth knight in armor who appeared by airboat was Cheji General in Yingzhou Province, 'No wonder he was so fierce!'

However, Zhang Tie was still confused about this event. After hearing Zhao Yuan's question, Zhang Tie could only force a bitter

smile, "Honestly, I don't know what happened either. When I left Fuhai City that night, everything went well. I've not imagined that I was framed by someone and almost lost my life!"

"You're framed?" Zhao Yuan's eyes radiated a killing qi.

Thus, Zhang Tie told what happened before he met Zhao Yuan that night.

"That knight in black clothes and mask who induced you away from the airship and the other guy who looked as same as you were devoured by the black flames that rose from their bodies and vanished?" Zhao Yuan looked solemn.

"Yes, master, I'm still confused. How could a black iron knight sacrifice himself to induce me? What a high price it is!" Zhang Tie shook his head.

"Those two people were not black iron knights. They were just puppets being manipulated by people!" Zhao Yuan watched Zhang Tie and told him in a solemn tone.

"Puppets?"

"Hmm!" Zhao Yuan nodded, "There's a secret method in Taixia Country called Bloody Demon Imitation Method. People above LV 10 could own the power of a black iron knight closely after adopting this method..."

Chapter 894: Happiness and Misfortune Depend on Each Other

'Bloody Demon Imitation Method?' From its name, Zhang Tie realized that it was a weird and terrifying secret skill...

Zhang Tie was really shocked by this name while what happened that night became clear all of a sudden.

"After adopting the Bloody Demon Imitation Method, people above LV 10 could imitate the battle strength of a black iron knight. Additionally, his consciousness and soul would be controlled by people just like a senior puppet. The effect of this secret method also varies according to the difference in the levels of the executee and the executor. The sharpest Bloody Demon Imitation Method that I've seen could enable a battle spirit to maintain his battle strength above that of a half earth knight within 1 week. When the executor stopped controlling the puppet, a black flame would rise from the puppet's body; only in a few seconds, the puppet would burn completely, leaving no remains at all!"

After hearing that, a thought occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, "Who could apply this secret method in Taixia Country?"

"Bloody Demon Imitation Method was a top-secret skill of the Bloody-soul Temple of Taixia Country. 6 decades ago, the Bloody-soul Temple made a fatal mistake and was cleaned up by the top 7 sects in Taixia Country. It had already vanished. After exterminating the Bloody-soul Temple, the top 7 sects in Taixia Country gained a lot of secret skills. The Bloody Demon Imitation Method had been lost. It might have been gained by the top 7 sects in Taixia Country. Meanwhile, a lot of members of the Bloody-soul Temple had escaped and hidden themselves. Therefore, those who could use the Bloody Demon Imitation Method might come from the top 7 sects in Taixia Country or the remnants of the Bloody-

soul Temple, or probably be the others who have gained the Bloody Demon Imitation Method!"

'Bloody-soul Temple. I've not imagined that I would hear this name once again.' Zhang Tie thought as the Soul-forbidden Skill that he mastered was also from Bloody-soul Temple. He had not imagined that he could hear this name once again.

'The Bloody Demon Imitation Method also comes from Bloody-soul Temple. Additionally, Bloody-soul Temple was exterminated by the top 7 sects in Taixia Country. It indicates that Bloody-soul Temple was very powerful in Taixia Country. A common sect would never be attacked by top 7 sects at the same time. Given the secret skills of Bloody-soul Temple, I find that they would be very destructive if they were used to do bad things. No wonder that Bloody-soul Temple infuriated the top 7 sects.'

If the Soul-forbidden Skill could be mastered by the Three-eye Association clans in Waii Subcontinent, the other secret methods of Bloody-soul Temple might have also been mastered by the Three-eye Association clans.

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie asked, "You mean I could not find any clue through the Bloody Demon Imitation Method?"

"There is a clue; however it's useless for you!"

"Why?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"The Bloody Demon Imitation Method could grant a fighter above LV 10 with the battle strength of a knight in a short period; however, the executor would also suffer a great loss. Therefore, the executor of the Bloody Demon Imitation Method should be at least a shadow knight who had formed the three chakras. Based on your current ability, a shadow knight could kill you easily! The greatest battle strength across Huaiyuan Palace is just an earth knight who has formed two chakras. How do you fight a knight who has formed three chakras?" Zhao Yuan looked at Zhang Tie,

"Additionally, this trap is perfect. The puppet who disguised as you might have done something that infuriated the public; therefore, he was chased by people all the way into the wilderness. The moment the two puppets vanished in the wilderness, the evidence that could verify that you're innocent disappeared. When the others arrived, you were the very evil person. You have no reason to argue about that, not to mention that you've killed Qin Wu in front of them. Therefore, you've no chance to exonerate yourself from a charge at all. That one dared not kill you before; however, the moment you appear in front of him now, you will be killed for sure. Even if you know who the murderer is, you will not be able to defeat him, not to mention that you don't even know who he is. Therefore, you should stay away from him; the farther the better now."

Zhang Tie became silent and reassured in a split second, 'What 'I' have done in Fuhai City? Given the roar of Qin Wu before death, I'm afraid that the young master of Qin Clan has been killed by "me". However, what did the words of the Cheji General in Yingzhou Province mean? The resentments between the Gobbling Party and I and Lord Huaiyuan Palace have been exposed to the public; the Gobbling Party have ruined my engagement. Although it was a bit rude, lunatic and lawless for "me" to kill the members of Gobbling Party, how did I make Lord Huaiyuan humiliated? Besides killing the members of the Gobbling Party, "I" must have done something else in Fuhai City that drove others furious...'

The look of Director Fan suddenly occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, arousing an ominous feeling in Zhang Tie's heart. As a result, Zhang Tie's heart froze immediately...

'After Fan mansion broke off the engagement, I felt like losing my face. If I did something bad in Fan mansion, everyone would take it as my revenge after being driven mad...'

'Besides the possible evil deed in Fan mansion, if "I" killed some members of the Morality Association and was discovered. After

that, I was chased all the way out of Yingzhou Province and encountered a fierce battle in the wilderness. Qin Wu was even killed by me...'

'I'm afraid that I've already been listed as wanted in the supreme court of Taixia Country!'

'Such a trap is really well-planned. Any link is reasonable, leaving no loophole at all——vicious, really vicious, extremely vicious! I'm afraid that they've already planned it the moment I left Yingzhou Province...'

'Through this trap, they're going to kill me and completely pollute my gentlemen's halos. Meanwhile, they intend to send Huaiyuan Palace to the opposite side of Fan Clan and Qin Clan. A stone with three birds! If the culprit of this trap is the Heavens Reaching Church of demons, a stone with four birds! Because they cause major clans in Taixia Country to fight each other...

'Who's the culprit, the Gobbling Party, the demons or the others who want to strike me and the Gobbling Party at the same time...'

'The Gobbling Party could perform the ruse of self-injury to strike me and Huaiyuan Palace; demons could revenge and arouse internal chaos in Taixia Country; the others and forces might have other evil purposes.'

'Qin Wu is a clue; however, Qin Wu is just an employed elder in Qin Clan, a senior guard of Qin mansion or a senior piece who could be sacrificed at any time when necessary. It's not hard to find too many information about Qin Wu's death. If Qin Wu sacrificed himself voluntarily, the culprit on his back definitely used a terrifying manner.

Qin Wu's death fixed Zhang Tie's crime at once.

This time, Zhang Tie understood that there was nothing he could do to clear his name. He could not even find a place to cry out a grievance across the country.

'What a fatal blow!'

A question suddenly occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, Zhang Tie then recovered his composure, "Master, for how many days have I slept this time?"

"Two days!" Zhao Yuan replied, "Faster than I've imagined!"

After hearing that he had slept for two days, Zhang Tie took out the remote-sensing crystal and started to contact his elder brother.

Zhao Yuan knew what Zhang Tie was doing. Therefore, he just waited aside silently.

In a split second, he confirmed the status of the opponent in secret words.

"Are you all right? The family members are worried about you very much."

"I'm fine, how's my mom?"

"Mom is worried about you so much. The entire family doesn't believe that you could do such an evil thing!"

The trust from his family made Zhang Tie feel warm inside. After recovering his composure, Zhang Tie continued to talk with his elder brother...

"It's too complicated. I'm framed. It's hard to clarify it. You'd better comfort mom first and tell mom and dad that I'm safe and sound. They don't need to worry about me; especially mom, she has just recovered from her mental disease lately, don't make her get sick once again."

Actually, Zhang Tie didn't care how he was framed and wronged, what he was worried about the most was that his mom might get her sickness back after knowing what happened to him.

"I know!"

"How about my wives?"

"They're good, their babies have been 2 months old."

Before Zhang Tie came to Yingzhou Province, the five women in his bedroom got pregnant at the same time. Zhang Tie finished another round of sowing. His mom would soon become the principal of a kindergarten.

"What happened in Fuhai City after I left there?"

After being silent for 2 seconds...

"According to their description, you're too arrogant. After being greatly stimulated by the event that Fan Clan broke off the engagement, you lost your mind out of fury and exterminated the entire family of Director Fan; you even raped his daughter. Director Fan wanted to prevent you; however, his left chest was penetrated by your battle qi. Luckily, his heart was on the right chest, therefore, he survived. Director Fan said that he had witnessed what you had done as the first witness of your crime. After you left Fan mansion, you went to a private mansion in Fuhai City and killed all the 37 members of the Morality Association in Fuhai City including Yang Yushan the head and the young master of Qin Clan in Yingzhou Province in a very brutal way. Qin Wu the employed elder of Qin Clan and two knights in Fuhai City chased you all the way out of Fuhai City and entered the wilderness. Facing Cheji General, Qin Wu was also killed by you. After that, you were wounded by Feng Yuelun the Cheji General in Yingzhou Province and escaped by trick. The Supreme Court in Taixia Country has already issued the order to arrest and kill you. Many clans across Yingzhou Provinces including Qin Clan and Fan Clan want your head with the reward of over 300 million gold coins and a city. Elder Muyuan has come to our home. He said that the Supreme Court of Xuanyuan Hill had dispatched commissioners to Youzhou Province so as to investigate this event. After they arrived at Youzhou Province, all the remote-sensing crystals had to be submitted to them according to the regulations. I will not be able to contact you independently from then on. Otherwise, I will

commit a crime of shielding criminal. He told me to prepare for that."

It took Zhang Tie 2 minutes to digest this paragraph of Zhang Yang. It was worse than he had imagined. His enemy destroyed his gentleman's halos by the reason that he was possessed by the devil. The witness, the plaintiff, the physical evidence and the crime were all ready. Zhang Tie, who had taken the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province knew about the rules of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country more or less. If the Supreme Court of Taixia Country issued the order to arrest and kill someone, this case must have been fixed and posed a great influence in Taixia Country, which could be hardly reversed.

Zhang Tie felt bitter. He had not imagined that the event that Fan clan broke off the engagement could become a loophole that the others would use to frame him as being possessed by the devil and the fuse of this trap. The one who set the trap was too terrifying...

"After I left Fuhai City, someone disguised as me and committed a physical murder in Fuhai City. After that, he induced me to the wilderness from the airship so as to collide with the knight who chased the murderer all the way from Fuhai City. Qin Wu must have a special background. Before Feng Yuelun arrived, Qin Wu committed suicide and made it look like that he was killed by me. Therefore, I could not argue about that. This event is too complicated. The one who set the trap is too powerful. The entire Huaiyuan Palace could not beat him. No matter what, elder brother, you should tell mom and my wives that it was not done by me. Additionally, I could protect myself. I will not die. "

"I will report your words to Elder Muyuan and let Huaiyuan Palace know that you're framed. What can I do for you? Jinwu Business Group has many branches across Taixia Country. I could mobilize the resources of those branches."

"No need, I could take care of myself. To avoid trouble, this is the

last time I contact you with this remote-sensing crystal."

"Watch out! You have to live on no matter what!"

"I will, elder brother, I hope you could help the brothers of the God's Will brotherhood."

"No problem!"

Zhang Yang didn't ask Zhang Tie's whereabouts in case of leaking Zhang Tie's trace.

That was what a brother should do!

After contacting his elder brother, Zhang Tie rubbed the remote-sensing crystal into pieces.

Zhang Tie then contacted Huaiyuan Palace.

He received two messages.

First, the Supreme Court has dispatched powerhouses to Youzhou Province. Don't go back to Youzhou!

Second, take care of yourself!

It seemed that even Huaiyuan Palace thought that it was done by Zhang Tie.

After throwing a glance at the elder's finger ring, Zhang Tie took it off and threw it into the space of the nanobead.

After that, Zhang Tie contacted Guan Xiyi, the CEO of Gold and Power Law. As the dark gold CEO, Guan Xiyi was Zhang Tie's only liaison in Gold and Power Law.

——I feel very sorry about the events that you were suppressed by the Gobbling Party and Fan family broke off the engagement. However, Gold and Power Law could barely agree with how you took revenge with the Morality Association in Fuhai City and Fan family. I feel very regretful to tell you that the Gold and Power Law could not accept someone whom the Supreme Court of Taixia Country has issued an order to arrest and kill. This is our bottom

line. Therefore, your status as the dark gold CEO has been canceled. However, out of the morality and the contract between you and us, the Gold and Power Law will not leak your status as Peter Hamplester to the Supreme Court or anyone. Neither will we provide any assistance to you nor those who want to arrest and revenge you. Please forgive us.

After reading this courtesy reply, Zhang Tie also felt the sense of estrangement from Gold and Power Law.

Zhang Tie then replied Guan Xiyi——Don't let Donder interfere in this event. Additionally, please tell him that what happened in Fuhai City was not done by me. I've been treated as a human flesh bag and was usually humiliated when chasing after girls. The event of breaking off an engagement is nothing serious to me. It's not just me who knows "disguise skills" which he taught me in Blackhot City, someone has even more advanced "disguise skills".

On this occasion, Zhang Tie didn't need to explain it to the Gold and Power Law at all out of his dignity. However, as Donder was his inspiration, friend and almost brother who had taught him too much, Zhang Tie didn't want to let him down. As for others, Zhang Tie didn't care about their opinion about him.

After being silent for a few seconds, Guan Xiyi replied——I will. But Donder has already applied to be the manager of Golden Roc Bank in Jinwu City when the city is built.

...

'This guy...'

Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile. Closely after that, he took off the finger ring which was used to contact the Gold and Power Law from his finger and broke the remote-sensing crystal into pieces...

...

"Did you sense that?" After Zhang Tie contacted all the important people, Zhao Yuan leisurely opened his mouth.

Zhang Tie became curious, "Sense what?"

"Besides power, who else could accompany you in the world?" Zhao Yuan leisurely replied...

Closely after hearing Zhao Yuan's reply, Zhang Tie had indeed realized it, "I could not rely on any other force anymore, whether it is my clan or my organization. I could only protect myself with my own battle strength at such a critical moment.'

However, what Zhang Tie felt conciliative was that his family members were not involved in this event no matter whether he was framed by others or not. This was the benefit as a knight and the bottom line of the "Laws of Taixia Country"—If a knight who had mastered the top battle strength and power in the world made a crime and would have his family members involved with that, knights might have already risen in revolt.

After tasting Zhao Yuan's words, Zhang Tie asked, "Master, do you want me to learn alchemist skills from you now so as to improve my power?"

"Based on your aptitude, after I inspire you, you could get the ABC of alchemist skills after immersing yourself in them for 3 decades. With another 3 decades, you could make a small achievement on them. However, you've already been a knight with full resentments. Will you be patient enough to learn alchemist skills only for the small achievement in 6 decades?" Zhao Yuan watched Zhang Tie with a meaningful look.

Zhang Tie became silent.

'Yeah, will I spend 6 decades to cultivate alchemist skills only for a small achievement? What's more, will they spare me 6 decades?'

'Sometimes, the dreams of a young age makes me so hesitated in reality. What a complex mood!'

'Although I dream to be an alchemist master, I'm not allowed to do that in reality. Unimaginably, I became an animal controller

and rune equipment master...'

Receiving no response, Zhao Yuan suddenly asked with a profound meaning, "Do you know why I'm called an alchemist devil?"

"Is it because the master has unrivaled alchemist skills and could end your resentments as soon as you want, which arouses others' awe?"

Zhao Yuan shook his head, "You've just hit one point. However, it's not the most important. Of course, the devil should have very special talents and do very special things. The one who could devour the world by his bloody mouth could be qualified as a devil. There're thousands of human alchemists; however, I'm the only one being called an alchemist devil!"

"You mean you are unrivaled, having far greater power than your same kind?"

"No matter how powerful I am, I'm just a heavenly knight who has formed 4 chakras. I'm powerful; however, I'm not unrivaled. My opponents are not worse than me. I'm not the only heavenly knight in the world!" Zhao Yuan shook his head once again.

"Why then?" Zhang Tie scratched his head.

"As metals, rocks, humans, demons and all the other visible items in the world are just balls of energy, all of them could be refined. When you could refine everything in the world, you will become a devil!" Zhao Yuan replied with an overbearing, shocking look.

"Refine everything in the world!" Zhang Tie muttered, "What do you mean by refining everything in the world!"

"In my eyes, the so-called knight is just a walking element crystal. When I dislike them, humans or demons, I will consume them so as to form my chakras and break through my realm..." Zhao Yuan explained it as he pointed at Zhang Tie's forehead with one finger. At the same time, some occult messages poured into Zhang Tie's

mind at once.

It was a secret skill which could enable Zhao Yuan to be invincible in the world except for an alchemist skill.

The secret skill was "wordless". Because words were feeble and futile, which were always out of the original intention, the top-secret skills could only be passed through the mind.

The secret skill was called "Purgatory Samsara"...

At the end of the secret skill, an exotic beast that opened its huge black mouth and could devour the entire world appeared.

"If a gentleman was possessed by the devil, his road towards a sage would be cut off; if he cultivated towards the sage, the gossip that he's possessed by the devil would collapse of itself and he would be protected by almighty gods and auspicious things. In this world, who else could prove that you're innocent besides power? Besides battle, who else could lead you to the road towards sage? If you don't experience samsara in the purgatory, how do you devour the entire world and conquer the universe..." Zhao Yuan said as he stepped into the misty clouds by one foot while his voice was still lingering at Zhang Tie's ear, "I've passed the "Purgatory Samsara" to you. After leaving my knowledge to you, I've almost had my dream come true. When you could form 4 chakras in the future and chase your enemies like chasing pye-dogs; when you have a pee at the gate of the Supreme Court and would only be ignored by others, you could find me in the Gods' Realm of the earth-elements realm...this place is the Lianyun Mountain in the east of Qingzhou Province. Yingzhou Province is in the east. It's over 25,000 miles away from Fuhai City. It's always untraversed here. I found such a mountain cave where a knight passed away while sitting cross-legged by accident. There's a "Fire Dragon Sutra" in the jade case in the cave, which was left by the late knight for the lucky person. "Fire Dragon Sutra" is a Marquis-level classic. It's also very precious. However, it's useless to me. The battle skill is a bit interesting. You can handle it by yourself. By the way, you could

comprehend the "Purgatory Samsara" for a few days here. It's dangerous at the foot of the mountain. Knights are dragons among humans. Dragons could move in the universe and make clouds and rains in a domineering way or hold their bodies in water and play with fish and shrimps or bath the sunlight..."

While the voice lingered in his ears, the lonely yet domineering figure had disappeared in front of Zhang Tie...

...

Standing at the edge of the cliff, Zhang Tie watched the clouds still for 3 days...

3 days later, Zhang Tie moved his body, causing a crack while the surrounding clouds started to revolve around Zhang Tie like a chakra.

After a short while, the clouds dispersed. Zhang Tie opened his gleaming eyes.

After returning to the cave, Zhang Tie walked to the stone table. After taking the jade case, he blew off the dust on its cover and opened it.

There was indeed a secret skill in a very extravagant crystal being wrapped by a piece of mithril. Taking it, Zhang Tie injected his spiritual energy into it and saw the golden words "Fire Dragon Sutra"

What surprised Zhang Tie was that this "Fire Dragon Sutra" not only contained a systematic cultivation system on lighting surging points but also contained "Fire-dragon Heavens Burning Javelin Skill", "Fire-dragon Golden Body", "Fire-dragon Palm Skill with a Sun" and "Fire-dragon Light-speed Dodging Skill".

Besides the "King Roc Sutra", the "Fire Dragon Sutra" and the other battle skills was almost the most senior secret skill of cultivation that Zhang Tie could touch.

After putting away these secret skills, Zhang Tie threw a glance

at that skeleton sitting cross-legged and bowed towards it three times. After that, he excavated a place beside the mountain cave and buried it inside.

After doing that, Zhang Tie flew into the clouds...

Chapter 895: Returning to Fuhai City

After about one week of flight from Yunfeng City in the west of Yingzhou Province to Fuhai City, the public airship landed at the airport in the west of Fuhai City at dusk of May 16.

Yunfeng City was an inland city of Yingzhou Province while Fuhai City was a coastal city. The two places produced very different specialties. Therefore, a lot of small traders traversed between the two cities by public airship.

As big business groups and commercial organizations had their private airships. Of course, they didn't need to take this kind of public airship.

This kind of public airship was not cheap. The flight of 6 days from Yunfeng City to Fuhai City plus supplies in the way would cost a common soft sleeper 2 gold coins and 20 silver coins.

Before landing, a slightly fat steward entered the soft sleepers cabin with a metal trumpet and shouted, "We've already arrived at Fuhai City. Please be ready to get off. Don't forget your belongings. After getting off the airship, passengers who have handled the consignment business please receive your commodities at the exit of the cargo hatch with your consignment voucher!"

The steward repeated it twice. The passengers in the soft sleeper cabin then started to get up.

After informing the passengers in the soft sleeper cabin, the steward went to inform the other cabins.

There were over 30 passengers on the 3-storey single beds in the cabin. It was very crowded. As over 30 men didn't take bath for a week, of course, it was filled with the stinking smell due to perspiration, plus tobacco flavor. After the airship landed, these smells might not be dispersed until being ventilated for over half an hour.

"The airline from Yunfeng City to Fuhai City is becoming more crowded. I remember that there was a breakfast when I came here two months ago. I've not imagined that this airship has accelerated a bit in mid-way supply and flight and arrives at Fuhai City before 8 am. As a result, we don't have free breakfast anymore!" A 40-odd year pedlar got up as he put things away. Shaking his head, he added, "Men are not what they were in the old times anymore..."

"According to my knowledge, in order to prepare for the holy war, not only the airships, even the railway networks across Taixia Country would speed up in an all-round manner. They are going to introduce new steam locomotives. It's said that the new steam locomotives could reach a speed of 180 km per hour, which is almost $\frac{1}{3}$ faster than the highest speed of the current locomotives. When we come to Fuhai City next time, we could try the train, it's not slower than airship!" A passenger said as he was climbing out of his bed.

"Wow, this is a big business. It would cost hundreds of millions of gold coins to upgrade the entire railway network across Taixia Country!" Someone exclaimed, "I wonder which clan will produce the new steam engines!"

"Such a big business could never be undertaken by a clan or a business group. The technologies and standards of such a great business could only be presented by transportation ministry and the ministry of industry and information. After that, qualified clans and business groups across Taixia Country would bid for that and share the cake. Those powerful ones would share more; those weaker ones would share less. Everyone could share the business." An experienced voice sounded. Closely after that, he shouted, "I was told that some huge ships' goods had been transported from Yinyue Subcontinent to Fuhai Harbor lately along with many border residents. Who wants to take a look with me over there?"

"I, I!" Someone replied at once.

After staying in a soft sleeper cabin for 6 days, they had been

familiar with each other. After making exchanges with each other, they might find many business opportunities.

Not all of them in the soft sleeper cabin were pedlars. When the others prepared to get off the airship in a bustling way, one person in a trivial corner of the soft sleeper cabin also stretched out his limbs before standing up. After that, he flicked his clothes and followed the others away.

Watching this guy walking by, some pedlars instantly gave a way to him on the narrow passageway.

He was a tough guy as high as 2.3 m. The moment he stood up, all the people in the soft sleeper cabin were dwarfed. In front of such a tough guy, commoners would be at least 50 cm lower.

The tough guy was featured by a frightening bald head, curly mustache, sturdy bones. Although in a coarse cloth, his powerful muscles were still evident. His upper arms were as thick as the thighs of those common businessmen. A pair of hands as large as cattail fans could fully cover one's head. It was nothing extravagant to stand on his fist and run horses on his arms.

The tough guy looked dignified and vicious. The slim spirited eyes below his saber-sized dense eyebrows faintly revealed frightening red lights. Timid guys might be scared by this tough guy.

During the past 6 days, besides daily activities such as having food and pee, he did nothing but sleep. Due to his vicious look, the others in the cabin dared not talk to him. Therefore, nobody knew his name until then.

When the tough guy was going to get off the airship, a voice suddenly sounded on his back.

"Tough man, please hold on!"

"What?" The tough man stopped and turned around. The captain of the airship immediately felt a stress as he had to reveal a genial

smile.

"I'm Liu Chuan, the captain of this airship. May I know your name?"

"My surname is Cui. Hurry, don't waste my time!" The tough man's loud, deep voice sounded like muffled thunders. At the same time, he flapped his hands impatiently. Feeling the strong wind, the captain's smile became more genial.

"Erm, given your robust figure, I think you must have an unusual talent. Our business group's squad of bodyguards are recruiting heroes lately. We need you most, will you consider it Hero Cui?"

Given the robust figure and muscles of Cui who looked like a mighty miracle god, even though he had no battle strength, as long as he stood somewhere, he would shock the common insurgents. He was qualified to be a guard of the business group for sure.

After blinking his eyes, Hero Cui pointed at his nose and asked, "Your squad of guards want to recruit me?"

"Yes, the members of the squad of guards of Fengyun Business Group could have at least 30 gold coins a year. Additionally, after entering it, you could learn battle skills from famous fighters employed by the business group!"

The tough guy burst out into laughter as loud as thunders, causing Captain Liu's ears to hum.

The tough guy directly patted onto Captain Liu's shoulder forcefully and almost caused him to sit on the ground, "Hahaha...thanks for your good intention. But you cannot afford me!"

Although feeling his half body numb, Captain Liu still smiled, "30 gold coins is our lowest treatment. If Hero Cui is good at fighting, you could enjoy more for sure!"

"I want to be awarded as lord, can your Fengyun Business Group afford me?"

Captain Liu's face became stiff, "Hero Cui must be joking, it could only be afforded by the imperial court!"

"That's it..." In the laughter, Hero Cui shook his head. After that, he turned around and got off the airship, entering the underground tunnel of the airport...

'Did I back the wrong horse? This Cui guy is a paladin...'

Seeing the tall figure off the airship, Captain Liu became stunned for a second while such a thought occurred to his mind...

...

1 hour later, the tough guy appeared in a street, both sides of which were crowded with remarkable mansions.

Fan mansion was closed. Nobody was inside anymore, except for the two white lanterns hanging over the gate. Each lantern was marked with a big Hua character " 奠 1 ". There were maintaining yellow and white joss paper on the side of the ditch of the parterre outside the mansion. The other mansions neighboring and being opposite to Fan mansion had also hung some exotic objects on the hidden places of their gates.

7 days 2 had already passed since the massacre. After the other Fan members made a religious ceremony to release souls from purgatory and sacrifice the dead ones, they took Director Fan back home for rehabilitation. Therefore, the former boisterous mansion of Director Fan in Fuhai City was completely empty.

When he passed by the gate of Fan mansion, the tough guy threw a glance at the mansion before moving forward straightly.

On the way, he met two criminal hunters who were patrolling the street. Therefore, he moved forward and asked, "Hi, buddies, where's the Pavilion of Brightness?"

The criminal hunters turned around and felt a tower erecting in front of him.

'Now that this guy is asking for the direction of the Pavilion of Brightness, of course, he's not a bad guy.'

A criminal hunter guided the way for him.

"Thanks!" The tough guy strode away.

'What a tough guy!' After throwing a glance at each other, the two criminal hunters applauded inside.

...

The Pavilion of Brightness in Fuhai City was an 8-storey pavilion. Like the bounty hunters union in Fuhai City, this place gathered the bounty hunters across Fuhai City.

In the Pavilion of Brightness, bounty hunters could inquire information and make exchanges with each other. They could also accept assignments or join hands to hunt targets on the wanted list.

As such a shocking tragedy had just happened in Fuhai City a week ago, the Pavilion of Brightness was pretty boisterous at this moment. 5 or 6 of 10 were discussing the same case.

The tough guy didn't enter the Pavilion of Brightness; instead, he took a seat in a teahouse near the Pavilion of Brightness. While having drinks and food, he listened to the story-teller telling a story

...

Chapter 896: Everything is Like a Boat with a Short Canopy

The tough guy surnamed Cui sat in the teahouse for the entire morning. Until afternoon did he pat his butt and left...

Although not being in the Pavilion of Brightness, the tough guy had heard all the messages from the Pavilion of Brightness.

Of course, this tough guy surnamed Cui was Zhang Tie.

After activating his body-changing immortal bloodline, Zhang Tie completely changed his look. Even those knights who chased after him that night might not identify him.

The look of this tough guy was not fabricated. It was an incarnation of Zhu Liang the fierce wolf that Zhang Tie had read from Zhu Liang's memory after killing him on the isle in the open water of Qiongzhou Province.

Zhu Liang the fierce wolf might be unworthy of mentioning in Zhang Tie's eyes; however, he excelled at disguising. As he was pretty cunning, he had a lot of incarnations in Youzhou Province. Because of this, Zhu Liang the fierce wolf became unfettered on the wanted list of the Supreme Court in Taixia Country for so many years. If not he had met Li Butian when he raped a woman, he might be still wandering about leisurely.

The image of the tough guy surnamed Cui was an identity that Zhu Liang the fierce wolf always used when he didn't make crimes or wanted to escape from investigations. Over the past dozens of years, nobody could find that this tough guy was Zhu Liang until he was killed by Zhang Tie.

Given this point, this identity had never been exposed to the public.

The prototype of this identity was called Cui Li, who lived in the Liuying Town at the foot of the Panlong Mountain outside Zeyun

City in the Luye Prefecture of Yongzhou Province. He was a local celebrity.

Cui Li was well-known nearby Liuying Town because of the following reasons: First, Cui Li was a local landlord as he had over 30,000 square meters' arable lands and mountain woods. He was rich. Second, Cui Li was kind-hearted. He usually donated money to his villagers for paving roads and renovating schools. Therefore, he had a good reputation among the villagers. Third, Cui Li was obsessed with studying fighting skills. He used to practice martial arts at home. He was a good fighter. One time, he even arrested a big burglar when he passed by Liuying Town. Therefore, he was the idol of the local youngsters.

When Zhu Liang the fierce wolf couldn't stand making a crime, Cui Li would leave Liuying Town at the foot of Panlong Mountain in the name of paying visits to famous masters and would not return for many months or years, which would not arouse people's doubts at all.

Cui Li was single. He only had some docile servants at home. His "parents" were two puppets that he controlled using medicine. When the family settled down in Liuying Town and gained legal "identities", Cui Li's "parents" "passed away" in a few years consecutively.

Previously, Cui Li's "parents" were just two commoners living in a remote village before settling down in Liuying Town. They had a son called Cui Li. The real Cui Li and Zhu Liang the fierce wolf who disguised as a herbalist doctor were good friends for a long time. Zhu Liang even had cured Cui Li's parents. Pitifully, after Zhu Liang figured out the situation of Cui Li's background, he directly killed Cui Li. After that, Zhu Liang used the name of Cui Li and controlled his parents by medicine. After that, the family moved to Liuying Town and settled down there. After dozens of years, nobody could figure out the real identity of Zhu Liang anymore.

It had been over 1 decade since Zhu Liang left Luye Prefecture of

Youzhou Province for paying visits to masters in the name of Cui Li.

This time, Zhang Tie found that this identity fitted him well. Considering it as his reward after killing Zhu Liang, Zhang Tie disguised as Cui Li.

The disguise skill and bones-shrinking skill of Zhu Liang the fierce wolf could never match the body-changing skill of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie looked absolutely the same as the real Cui Li.

After converting his "King Roc Sutra" into "Fire Dragon Sutra", of course, Zhang Tie who had disguised as Cui Li carried the features of "fire dragon sutra", namely, as sturdy as a Hua dragon. These days, Zhang Tie had almost got hang of the secret battle skills in the "Fire Dragon Sutra" in the trouble-reappearance situations. Honestly, they were the most advanced battle skills that Zhang Tie had touched. As he imitated the "Fire Dragon Sutra" by the "King Roc Sutra", Zhang Tie started to cultivate those battle skills at the same time. Unimaginably, he got a marvelous effect.

This time, Zhang Tie discovered the great value of "King Roc Sutra" as an emperor-level secret skill once again. With the domineering power of an emperor-level secret skill, Zhang Tie could rapidly imitate other secret skills using the ability granted by the "King Roc Sutra". During the process that the "King Roc Sutra" was converted into "Fire Dragon Sutra", Zhang Tie rapidly lit all of his surging points using the energy of the chakra of the "King Roc Sutra" according to the requirements of the "Fire Dragon Sutra". It only took Zhang Tie a few hours to imitate the entire process. After lighting them all, Zhang Tie had one more template of "Fire Dragon Sutra" besides the earlier one of "Five-elements Ground-look Sutra". He could realize the conversion between "King Roc Sutra" and each of the other two sutras in only a few seconds.

As he deduced the "King Roc Sutra" by sacrificing himself

numerous times, Zhang Tie wondered whether the "King Roc Sutra" contained some more powerful battle skills just like those in the "Fire Dragon Sutra". He didn't think about this before. However, after gaining the "Fire Dragon Sutra" and learning the battle skills in "Fire Dragon Sutra", Zhang Tie felt that the real "King Roc Sutra" might contain some powerful battle skills. However, he could not deduce them.

It was Zhang Tie's great fortune to gain the emperor-level "King Roc Sutra" by deduction in trouble-reappearance situations. Zhang Tie didn't make excessive expectations. He could not always seek perfection. Except for the doubt in his mind, Zhang Tie had been very satisfied.

...

Based on Zhang Tie's current judgment and perceptions, after collecting all the discussions in the Pavilion of Brightness, he figured out many unknowns and restored what happened in Fuhai City that night.

The middle-aged literati who chased after him that night was a bosom friend of the mayor of Fuhai City and the lecturer of the mayor's sons. His nickname was Cyan Flute Hermit, a pretty famous knight in Yingzhou Province. He had lived in Fuhai City for many years.

The one who used knight was the junior fellow apprentice of the head of Lancang Sect in Yingzhou Province and the promising, youngest elder in Lancang Sect. When the event occurred, he was passing by Fuhai City and was going to travel in Yinyue Subcontinent by sea. Right then, he saw Qin Wu's battle qi shooting into the sky, he then chased after Zhang Tie together with Qin Wu.

There was no problem with the Cyan Flute Hermit and the young elder of Lancang Sect, it was Qin Wu who had the problem.

Qin Clan was very furious. That day, Qin Wu should be patrolling

in the Yulin City of Qin Clan with the young master of Qin Clan. The Qin Clan wondered why the two people suddenly changed their route and came to Fuhai City and why they were killed.

Qin Wu might know the reason; however, he had died. Therefore, this clue was a dead end.

There was another clue, namely, Director Fan's heart was on his right chest. Zhang Tie knew that the one who wanted to frame him must know the secret of Director Fan. Therefore, he kept Director Fan alive. Zhang Tie thought that he could find a breakthrough from this clue; however, he was very disappointed by the message that he had heard about——When Director Fan took the office at a young age, the doctors and relevant personnel who checked his identity and made physical examination for him had found that his heart was on the right chest. This information was recorded in the database of the official difference engine in Yingzhou Province. Although only a few people knew about this secret, it's not difficult if someone wanted to investigate it. If someone gained this secret of Director Fan from this database, he would not leave any inquiry record at all.

The culprit would never leave such a foolish loophole to Zhang Tie.

The abnormal situation in the Fan mansion was discovered by the neighboring guard. If not, Zhang Tie was sure that the opponent would definitely make further arrangement to have people find what happened in Fan mansion at almost the same time.

Although that b*stard had raped the young lady in Fan mansion, he didn't leave any body fluid in and outside her body. Therefore, Zhang Tie lost another clue. Otherwise, Zhang Tie knew that the owner of the body fluid could be identified in Taixia Country by a certain method.

After receiving the message and request from the mayor of Fuhai

City, the Cheji General in Yingzhou Province was driven mad and launched an attack towards Zhang Tie.

The point of the trap in the wilderness was less than 500 miles away from the Cheji General's Mansion. Within such a short distance, as long as Cheji General found Zhang Tie by airboat, he would not let Zhang Tie escape away.

Feng Yuelun the Cheji General of Yingzhou Province was a strong-willed man who abhorred evils as deadly foes.

When Feng Yuelun arrived, Qin Wu was rightly killed by Zhang Tie; therefore, Zhang Tie lost the last chance to surrender or argue about that.

All this was well planned in advance, one step after another and one link by another.

This time, Zhang Tie wanted to discover some clue or reconfirm the possibilities that could help him argue for his innocence. Pitifully, after figuring out those details, Zhang Tie reconfirmed that his opponent was completely out of his imagination, who spared no chance for him to prove his innocence. Even though Zhang Tie was alive, he was destined to be the scapegoat.

What made Zhang Tie more disappointed was that he realized that the culprit of this event had a pretty deep root and a great influence in Taixia Country and had learned well the information about Taixia Country in all aspects. It would be even more terrifying if those guys were demons or colluded with demons.

At this moment, the words that "Master Jiang" told him before his death occurred to Zhang Tie's mind once again.

'The demons and Heavens Reaching Church are probably on the back of this event.'

'After catching this good chance, the Gobbling Party would never give up framing me. The morality associations of the Gobbling Party across Taixia Country became the eyes and ears that the

Gobbling Party would use to look for me.'

'The major clans in Yingzhou Province represented by Qin Clan want to revenge me.'

'Even the Supreme Court which maintained the laws of Taixia Country wanted to kill me. As a result, I rank 98th on the wanted list.'

Only after coming to Taixia Country for less than 1 year, Zhang Tie had rapidly finished the conversion from a hero to a criminal. Finally, Zhang Tie understood the words "Life is like a drama."

'As Taixia is too large, If I expose my "real identity", I will immediately be besieged by enemies from all directions. Both humans and demons want to kill me...'

'F*ck!'

Zhang Tie couldn't stand complaining about such a dilemma.

After leaving the teahouse, Zhang Tie considered it as he wandered in Fuhai City. This time, Zhang Tie completely gave up arguing for innocence by clues.

'Struggle is in vain!'

As he had become the scapegoat. Unless he was able to destroy this scapegoat, he could only be the scapegoat no matter what.

'If I promoted to a sage level, the gossip that the gentleman has been possessed by the devil would collapse itself! However, the sage level...is a far objective...'

'Even if I didn't promote to a sage level, after forming four chakras, I could also be as free as my master. No matter how urgently Taixia is looking for him, he will not lose a hair. However, his opponents will worry about being revenged by him at any time. No matter what, those in barefoot are not afraid of those in shoes. Even if a heavenly knight in barefoot had a pee at the gate of the Supreme Court in Taixia Country, the Supreme

Court could only choose to ignore him. The destructive power of a heavenly knight in battle could be hardly imagined when I recalled the lake outside Blackhot City caused by my master.'

Gradually, Zhang Tie exited Fuhai City and came to a cliff near the seashore outside Fuhai City.

'Whatever, I will go back home first in case my mom's worried about me...'

After thinking for a second, Zhang Tie jumped off the cliff and dove in the sea.

...

"Oh, no, someone is jumping off the cliff..." At the sight of this, someone in the far shouted.

Only after over 10 minutes, a steamboat driven by maritime criminal hunters of Fuhai City had arrived at the place where Zhang Tie dove in. After searching him for 2 days in vain, they stopped the salvage. However, they erected a stele to warn others to not jump off the cliff on the place where Zhang Tie jumped off. There was a poem on the stele——

Everything in the world is like a boat with a short canopy, it moves to the west bank or the east; the moons will become full or crescent; the wind will blow southward or northward.

An old man will always get sick while the blossoms in late spring will soon wither and fall. If the gossip about you enters your ears, you need to stand it and pretend to be deaf or foolish.

One's life is as fast as a shuttle, you need to have a drink and song in front of the blossoms. How long will the blossoms sustain? How long will you live your life?

Good blossoms are hard to plant and blossom, the youth will flash by. If you've not been drunk in front of blossoms, you would be ridiculed as an idiot by the blossoms.

Chapter 897: Returning Home

Zhang Tie could reach his fastest speed by sea. The ocean was his highway. Additionally, he would not be discovered by people in the ocean.

Zhang Tie could move about 670 m per second in the ocean. Although this speed was less than half of the transmission speed of sound in water, it was already super fast for any other living beings in the ocean.

The distance between Yingzhou Province and Youzhou Province by sea was about 8,000 miles, which was similar to the aerial distance.

It would take Zhang Tie 2 months to finish this distance by airship; however, it only took him less than 3 days by sea.

Zhang Tie had arrived at Youzhou Province on the evening of May 18.

Zhang Tie exposed his head out of the sea level outside the Embracing Tiger Harbor. Watching the shimmering water of the Embracing Tiger Harbor, Zhang Tie felt that Youzhou Province must be not quiet at this moment. After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie dove into the water once again and entered Castle of Black Iron. The tiny black beetle was then summoned out of Castle of Black Iron.

The marvelous tiny beetle was not scared of the water at all. It could swim although it couldn't swim as fast as it could fly. Quivering its wings, the tiny thing had shot out of the water. After shaking off the water drops, it flew towards the Embracing Tiger Harbor.

During the past years, this tiny black beetle had been settling down in the cliff of the Abyss of Chaos. It faced the Abyss of Chaos and ate all sorts of specialties and all-purpose medicament in

Castle of Black Iron everyday. Therefore, it had changed physically. There were some golden spots on its body. Besides, it looked a bit larger than before; it even got a short tentacle on its head. After transferring his consciousness into this tiny, black beetle, Zhang Tie felt that it could fly faster and more flexible than before. At night, this little thing could have a greater color-changing ability and adaptability to the environment. Its entire body became dark gray, which was close to translucent. Even though knights could hardly find that the short tentacle was very sensitive to the dangerous factors in the surroundings.

It was brightly lit in the Embracing Tiger City. The urban nightlife had just come to a start.

Above the Embracing Tiger City, Zhang Tie looked down at the scenery and found a building down there was very boisterous. It seemed to be a hotel. Zhang Tie's heart raced as he descended at once.

After flying around the garden, Zhang Tie landed on a window outside the dining hall.

It was indeed a medium hotel which had a good business.

There were over 30 tables with seats in the dining hall, large or small, all of which had been occupied. The servicemen were constantly serving dishes in the dining hall while guests were toasting each other, making it pretty boisterous.

Almost the moment Zhang Tie landed, he had heard a drunk guy patting the table and swearing the Fan Clan of Yingzhou Province.

"If not that Fan Clan broke their promise, how could Elder Mushen be stimulated greatly and be possessed by the devil? How heroic was Elder Mushen in Youzhou City last year! He tried his best to stand to the end and help Count Long Wind gain the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, which shocked the entire Youzhou City. Even Commander Cheng was speaking highly of him. How could such a proud and arrogant

person stand such a great humiliation? I was told that Fan Clan invited Elder Mushen to propose a marriage in Yingzhou Province. However, after Elder Mushen arrived there, Fan Clan broke off the engagement. Aren't they poking fun at Elder Mushen? If it were me, I would be infuriated and topple over the Fan mansion too, not to mention Elder Mushen. He must be greatly stimulated by Fan mansion..."

"Yea, yea, yea, Elder Mushen is so heroic and talented. How could he stand such a humiliation? How could Elder Mushen just leave Fuhai City in such an embarrassed way? I could understand how Elder Mushen was uncomfortable mentally. No wonder Elder Mushen would be possessed by the devil!" Another voice sounded.

"Yup, if the tiger went down to level land, he would be insulted by dogs. As the Gobbling Party couldn't beat Elder Mushen in Youzhou Province, they wanted to find their face back in Yingzhou Province. Without the Gobbling Party on their back, Fan mansion would never break off the engagement!" The third voice sounded.

"Bang", someone forcefully patted on the table, "I think Elder Mushen is right, those b*stards should be killed..."

"Yeah, well done!" Many people shouted in unison...

"Pitifully, Elder Mushen's bright future was destroyed by some villains!" Someone let out a sigh...

"Elder Mushen was the last one who evacuated from Waii Subcontinent. Additionally, Elder Mushen did many good deeds when he took the position of the corps leader of the Hurricane Corps. He saved many people and made great meritorious deeds. Everybody praised him. It's really out of my imagination that..."

"F*ck!"

Many guests here were furious about Elder Mushen's poor experience.

Information among commoners would spread a bit later than the

official notices; especially such a sensitive thing. With the "cold treatment" of Huaiyuan Palace in Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie's crime in Fuhai City gradually developed among commoners in almost 2 weeks.

While there were full of condemnations about Zhang Tie's deed in Fuhai City, even in Yingzhou Province, it was Zhang Tie's first time to hear someone pitying him in Yanghe Prefecture!

The commoners in Embracing Tiger City sympathized about Zhang Tie's encounter very much; additionally, they owed all the responsibilities to Fan Clan and the Gobbling Party.

The different opinions were caused by different locations. It was Zhang Tie's home advantage.

Hearing such a positive argument, Zhang Tie was deeply moved. He knew that what he had done for Huaiyuan Palace and his impression in the commoners' minds in Huaiyuan Palace's territory could not be easily forgotten. Facts spoke louder than words.

However, Zhang Tie also sighed inside, 'Even the commoners in the Embracing Tiger City have believed that it was done by me and found an excuse for me being possessed by the devil. I could imagine how commoners in other places would think about it. Given this point, Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen has indeed been killed by the designer of this plot.'

After staying in the hotel for a short while, Zhang Tie flapped his wings and flew towards the Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace in the Embracing Tiger Mountain.

No elder was inside the Shrine Palace. After flying around the Embracing Tiger Mountain, Zhang Tie found that all the disciples and deacons on Embracing Tiger Mountain had been forbidden to talk about what he had done in Fuhai City.

It was reasonable.

After finding no clan elder there, Zhang Tie flew towards the airport outside Embracing Tiger City.

In the airport, there were fixed flights between Embracing Tiger City and Golden Light City around the clock. Zhang Tie landed on the air sac of an airship heading for Golden Light City and took a free ride.

The hundreds of miles' trip was too short for the thunder hawks; however, the tiny black beetle was not suitable to make a long flight.

...

Zhang Tie arrived at Golden Light City at about 11 pm. After flying off the airship, Zhang Tie flew around Zhang manor for quite a while. Through a careful inspection, Zhang Tie was shocked as he found 2 strange knight's qis hiding in the radius of 300 m around this manor.

It was already mid-May. At night, there were flying insects everywhere. Therefore, the two strange knights didn't find the trivial beetle, who, however, had found them.

Of course, the two knights were not dispatched by Huaiyuan Palace. As knights of Huaiyuan Palace were clan elders, they would not hide outside their own manor. Therefore, the two strange knights probably were the powerhouses from the Supreme Court in Taixia Country.

Zhang Tie then recalled what Huaiyuan Palace reminded him when they contacted him through the elder's finger ring, 'It seems that the Supreme Court has indeed dispatched powerhouses to Youzhou Province. According to their personnel arrangement, the Supreme Court must have thought that I would probably come back home.'

'The powerhouses dispatched by the Supreme Court to Youzhou Province excelled at getting hang of humanity; they must have

studied my situation seriously. Therefore, they made such a personnel arrangement.'

It seemed that Zhang manor remained unchanged. At least Zhang Tie didn't see any evident change as everything ran as smoothly as usual, except that the vigilance in the manor was strengthened. One more Long Wind guard composed of the direct line of clan disciples of Huaiyuan Palace was increased for the safety of Zhang family.

The main courtyard was brightly lit. Zhang Tie saw Feng Cangwu walking into the main courtyard with his three sons.

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie flew into Feng Cangwu's private courtyard and stealthily slid into his room. After that, he recovered to his original body and sat on the chair in the room quietly for the return of Feng Cangwu.

As it was pitch dark in the room, Zhang Tie was as still as a rock.

After waiting there for over 10 minutes, Zhang Tie had heard footsteps from outside.

"You can go to bed now, it's too late. I don't need your service anymore!" Feng Cangwu's voice sounded along with the footsteps.

"Yes, sir!" Two female servants answered Feng Cangwu immediately.

After that, a footstep moved closer to the room. Feng Cangwu opened the door and lit the lamp. Of course, he caught sight of Zhang Tie who was sitting in the room quietly...

The moment Feng Cangwu caught sight of Zhang Tie, his battle qi had enshrouded the entire room silently although he looked as normal as usual. Even the knights outside wouldn't know what happened inside the room

After that, Feng Cangwu gazed at Zhang Tie with shiny eyes, "Who're you?"

After noticing Feng Cangwu's movements and listening to his question, Zhang Tie smiled reassuringly as he realized that he had not backed the wrong person...

Chapter 898: Being Frank and Honest

Feng Cangwu enshrouded the room with his battle qi in case that Zhang Tie was discovered by the two knights outside while his question was to confirm Zhang Tie's identity.

Why would he confirm Zhang Tie's identity? Because Feng Cangwu didn't believe that Zhang Tie could do that evil thing in Fuhai City. However, given the irrefutable evidence, the probability was that someone had disguised as Zhang Tie and did those bad things in Fuhai City. Feng Cangwu might have thought about the existence of the disguised Zhang Tie. Therefore, he asked, "Who're you?"

Of course, Zhang Tie felt reassured after listening to such a question.

"It seems that you've changed a lot during the past months. When you came here at the beginning, you were as proud as a peacock and only nodded at everything. Generally, you would not tell the female servants to take a rest at such a moment!" Zhang Tie uttered.

After hearing this, Feng Cangwu threw a serious glance at Zhang Tie before revealing a faint smile, "You're too audacious!"

"I'm always audacious!"

"You are really fast. It only took you less than 20 days to travel from Yingzhou Province to Youzhou Province!" Feng Cangwu said as he walked to the chair beside Zhang Tie and sat down there. After that, he poured a cup of water for himself and bottomed it up.

Zhang Tie blinked his eyes as he didn't want to tell Feng Cangwu about the truth in case of collapsing him mentally once again. If a knight could travel 80,000 miles in about 20 days, or at least 4,000 miles a day, he must be very sharp. Most of the black iron knights

could not do it. 'Feng Cangwu must have considered that I've awakened the Kuafu Bloodline and carried a space-teleportation equipment which could provide me with sufficient supplies. Additionally, he must think that I've started to move back towards Youzhou Province after the event in Fuhai City.'

"I had no choice. Otherwise, I would be killed!" Zhang Tie said vaguely.

"What happened in Fuhai City?" Feng Cangwu asked with a solemn look.

Thus, Zhang Tie repeated his encounter to Feng Cangwu.

As for those people who knew Zhang Tie well; especially those who had been familiar with him for a long time, none of them believed that Zhang Tie would do that evil thing in Fuhai City, neither did Feng Cangwu. During the period when Feng Cangwu was in Zhang manor, given Zhang Tie's open-mindedness and indifference about fame and fortune and his care about his family members, Feng Cangwu was sure that Zhang Tie would never do such an evil thing. Others he might think that Zhang Tie must have felt extremely shameful after Fan Clan broke off the engagement and must have been greatly stimulated by that so that he was possessed by the devil and lost his mind; however, Feng Cangwu knew that Zhang Tie would never do that. He knew that there must be another reason. However, when Feng Cangwu heard about the conspiracy, he drew in a breath, 'What a terrifying trap! It's fatal! The only loophole of this trap is that Zhang Tie escaped away from Cheji General on that occasion. Zhang Tie has already been a rat across the street, who will be beaten whenever he is discovered.'

Evidence prioritized in the cases of Taixia Country. The so-called evidence was the truth that was widely accepted by the public; instead of being the subjective judgments of the familiar ones and family members of the suspects. Therefore, even though those on Zhang Tie's side such as his family members and the elders of

Huaiyuan Palace didn't believe that Zhang Tie would do that, in front of those irrefutable "evidence" including testimony of witnesses and material evidence, the public was unable to identify the truth; the Supreme Court could only make decisions and responses according to the evidence instead of the judgments of Zhang Tie's family members and friends.

"I'm afraid that the only benefit of my encounter is that the culprit had not imagined that after all this I could still be alive. Now that I'm alive, they may expose themselves. I know that it's all a conspiracy against me. Those who set this conspiracy must have a very great influence and relationship network in Taixia Country. Additionally, they must be hiding very deeply and know Taixia Country very well in all aspects. They even know that Director Fan's heart is on his right chest and could make use of this point. These people must have demons on their back. As long as the opportunity arises, these people will definitely raise winds and waves in Taixia Country and become the major threat of Taixia Country." Zhang Tie watched Feng Cangwu seriously as he continued, "As Huaiyuan Palace has just rooted in Taixia Country, it's very weak. The one who could apply the Bloody Demon Imitation Method could never be resisted by Huaiyuan Palace. I hope Brother Cangwu to tell Commander Cheng and the elders of the Heavens Fortune Sect about this information so that they could make preparations for possible threats!"

Zhang Tie's intelligence was very critical. The information that culprit could apply the Bloody Demon Imitation Method was of great value. However, Zhang Tie was right, such a person and force could never be resisted by Huaiyuan Palace. Only top forces were qualified to investigate it and prepare for the possible threats secretly.

"Don't worry, I will definitely tell your words to the elders of my sect and Commander Cheng. What about you? Do you have any plan for the future? If you like, I can..."

"No need, Brother Cangwu..." Zhang Tie waved his hand, "I know what you're going to say. Thanks for your good intention. However, if you did that, it would cause Heavens Fortune Sect trouble and would provide an excuse and chance for the culprit to escalate this event. As a result, Taixia Country would be more chaotic!" Zhang Tie refused Feng Cangwu, "I just want to bid a farewell to my family members. After that, I will find a chance to chop off demons' heads in the earth-elements realm!"

"You want to go to the earth-elements realm?"

"Yup, however, I might go there in another identity and look!"

"You also know disguising skills?"

"Yes, I know. Thankfully, someone taught me that before. It's not difficult to deal with common situations." Zhang Tie forced a bashful smile, "I'm so sorry, Brother Cangwu has stayed in Golden Light City for months, but I couldn't help you break your mental obstacle; you have even worked as my kids' free tutor for a few months. What's your plan?"

Zhang Tie knew that it was needless for Feng Cangwu to stay in his home now as he had to leave home. After all, this young elite of Heavens Fortune Sect was not destined to be a tutor who could be employed by money and some benefits. It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that Feng Cangwu could stay in his home until now.

"Now that you're going to the earth-elements realm, I'm afraid that I have to go there too in order to break my mental obstacle. As I've told you, my mental obstacle could only be broken by you!" Feng Cangwu replied with a smile, "Perhaps, we could meet each other then. But it will test my ability to distinguish you. It's funny. Speaking of a tutor, I have to notify you that your three sons have already lit their first surging point last week. Their cultivation speeds are very fast. They also have great power of understanding. Your three sons are all rare cultivation geniuses. I've already contacted my sect. If you agree, the three little guys could be

official disciples in Heavens Fortune Sect when they promote to LV 9!"

Zhang Tie was surprised by this news. Although Zhang Tie had long prepared for his sons' excellence, he had not imagined that they could become LV 1 warrior at such a young age. 'What weirdos! I remember that I became a LV 1 warrior when I was going to graduate from the middle school after I picked up the small tree and Castle of Black Iron. However, my three sons have already lit their first surging points after cultivating for less than two months. According to such a speed, they might promote to LV 9 fighters in only 3-5 years. What the hell!'

Feng Cangwu posed his suggestion out of his concern about Zhang Tie and Heavens Fortune Sect. Major sects would rely on generations of excellent disciples and talents for their long-term prosperities. Based on the current performances of Zhang Tie's three sons, they might match Zhang Tie at Zhang Tie's age. Even if they made progress step by step instead of making leapfrog progress, they would probably become knights after a decade.

Zhang Tie considered, "When they're LV 9, two of them could join Heavens Fortune Sect while the other should be managed by Huaiyuan Palace! Sometimes, even though I'm their father, I could not fully determine their future development in the clan. I have to consider all aspects."

Feng Cangwu nodded and said, "Well, I understand, that's the deal!"

"There's one more thing to trouble Brother Cangwu!"

"Go ahead!"

Zhang Tie rubbed his face and sighed, "There're two super large bulbs shining in the evening. Please induce them away, for the time being, Brother Cangwu. Spare me 2 hours so that I could say something to my family members! I don't want to meet my family members stealthily at this moment. I don't know when will I come

back next time."

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, Feng Cangwu sighed helplessly, "If you don't want to be stealthy, it seems that I could only be the stealthy one. I've not imagined about such a day!"

Zhang Tie made his face...

Feng Cangwu then picked himself up from the chair. After that, he changed a set of clothes in his room and tousled his hair. He even covered a piece of black cloth on his face, making him look a bit embarrassed. He then threw a glance at Zhang Tie's figure. Closely after that, his bones cracked. Even his limbs turned as same as Zhang Tie. He then opened a window of the room. In the next second, he turned into a wisp of smoke, floated out of the window and entered the darkness...

Zhang Tie just waited in Feng Cangwu's room quietly...

After a few minutes, a shadow flew from afar and intended to land in Zhang manor's garden silently without radiating any light. Before he landed, he suddenly found something. Being shocked, he instantly shot back into the sky as fast as light...

Closely after that, two lights chased after the shadow towards the north...

The three lights disappeared in the sky in the blink of an eye.

'What an elite of Heavens Fortune Sect!' Zhang Tie applauded inside.

All the people in Zhang's manor were shocked while many of them walked out of their rooms...

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie picked himself up and flicked his clothes. After that, he frankly walked out of Feng Cangwu's room...

Chapter 899: Breaking the Mental Obstacle

Zhang Tie frankly walked out of Feng Cangwu's private courtyard. A Long Wind guard who was patrolling in Zhang's manor caught sight of Zhang Tie immediately.

The Long Wind guards had been shocked by the three lights. Although they didn't know what happened, they thought that Elder Mushen had returned. Whereas, they saw Zhang Tie walking towards them on the path...

The Long Wind guards were struck dumb with astonishment.

"Hard work!" Zhang Tie nodded towards a Long Wind guard who had forgotten to move.

"Elder...Elder Mushen..." The guards had not responded to Zhang Tie's sudden appearance.

Zhang Tie directly walked towards the main courtyard.

After being still for a second, the Long Wind guards moved while the entire Zhang manor entered the supreme alertness at once.

No matter how much Zhang Tie was wanted outside, Zhang Tie's authority and position could never be suspected in Huaiyuan Palace. Because Zhang Tie was still a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace.

On the way, Zhang Tie met some servants, who were dumbfounded too.

Zhang Tie was not afraid that some of them would betray him and had him arrested. If Zhang family or Huaiyuan Palace could not control these people, they'd better roll out of here.

Additionally, he wouldn't stay too long at home.

The entire Zhang family had walked out of the main courtyard and looked up at the sky.

"Has...Guoguo come back just now?" Zhang Tie's mom asked in a 'trembling' voice as she looked up at the profound sky with tearful

eyes...

Zhang Tie's three kids were clenching their fists and watching the sky. They couldn't wait to fly right now.

Zhang Yang, Zhang Tie's elder sisters-in-law and Zhang Tie's wives were watching the sky with complicated looks.

"Ahem...ahem..." After hearing Zhang Tie's familiar coughs, the entire family was shocked as they turned around and threw their glances at the flower corridor on the side of the main courtyard.

"Papa..." Zhang Chenglei, Zhang Chengting and Zhang Chengpei rushed towards Zhang Tie like three cubs.

Zhang Tie showed himself out of the shadow of the flower corridor and cradled the three kids at once.

As for the Zhang family, they didn't doubt whether this Zhang Tie was real or not. Because Zhang Tie's invisible qi field, feeling of familiarity and cordial feeling could not be disguised by anyone else. Even though Zhang Tie was wearing a mask, his family members could still identify him based on his coughs.

Touching the three boys' heads, Zhang Tie looked at his family members and smiled, "Just now, Feng Cangwu has induced away the two knights of Supreme Court from our manor, we have 2 hours!"

"Hurry, hurry up, enter the room..." Zhang Tie's dad said in a 'trembling' voice.

After they returned to the main courtyard, Zhang Yang called the butler of Zhang manor and whispered something to him. The butler nodded with a solemn look. After bowing towards Zhang Tie, he silently left there...

...

Zhang Tie held his parents' hands and wanted to stay with his parents for a few minutes in a study on the second floor of the

main courtyard while the other family members were waiting outside.

When his family members found that Zhang Tie was safe and sound, they were all very thrilled and happy; especially Zhang Tie's parents. Zhang Tie felt that his parents were tightly seizing his hands by their trembling hands.

The door of the study was closed, leaving 3 people inside.

"Guoguo...are...are you alright? Neither your dad nor I believe that you could do such an evil thing..." Zhang Tie's mom hadn't moved her eyes away from Zhang Tie's face since he appeared, "Have you been hurt these days? Are you hungry? Have you eaten something?"

Zhang Tie's dad also looked Zhang Tie up and down with a concerned expression...

Both Zhang Tie's dad and mom knew that it was more dangerous than being on the battlefield in the subcontinent by being wanted by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country.

Watching their concerned looks and hearing mom's questions, Zhang Tie almost cried.

In the Zhang family, studies were like backrooms. The building and decorative materials of this study could insulate sounds pretty well. As long as it was closed from inside, outsiders wouldn't know what happened inside.

"Mom, dad, I'm fine. I'm safe and sound. I want to tell you that I will be fine wherever I am. Don't worry about me!" Zhang Tie comforted his parents, "Especially you, mom. You always worry about my safety. This time, I want you to know that your son will be safe and sound even if all the knights in the world are hunting me!"

"I believe that...I believe that..." Zhang Tie's mom nodded as she dropped off tears.

Zhang Tie knew that his mom was still worried about him all the time even though she said she wouldn't. Because of concerns, she looked more haggard lately.

"Dad, mom, relax. Hold my hands. I will show you a place..." Zhang Tie made his determination.

"Argh? Are you leaving now? Didn't you say that you would stay here for 2 hours?" Zhang Tie's dad asked...

The moment Zhang Tie's dad finished his words, the three people had disappeared from the room...

...

After almost 40 minutes, Zhang Tie held his parents' hands and reappeared in the room.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's parents looked extremely wonderful. Zhang Tie's dad raised his head and looked around the familiar study as if he had been there for the first time. Meanwhile, he stammered, "Time tunnel...it's like passing a time tunnel..."

In the next second, the three people disappeared once again. After a few minutes, they reappeared...

After traversing the time tunnel twice, Zhang Tie's parents had recovered their composure as they all watched Zhang Tie with weird looks.

"Dad and mom, you already know that I will be fine wherever I am. Without such an ability, I've long died hundreds of times. I was fine before. I would be fine in the future!" Zhang Tie explained while an exotic yet powerful spiritual energy silently deepened into his parents' subconsciousness, which could prevent his parents from revealing this secret to anyone.

"Will...will you come back?" Zhang Tie's mom asked without any concern. She was just missing Zhang Tie.

"I won't in a short period. But I will definitely come back to see you. Additionally, as the one who framed me is too powerful, who could not even be resisted by Huaiyuan Palace, I need to improve my battle strength as soon as possible so as to respond to the possible crises. Therefore, dad and mom, you don't need to worry about me. I'm just going to cultivate myself for a long time. If you could enjoy food and drinks and have a good sleep at home, I will have no concern anymore. Otherwise, you would make me absent-minded! Now, you've known that our Zhang family would have a way to escape no matter how the holy war would proceed. Therefore, you should completely be reassured..."

After throwing a glance at each other, Zhang Tie's mom and dad let out a sigh and nodded to each other seriously...

...

Although Zhang Tie stayed with his parents in the study a bit long, the others outside the study didn't complain about that. Everyone knew that Zhang Tie was filial obedient. After leaving home this time, they didn't know after how long would Zhang Tie meet his parents again...

The door of the study finally opened. Zhang Tie's dad and mom then walked out of there.

Zhang Yang felt his dad and mom looked completely different; especially his mom, who looked spirited all over and had recovered her composure as usual.

Zhang Tie's mom threw a glance at Zhang Yang, "Zhang Yang, go talk with your brother for a short while inside..."

...

After entering the study for over 20 minutes, Zhang Yang also walked out of it with a calm look. He then called Zhang Tie's wives in...

...

In 1 more hour's rapid flight, Feng Cangwu had already led the two powerhouses from Supreme Court far away from Zhang manor.

As an elite in Heavens Fortune Sect, Feng Cangwu flew as fast as the light with a constant qi, which was far better than common black iron knights.

The two powerhouses from Supreme Court were not average either. They mastered a special combined flying ability. When they flew closely one after another, their battle qis were connected tightly and gradually mixed with each other. Their speed was not slower than that of Feng Cangwu; later on, they even caught up with Feng Cangwu. Even though Feng Cangwu could move and dodge flexibly, the distance between him and the two powerhouses was gradually narrowed.

The two powerhouses joined hands and blocked Feng Cangwu's way with a purple battle qi net. It could almost match the power of an earth knight.

The two powerhouses from Supreme Court were really sharp. Their combined striking skill was unrivaled.

Feng Cangwu felt that they were already far away from Zhang manor; therefore, he released a dignified qi once again.

"Why are you chasing after me?" Feng Cangwu hid his battle qi luster and pull off his black mask forcefully.

"Feng Cangwu?" The two knights immediately stopped at the sight of Feng Cangwu, "Why?"

"Zhang's family is in dilemma, I was paying a visit to the Zhang family and just wanted to try the vigilance of the guards of Zhang's manor; I've not imagined that you two could catch up with me!" Feng Cangwu looked at the two knights who almost looked same as he tossed back his hair, revealing a smile, "I've long heard that you two are famous twin criminal hunters called nets above and snare

below. Your combined striking skills are unrivaled in the world and could almost match earth knights. You must be the two famous criminal hunters who scare off so many big criminals on the wanted list!"

"Sh*t, we're trapped!"

Heavens Fortune Sect would almost never miss it whoever they wanted to trap.

The two famous criminal hunters' faces turned purple at the same time. With a roar in unison, they turned around and flew back towards Golden Light City.

...

After his wives left the study, Zhang Tie called in his three sons...

Touching their heads, Zhang Tie told them, "Remember, from today on, you three brothers are already little tough men. Since you lit your first surging points, you've already grown up. Am I clear?"

Raising their little heads, the three boys nodded forcefully in front of Zhang Tie.

"Dad, mom said you were framed. You have to leave us, is that real?" Zhang Chenglei asked before biting his lips.

"It's real. Someone did the bad things and framed your dad. They framed your dad as the bad guy. Therefore, dad has to leave you for the time being. When he grows stronger, he will be able to fight the real bad guys and protect you. If dad stays with you, the bad guys might hurt you and your moms. Therefore, dad could only leave home. Later on, you should take care of your moms and your younger brothers and sisters. Am I clear?"

The three little guys' eyes turned red...

Zhang Chengting gritted his teeth as he clenched his little fist and suddenly uttered, "Dad, if we could defeat the bad guys, you

will not leave home, right?"

"When you grow as sharp as your dad, your dad will not leave you anymore. Remember your dad's words, dad doesn't request you to be a good person but you should never be bad guys. When you're alive, you need to enjoy yourselves. However, no matter how you enjoy yourselves, you should not hurt those who have nothing to do with you and are weaker than you. The stronger you are, the more you need to learn how to respect those weaker living beings. You improve yourselves only to keep a humble and common heart, do you understand?"

The three little guys nodded as if they've understood that. However, they bore Zhang Tie's words in mind.

...

Holding his sons' hands, Zhang Tie walked out of the study and bid a farewell to his elder sisters-in-law and the other family members.

After a few minutes, before the two lights arrived at Golden Light City from the skyline, Zhang Tie finished his farewell to his family members. After kissing the faces of his three sons and five wives, he rose up and accelerated towards the Embracing Tiger City as fast as a lightning bolt.

Closely followed by the two lights from the skyline...

...

Half an hour later, the open water of Golden Light City...

Zhang Tie directly dove into the sea. 2 minutes later, the other two lights dove into the sea too...

After 1 hour, two lights flew out of the sea which was hundreds of miles away from where they entered it. After loitering there a few hours in vain, they finally left...

Chapter 900: At the Foot of Coiling Dragon Mountain

Yongzhou Province was one of the 36 upper provinces in Taixia Country. It was close to the Qiongzhou Province, the south border of the Northeast Military Region under the affiliation of Westriver Military Region. The central organ of Westriver Military Region was also located here.

Covering 250 million square miles, Yongzhou Province had 8.7 billion population. It had been in peace and prosperity for hundreds of years. Yongzhou Province had 257 Class A cities, the number of which ranked above medium among all the upper provinces in Taixia Country.

Yongzhou Province had 34 prefectures. Luye Prefecture was in the southwest of Yongzhou Province. There were nine famous mountains in Luye Prefecture. There were a lot of tea trees in the mountains. The tea leaves in Luye Prefecture ranked first in Yongzhou Province. The most famous wild spring originated from the Floating Spirit Mountain, one of the nine mountains in Luye Prefecture.

As one of the nine famous mountains in Luye Prefecture, Coiling Dragon Mountain was in the middle of Luye Prefecture, which lasted over 7,000 miles and crossed many prefectures. As its shape was like a coiling dragon, therefore it was called Coiling Dragon Mountain.

Coiling Dragon was odd-looking and beautiful. It was said that Coiling Dragon Mountain had a very good geographical location. It was a golden mile in Youzhou Province. Coiling Dragon Mountain was close to Ailian City, Heguang City, Lvsen City, Poyin City, Tianyuan City and Zeyun City in four directions, which were all Class A cities in Yongzhou Province.

Liuying Town was at the foot of Coiling Dragon Mountain being

less than 150 miles away from Zeyun City in the east.

Liuying Town was a tranquil town, which contained less than 50,000 people in total. At the end of May, a news spread over Liuying Town—Young master Cui who had departed over 10 years ago finally came back.

Many young people left home to learn knowledge. Although Cui Li was well-known in Liuying Town, it should not arouse such a shock; especially for a person who had left Liuying Town for over one decade. However, it was said that a meteor landed at his home when Cui Li came back that night while the glow scared his servants and neighbors so much. They all thought that the house caught fire; therefore they prepared to extinguish the fire with water buckets...

However, they found it was Cui Li, the young master of Cui family who came back.

Perhaps kids didn't understand the abnormal phenomenon; however, old guys who had rich experiences knew that it carried a very special meaning. It indicated that Cui family in Liuying Town might have a Hua dragon—knight!

It was a major event. Even the Tongguang County where Liuying Town was had not got a Hua dragon, not to mention Liuying Town.

Therefore, the entire Liuying Town was shocked. Additionally, this news had aroused the attention of the county magistrate of Tongguang County in only 3 days.

It was the Village Constable Jia of Liuying Town who reported the news to the county magistrate of Tongguang County.

In the backyard garden of the county government office of Tongguang County, County Magistrate Li who had taken this position for 8 years was dumbfounded after hearing the news of Village Constable Jia.

"What? You mean there's a knight in Liuying Town?" The 60-year old County Magistrate Li with a dignified look hurriedly put down his teacup before turning around and watching Village Constable Jia with widely opened eyes.

It was early June while it was getting hot. After traveling over 50 miles by vehicle, Village Constable Jia's eyes corners had oozed sweat. His face also looked a bit red.

"Yes, County Magistrate, there's a knight in Cui family in Liuying Town!" Village Constable Jia hurriedly answered.

"It's a big surprise. Are you sure?" County Magistrate Li put down his teacup and said with a solemn look.

Watching County Magistrate Li's solemn look, Village Constable Jia became a bit hesitated as he slightly mopped off the sweat from his forehead and said, "I've asked the neighbors of Cui Clan. They said that Cui Li indeed descended from the sky with light and flame when he came back home as fast as a lightning bolt. It was really terrifying. Additionally, more than one person had witnessed that. They all expressed it in this way. I think nobody else could do that except for a knight! The servants in Cui family were jubilant these days. Someone asked the reason, they said that their young master had promoted to a knight!"

"It seems to be real. I've heard about Cui Li before. But how could he promote to a knight so fast? Didn't you recognize the wrong man?" County Magistrate Li slightly lowered his body with a more solemn look.

"I won't. I've paid a visit to Cui's manor yesterday. I saw the young master of Cui family and talked with him for a while. Although he had left home for over one decade and changed a bit, I still recognized him. Additionally, he recognized me too. I felt a very deterrent qi on young master Cui, flames flickered in his pupils. Only after talking with him for a short while, I had already felt a great stress."

Touch his well-maintained mustache, County Magistrate Li thought for a few seconds before replying, "It seems that I have to pay a visit to this young master Cui in Liuying Town. If Cui family really have a knight, Tongguang County could have the first powerful memorial gateway in my reign. That would be a fine story on everybody's lips..."

"You're right, County Magistrate Li!" Village Constable Jia hurriedly nodded, "I wonder when will you come to Liuying Town, County Magistrate Li. I will make an arrangement for you!"

"Let's do it tomorrow!"

County Magistrate Li felt pretty thrilled too. After the first powerful memorial gateway was erected in Tongguang County, his name would be bound to it too. After he died, whenever people caught sight of this powerful memorial gateway, they would recall his name Li Chunfeng. He would not regret serving as the county magistrate for so many years.

The officials in Taixia Country were all paid with high compensations for clean governance. Very few of them were greedy for money. Most of them were seeking for reputation. Of course, County Magistrate Li was seeking for reputation.

Li Chunfeng was the only one in Tongguang County who was qualified to make a biography for the powerful memorial gateway of young master Cui, which would be admired by the posterities. As the old saying went, the real heroes should make meritorious deeds, have a good reputation and have proverbs memorized by the posterities. As he could make a biography for the powerful memorial gateway of young master Cui, he would have his ambitious words and feelings memorized by people. In the future, if the knight being publicized by this memorial gateway became famous, more and more people would come here to admire him. Li Chunfeng would become famous too by then. Many of the literati in Taixia Country had become famous by leaving a passage or poem in front of a powerful memorial gateway.

...

On the second day Village Constable Jia left the county government office of Tongguang County, namely on the early morning of June 3rd, County Magistrate Li had changed a fine set of plain clothes and left for Liuying Town.

County Magistrate Li didn't take too many people with him. He was very lowkey. If the young master Cui was not a knight, it would be a laughingstock for him to pay a visit on a grand scale; if young master Cui was really a knight, it would be a laughingstock for a county magistrate to pay a visit on a grand scale too. Therefore, he'd better be lowkey this time.

When they came to the Liuying Town, Village Constable Jia had been waiting for him on the roadside outside the town.

In order to show his respect, County Magistrate Li directly got off the vehicle outside the town and walked to Cui manor together with Village Constable Jia.

It was highway outside the town while the roads inside the town were all clean slate cement roads; especially those nearby Cui manor were always cleaned by water before dawn by his neighbors.

Cui family was a big family in Liuying Town. The courtyard of Cui manor was at the foot of Coiling Dragon Mountain, which occupied over 5,000 square meters. When they came to the outside of Cui manor, the trees in the courtyard of Cui manor gave them a welcome shade. There was even a tall pagoda tree at the gate of Cui manor, whose crown was as large as a cloud. Its shade could cover 300 square meters.

"Here we are!" Village Constable Jia introduced.

"What an unusual symbol!" Stroking his mustache, County Magistrate Li nodded towards the huge pagoda tree, "Look at this tree, doesn't it look like that someone is holding an umbrella for

Cui manor?"

"That's true, the more I see it, the more I find that you're right!" Village Constable Jia explained as he stepped onto the stairs and knocked at the gate by the copper rings on the gate, "Bang, bang, bang..."

With a cracking sound, the gate was opened while a 60-year old man exposed his head out of the gate. After that, he slowly raised his head and looked around with poor eyes for a while before figuring out who was knocking at the gate, "Ahh, Village Constable Jia..."

Village Constable Jia said with a benign countenance, "I brought the County Magistrate Li to pay a visit to your young master. Is your young master at home?"

"Ahh, what a pity. My young master has just gone up the mountain with Afu to sweep the tomb of the old master and old madam!" The old humpbacked man answered.

Village Constable Jia turned around and looked at County Magistrate Li on his back.

After being silent for a short while, County Magistrate Li asked Village Constable Jia, "Do you know the location of Cui's cemetery?"

"Yes, I do. It's about 5 miles away from here!"

"If so, we don't need to wait here. Let's go up the mountain. By the way, we'll take a look at Cui's cemetery. I've not gone up the mountain for a long time. As the weather is good today, we can get some exercise."

"Good!"

After telling the humpbacked old man about their choice, Village Constable Jia led County Magistrate Li up the mountain along a path.

"Why is the servant in Cui manor so emaciated?"

"County Magistrate Li, you might not know that. When the old master and old madam were still alive, they were very benign to their servants. They took in poor guys, most of whom were paralyzed. After their death, the young master Cui kept them. Over the past decade, when young master Cui went out to learn skills, these people just stayed in Cui manor, none of them left!"

For the convenience of control, Zhu Liang the fierce wolf selected the underprivileged single ones who were simple, honest and crippled. Amazingly, after decades, this event became the symbol of righteousness and mercy of Cui manor.

"Not bad!" County Magistrate Li nodded satisfactorily...

Table of Contents

[Castle of Black Iron](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 801: Being Trapped Once Again](#)

[Chapter 802: A Fatal Strike](#)

[Chapter 803: Showing All the Trump Cards](#)

[Chapter 804: The Reversal](#)

[Chapter 805: Gorath's Shield](#)

[Chapter 806: Prelude to Extermination](#)

[Chapter 807: A New Strategy](#)

[Chapter 808: The Capital City of Sacred Iceland Kingdom](#)

[Chapter 809: Preparation and Shock](#)

[Chapter 810: Returning to Taixia Country](#)

[Chapter 811: Bounty Hunters](#)

[Chapter 812: The Notorious Alchemist Demon](#)

[Chapter 813: Arriving at Youzhou Province](#)

[Chapter 814: A Reunion](#)

[Chapter 815: An Enchanting Night](#)

[Chapter 816: Mother's Disease](#)

[Chapter 817: A Grand Show](#)

[Chapter 818: Killing Time](#)

[Chapter 819: Call-up](#)

[Chapter 820: The Conference](#)

[Chapter 821: Creating a New Battle Skill](#)

[Chapter 822: The Traveller](#)

[Chapter 823: An Encounter by the Riverside](#)

[Chapter 824: Count Long Wind](#)

[Chapter 825: Why Not Replace him?](#)

[Chapter 826: Preparation for the Competition](#)

[Chapter 827: A Shock Before the Battle](#)

[Chapter 828: The Arrival of Knights](#)

[Chapter 829: Rules and Start](#)

[Chapter 830: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 831: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 832: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 833: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 834: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(V\)](#)
[Chapter 835: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(VI\)](#)
[Chapter 836: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(VII\)](#)
[Chapter 837: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(VIII\)](#)
[Chapter 838: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(IX\)](#)
[Chapter 839: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(X\)](#)
[Chapter 840: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(XI\)](#)
[Chapter 841: The Lion in Youzhou Province \(XII\)](#)
[Chapter 842: The First Clan in Youzhou Province](#)
[Chapter 843: The Dean of Supreme Court in Youzhou Province](#)
[Chapter 844: Leaving Youzhou City](#)
[Chapter 845: A Solemn Reception](#)
[Chapter 846: Rapid Development](#)
[Chapter 847: Purchasing Land](#)
[Chapter 848: Reunion of the Hit-Plane Brotherhood](#)
[Chapter 849: Current Situation Facing Hit-Plane Brotherhood](#)
[Chapter 850: Laying a Foundation in Youzhou Province](#)
[Chapter 851: Ceaseless Troubles](#)
[Chapter 852: On the Way](#)
[Chapter 853: Reason](#)
[Chapter 854: Theft](#)
[Chapter 855: Jia Farmland](#)
[Chapter 856: Treading as If on Thin Ice](#)
[Chapter 857: The Far-ancient Immortal Moral Stele](#)
[Chapter 858: Another Form of Counter-attack](#)
[Chapter 859: The Heavens Reaching Church](#)
[Chapter 860: A Back Thrust](#)
[Chapter 861: The Master Artisan](#)
[Chapter 862: Another Breakthrough](#)
[Chapter 863: Making Trouble](#)
[Chapter 864: Washing Hands in the Gold Basin](#)
[Chapter 865: Trampling the Old D**chebag to Death](#)
[Chapter 866: Defeating the Heavens Reaching Church](#)
[Chapter 867: The Second Arrival of Commander Cheng](#)
[Chapter 868: No Zuo No Die](#)
[Chapter 869: A Soldier Crossing the River](#)
[Chapter 870: Bidding a Farewell](#)
[Chapter 871: Mental Obstacle](#)

[Chapter 872: Just Do It!](#)
[Chapter 873: Making a Compromise](#)
[Chapter 874: Gaya's Believer](#)
[Chapter 875: A New Start](#)
[Chapter 876: A Quarrel](#)
[Chapter 877: Locking the Targets](#)
[Chapter 878: Making an Arrangement in Whitesand Gulf](#)
[Chapter 879: Excessive](#)
[Chapter 880: Settling Down](#)
[Chapter 881: Family Strategy \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 882: Family Strategy \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 883: Re-entering Castle of Black Iron](#)
[Chapter 884: New Fruits](#)
[Chapter 885: Master Artisan](#)
[Chapter 886: Arriving at Yingzhou Province](#)
[Chapter 887: An Uninvited Guest](#)
[Chapter 888: Breaking off the Engagement](#)
[Chapter 889: The Vengeance of Gentleman](#)
[Chapter 890: The Grim Monster](#)
[Chapter 891: The Crisis](#)
[Chapter 892: Being Lunatic](#)
[Chapter 893: The Reappearance of Zhao Yuan](#)
[Chapter 894: Happiness and Misfortune Depend on Each Other](#)
[Chapter 895: Returning to Fuhai City](#)
[Chapter 896: Everything is Like a Boat with a Short Canopy](#)
[Chapter 897: Returning Home](#)
[Chapter 898: Being Frank and Honest](#)
[Chapter 899: Breaking the Mental Obstacle](#)
[Chapter 900: At the Foot of Coiling Dragon Mountain](#)